SHURA'S WRATH

BOOK 03

Mars Gravity

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

Shura's Wrath

(网游之天谴修罗)

by

Mars Gravity

(火星引力)

Synopsis

To save his terminally ill little sister, Ling Chen enters the newly released virtual game world and joins a small gaming studio comprising entirely of women.

From now on walking upon his path towards the pinnacle.

An ancient, evil item almost forgotten by history, the “Lunar Scourge” helps forge his unsurpassable legend, and causes him to unknowingly step upon a path that is destined to be punished by the heavens, the way of the shura.

Copyright

All rights reserved.

English Translation by WhatTranslate, Kaycee Liang, Sophia, Sylver135, Mr Voltaire @ Gravity Tales

Translation Edits by TheNo1Fan,Pebbles, xXmA5ta0f5hAd0WZzzXx, Niku @ Gravity Tales

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ Hasseno Blog

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

Book 03 - Demon Queen

Chapter 201 - Leng'Er's Dolls

The incredibly heavy two handed weapon gave an extra 220 Attack Power, as well as 30 Strength. Although it was a Celestial grade equipment, the Attack Power that it added was simply monstrous. The Zephyr Blade simply could not be compared to it, and even the Soaring Cloud spear was vastly inferior. Its bonus skill 'Thousand Kilogram Rend' caused Ling Chen to be even more shocked. This was the strongest skill he had ever seen, except for the two that he had received from the Shura... if someone was hit with a full power strike from this sword, the results would be terrifying.

However, because it was so heavy, it also decreased the wielder's Agility and Attack Speed. Despite this, overall, it was still an incredible weapon. There was just one problem-being so heavy, how could one reasonably wield this in battle?

"Ding... would you like to equip 'Great Ravager'? Your Strength is greater than 200, and fulfills the Equipment Requirements. After equipping the Great Ravager, you will be able to freely wield it, and it will be bound to you. Only you will be able to wield it."

Freely wield it after equipping it? Ling Chen immediately replied, "Yes."

Immediately, a dark light passed over the Great Ravager, and entered into Ling Chen's body. In that moment, the incredibly heavy Great Ravager suddenly became much lighter. Ling Chen stood there in shock, and then lifted the sword up effortlessly.

Of course, the sword was still quite heavy, but not to the same ridiculous degree. Ling Chen held the sword in one hand, and swung it.

Whoosh!!

A gust of wind was created by Ling Chen swinging the sword, causing the sand and dust on the ground to be sent swirling into the air. Even if such a casual strike hit a person, they would still be sent sprawling. He spun, holding the Great Ravager out and started striking out with it. The whooshing noises sounded extremely imposing, which made wielding the Great Ravager especially enjoyable. He then equipped the Zephyr Blade on his left hand, and continued to spin and strike out. Adding the Zephyr Blade did not decrease his Attack Speed-instead, it was increased. One of the Great Ravager's stats was -20 to Attack Speed. However, Zephyr Blade had a +20 Attack Speed attribute. As such, the two attributes cancelled each other out, and Ling Chen's Attack Speed, while wielding the Great Ravager, did not decrease at all.

The gusts of wind created by the Great Ravager were very pleasing to Ling Chen. The Great Ravager had completely replaced the Soaring Cloud spear to become his most powerful weapon, and caused his Attack Power to greatly increase!

"Ding... your weapon 'Great Ravager' is ranked number 1 in the China Region Equipment Rankings, do you wish to hide your personal information?"

After equipping the Great Ravager, a system announcement rang out. Naturally, Ling Chen replied, "No need."

The Equipment Rankings immediately changed, and the Great Ravager took the Zephyr Blade's position at the top.

China Region Equipment Rankings:

Rank 1: Great Ravager

Type: Two-handed Blunt Weapon

Grade: Celestial

Owner: Ling Tian

Rank 2: Zephyr Blade

Type: Two-Handed Sword

Grade: Celestial

Owner: Ling Tian

Rank 3: Soaring Cloud

Type: Spear

Grade: Celestial

Owner: Ling Tian

The Equipment Rankings only listed weapons of Celestial grade or higher. Right now, there were only three weapons, which all

belonged to one person-Ling Tian!

Players had never seen a Celestial grade equipment drop within the first month of the game, and yet in the China Region there was already one person who had three Celestial grade equips. This Ling Tian had caused too many miracles. Another Celestial grade equip appearing would no doubt cause large waves across all of China again, but Ling Chen was not concerned at all. Before, Ling Chen had felt that the Great Ravager was much too heavy, but now, he was reluctant to even let go of it. He wished that he could immediately find a monster to try it out on... of course, the main purpose was to experience the feeling of sending something flying.

Ling Chen was very satisfied in receiving the Great Ravager for killing the Warring Palace Skeleton. He looked at the time, and found that it was already daybreak. He had fulfilled his purpose in coming to the Forest of Bones, but the outcome had been far better than he had expected... He had destroyed the Warring Palace Skeleton, but he had also gained a semi-spirit girl who he could not allow to leave his side no matter what. He would have to do all he could to protect her, as well as to get her to like him.

Thinking to here, Ling Chen's head started to ache.

"Young Master! A minute ago, Ling Tian reached LV18." In the Plains District, Flame Shadow quickly ran to Long Tian Yun and reported to him in a low voice.

"What? LV18? Yesterday he was only LV17. What's going on?

How can he level up so quickly??” Cang Yan’s face revealed an expression of shock, whereas Long Tian Yun frowned, but did not say anything.

“Moreover, a new Celestial grade equip appeared on the Equipment Rankings, and it’s ranked number 1. It belongs to Ling Tian!” Flame Shadow continued.

“Oh?” Long Tian Yun and Cang Yan opened the Equipment Rankings, and looked at the “Great Ravager” at the top.

A hint of shock and jealousy flashed within Cang Yan’s eyes, but he immediately laughed, “Forget it, this sort of arrogant person can only rely on his level and equipment to seem cool. In the afternoon, we’ll show him what a true expert is! Young Master, this afternoon, we don’t even need the Sword Emperor to go and fight him. Let me fight him and I’ll give him an unforgettable lesson.”

Although Cang Yan was quite strong, he was one to hold grudges against other people easily. The words Ling Tian had spoken to him the day before had not been forgotten by him, and he was still seeking a way to take revenge. Long Tian Yun raised his hand, and calmly said, “Don’t look down on him too much. It’s impossible to obtain three Celestial grade equipment in such a short time with pure luck and no strength. However...” Long Tian Yun’s eyes narrowed, and he said in a low voice, “However, he’s definitely not a match for Xie Yu. Right now, Xie Yu might not even lose to that Eve.”

Long Tian Yun did not doubt that Ling Tian was powerful-after

all, all of his weapons were the best in the virtual world. However, he understood just how monstrous the Sword Emperor was... even if the Sword Emperor's equipment could not be compared to Ling Tian's, that did not matter.... All the Sword Emperor needed was one sword.

"Hmph, of course. Ling Tian's just a newbie expert who just entered the virtual world. I'd like to see him maintain his arrogance after today. Also, his equipment will soon belong to our Yan Huang Alliance. I want to see his pitiful expression so badly, heh..." Cang Yan said as he coldly smiled.

Long Tian Yun flicked his wrist, and his expression darkened, "This is not too important right now. Flame Shadow, has The Dark Night made any progress?"

Flame Shadow quickly replied, "Please rest assured, Young Master, although Peter Pan has hidden himself quite well, The Dark Night will definitely find him within 5 days. As per their rules, if they can't complete a request that they accepted, they'll pay back 10 times the amount as compensation. Young Master offered them 150 million gold-if they can't fulfill it, they'll have to pay back 1.5 billion gold. I'm sure they wouldn't allow such a thing to happen."

No matter what time it was, the Azure Dragon Square was always overflowing with people. This sort of situation would continue until the average level of players was about LV50, when the Central Imperial City would be unlocked.

Ling Chen equipped a discreet looking set of clothes, and went directly to the Marketplace. Right now, the most important thing was to make sure that the semi-spirit girl liked him, or at least did not have a negative favourability. Otherwise, if she ran off, Ling Chen could die at any moment.

He walked into the Toy Store, and saw a world of dolls. Although the Money Exchange System had been opened, there was still not much business there. After all, it was much more economical and practical to buy toys or dolls in the real world. Plus, given that it was only daybreak, Ling Chen was the only customer in the Toy Store. This caused him to feel a bit more at ease.

“Hello sir, may I ask what sort of toy you are looking for?” The one who greeted Ling Chen was the same beautiful saleswoman from before when Ling Chen had bought the most expensive toy- the Moonlight Treasure Box. As such, she still clearly remembered Ling Chen, and greeted him enthusiastically.

Ling Chen walked to where all the dolls were, and then said in his mind, “Leng’Er, come out and have a look. There are lots of dolls here.”

Leng’Er was unable to resist the temptation of dolls, and immediately appeared with the kitten doll in her arms. Ling Chen had put her in her invisible mode, so apart from him, no one could see or hear her, or the things she held or wore.

Seeing the world of dolls around her, Leng’Er’s eyes glazed over,

and she continuously turned her head around, looking at all the dolls. To her, this was something that could only exist in a dream.

“Dolls… so… many… dolls…”

Leng’Er stretched out her hands, and gently leapt towards a big dolphin doll and pressed her entire body against it, gently stroking it with her little hands. This was the largest doll she had seen in her entire life. It was much larger than her own body… however, although she could touch the dolls, she couldn’t take them away. She tried to embrace them then take them away with her, but she was unable to do so. She began to become worried, and teardrops became to form at the corners of her eyes. She finally thought of something, and looked at Ling Chen with a pitiful and pleading expression… she was sure that somehow Ling Chen could get her this big, big doll.

Leng’Er’s look caught him off guard, and had a great effect on him. He immediately gave in, and hurriedly said, “I’ll take this dolphin doll.”

“Of course, sir. Please wait momentarily.”

Very quickly, the purchase was completed and Ling Chen put the dolphin doll into Leng’Er’s arms. Leng’Er embraced it tightly, and buried her face into its back, unwilling to let it go.

“Ding… Leng’Er’s favourability towards you +8.”

Ling Chen smiled, and looked around. He thought for a bit then said, “Excuse me… all of the cloth and plush dolls, I have one… no, two of each.”

Two of each cloth or plush doll, this was an enormous sale! The beautiful saleswoman’s eyes lit up, and excited said, “Certainly! Please wait, I’ll prepare them for you quickly!”

In total, there were six hundred or so different types of dolls in the shop. Some were bigger than people, some were as big as one’s hand. The cheapest ones were only a few gold coins each, whereas the best ones were worth tens of thousands of gold coins. Two of each of the six hundred dolls costed Ling Chen about 900 thousand gold. However, to him, who had hundreds of millions of gold, this was not that much to him anymore.

All of these dolls were of course to please this girl who loved dolls.

Chapter 202 - The Obedient Leng'Er

Ling Chen had bought over one thousand dolls, and the beautiful saleswoman was ecstatic, but still looked at Ling Chen somewhat strangely.

Dolls and other toys were cosmetic items. One could put a maximum of 200 of the same toy in one space in their bag. However, as there were six hundred different types of toys, this would take up six hundred spaces on Ling Chen's bag, which definitely would not be possible. However, Ling Chen was not worried about this at all. Toy Stores always provided a Shopping Bag that had an incredibly large storage space, to make it more convenient for players with limited storage space in their bags. When making the purchase, the beautiful saleswoman put all of the dolls Ling Chen had bought into such a bag. However, this Shopping Bag could only store toys, and nothing else.

Ling Chen did not immediately give all of these dolls to Leng'Er. Leng'Er watched as Ling Chen put away all of those dolls, said goodbye to the beautiful saleswoman and walked out of the Toy Store. She carried the big dolphin doll in her arms, and chased after him.

"I want... dolls... I want..."

Ling Chen secretly smiled inside. This time, without him saying anything, Leng'Er had run after him. He had walked to a space beside the Toy Store where there was not anyone present, and smiled as Leng'Er floated over. Leng'Er stopped in front of him, and looked at him with a pleading expression... she had clearly

seen him buy many, many dolls, all of which were extremely pretty and cute. She wanted every single one of them.

Although she was still a little bit afraid of this person who had killed her companion, her love of dolls was greater.

“Dolls… I want… Please give me dolls…”

Her voice was as soft and gentle as a little kitten’s mewing, and did not contain a bit of the coldness or resentment from back when Ling Chen had first met her. Seeing her like this, Ling Chen did not feel she was complicated or mysterious at all, but rather pure and naïve. She had already completely forgotten about the giant skeleton and the Forest of Bones, and her desirous expression for dolls was extremely cute, just like a little child’s.

Ling Chen smiled, and leaned forward. He revealed what he had been hiding behind his back. In his hand was a doll wearing the same type of black dress Leng’Er was wearing. It was an extremely beautiful princess doll. He held it in front of Leng’Er and asked, “Leng’Er, do you like this?”

It was probably the first time Leng’Er had seen a humanoid doll. This doll was extremely well-made and beautiful, and was as cute as Leng’Er herself. It had been extremely expensive-Ling Chen remembered clearly that it had costed 60,000 gold.

It was clear that Leng’Er extremely liked this doll. This incredibly cute doll caused her eyes to sparkle brightly, and she stared unblinkingly at it. After a long time, she stretched out her

hands, while gently saying, “So pretty, so cute, I want…”

Perhaps it was because she only had half a spirit, and adding on the fact that she had lived for so long away from civilization in the Forest of Bones, it was quite difficult for Leng’Er to talk smoothly. Just as her two little hands were about to come into contact with the princess doll, Ling Chen pulled his hands back, and put the doll behind his back. Afterwards, he smilingly said to her, “Leng’Er, did you know, in the outside world, only good and obedient kids can have dolls as rewards. Is Leng’Er going to be obedient?”

“Obedient?” Leng’Er was a bit confused.

“Yes. For example… I’m now Leng’Er’s master, so if Leng’Er calls me ‘master’, I’ll give this doll to the obedient Leng’Er.” Ling Chen smiled. It was extremely easy to please children!

“Oh…” Leng’Er hugged the big dolphin doll, blinking her eyes, as if she was trying very hard to understand what “obedient” and “master” meant. However, none of this mattered in comparison to the doll. For the doll, she called out, “Mas…ter…”

Being called master by a girl was a weirdly nice sensation to Ling Chen. He took out the princess doll from behind his back, and put it in Leng’Er’s hands, “Leng’Er is so good and obedient! This princess doll is Leng’Er’s reward. As long as Leng’Er is obedient, master will give Leng’Er lots of cute dolls. If Leng’Er is really obedient, maybe she’ll get lots of dolls.”

Not only did giving her dolls raise her favourability, but it also

gave him a chance to talk to her. This way, she would naturally not be afraid of him after some time, and would grow closer to him.

"Ding... Leng'Er's favourability towards you +12."

This time, Leng'Er's favourability towards him had increased by 12, raising her favourability to -10. Right now, Ling Chen's actions were sufficient to get rid of Leng'Er's hostility and fear of him, and assured her that he would not harm her. Rather, following him would result in her having lots of dolls.

Leng'Er put away the dolphin doll, and took the extremely cute princess doll into her arms. Leng'Er closed her eyes, and an extremely radiant and satisfied smile appeared on her face... indeed, it was a smile that was full of happiness and joy. It was the first time Ling Chen had seen such a smile on Leng'Er's face- evidently, she loved this doll immensely.

In that case...

Of course, Ling Chen wouldn't take out the best doll from the very beginning. After a short while, he took out a princess doll wearing a rainbow dress. It was as large as the other one, but it was much more colourful and pretty. The moment he took it out, Leng'Er's intense gaze told him that she wanted this doll greatly as well.

"Leng'Er, remember what I said just then-only good, obedient kids can have dolls as rewards. If Leng'Er wants to hug her, Leng'Er has to listen to master, okay?"

“I will... listen... be obedient...” Leng’Er had no resistances against cute and pretty things. Right now, her greatest desire was to have this doll. In order to have it, she was willing to do anything Ling Chen told her to.

“En, that’s right.” Ling Chen nodded, and said, “So, tell me, what’s your name?”

“Name?” Leng’Er opened her mouth, and gazed at the princess doll in Ling Chen’s hands. After a moment, she quietly said, “Leng’Er...”

“Right!” Ling Chen contently nodded his head, “I’ll call you Leng’Er, and what will Leng’Er call me?”

This time, Leng’Er didn’t have to think, and answered, “Mas... ter...”

“Haha, Leng’Er’s so smart. In that case, I’ll give this cute doll to Leng’Er as a reward.”

Ling Chen could feel that the emotional distance between Leng’Er and himself was rapidly shrinking. He smiled, and gave the princess doll to Leng’Er. Leng’Er happily took it into her hands, and holding one princess in each arm, the warm and radiant smile once again appeared on her face. Her ridiculously happy expression was so cute that Ling Chen spaced out staring at her for a while. He couldn’t help but walk a bit closer, wanting to stroke her long hair.

Ling Chen moving close to her caused Leng'Er to take fright. By the time his hand almost reached her head, she shot away like a scared little cat. Far away, she tightly hugged the two dolls, her face slightly shaking as she looked at him with a bewildered expression.

Ling Chen's hand froze in mid-air, and he inwardly kicked himself... he had been too rash! Although he had shortened the emotional distance between Leng'Er and himself, her favourability towards him was still in the negatives. It was natural that she would act in such a way when he tried to touch her... luckily, her favourability did not drop because of that.

This was something that could not be rushed. From today's progress, it seemed that as long as he was patient, in not too long, Leng'Er's favourability towards him would no longer be negative.

"Leng'Er, don't be afraid, I'm your master, so I'll only protect you and give you lots of cute dolls. I'll never hurt you." Ling Chen said smilingly. Of course, the best method was... he took out another doll, "Look! This one's also very cute; I'll give it to Leng'Er."

Attracted by the doll, Leng'Er's fright disappeared, and she floated over, and embraced the new doll. As long as it was a doll, she would like it. It seemed that she would never get sick of dolls.

After successfully calming her down, Ling Chen looked at the time and found that it was nearly dawn. He bent down, and said to

Leng'Er, "Leng'Er, when master comes back, if you're good and obedient, you'll get even more dolls tomorrow."

After Leng'Er returned to the Pet Dimension, Ling Chen let out a breath, able to rest assured that she wouldn't run off. He rubbed his face, and felt that what he had just done was even more tiring than fighting an intense battle. Right now, Leng'Er's favourability to him was -10; if it kept increasing at the current rate, it would be positive by the next day. However, thinking to the fact that he would have to keep up this up for a long time, he couldn't help but sigh.

Afterwards, Ling Chen decided to log off. In the afternoon, he would have his duel with the Sword Emperor. He was confident in his strength, but definitely would not underestimate his opponent. After all, the Sword Emperor's strength was undisputed and was like a legend to Chinese players. In order to be at his peak condition, he needed to rest, so that his mind and spirit could cope with whatever was thrown at him.

Chapter 203 - Completely Filled Plains

East of the Azure Dragon City, in the Second District of the Plains Region.

The Second District of the Plains Region contained monsters from LV14 to LV17, which was perfect for players who were farming for gold. Normally, most of the players here were between LV13 and LV15, but at this moment, the Second District of the Plains Region was completely packed. Everyone stood close together, unable to move. This was no exaggeration.

There was a sea of heads and no matter where you looked, you couldn't see the end of it. The crowd was so vast that anyone looking at the scene would break out in cold sweat. Despite the huge number of people flowing in, they had left a very large empty space. These players were clearly not here to train. These immeasurable groups of players were all swarming here for a purpose. They all wanted to personally witness Mystic Moon's first 'official fight'. On one side, the super cool, super dark horse Ling Chen stood against the greatly supported, number one player of China – Sword Emperor!

Ling Chen was the first to actively challenge the Sword Emperor since he became famous. In addition, the stakes for this fight were also a cause for excitement – on one side was the Guild Creation Token, but on the other were 2 Celestial Grade Weapons!

The fight was initiated yesterday morning and news of it had spread so far throughout China that not a single person didn't know about it. Such awareness naturally brought the attention of

major media, who only served to add fuel to the flames. And then the news was quickly exaggerated to a point where the whole world knew. Even the mere challenge of the Yan Huang Alliance in the public was insulting enough for the press to descend upon them. After all, both parties were already world famous people – especially the Sword Emperor. The number of times that the Sword Emperor had used his moves in public was very rare. The people all earnestly hoped that they would be able to witness the Sword Emperor's power with their own eyes.

It was high noon and Yun Meng Xin, Xiao Qi, Su'Er, Mu Bing Yao who still hadn't come out of the First District of the Plains Region were startled by the sight of the immeasurable crowd before them. They had been afraid that many people would want to observe and so there would be no space, which was why they decided to come early. This was just way more than they expected. Xiao Qi stuck out her tongue, and looked to Yun Meng Xin, "Big sister Meng Xin, what do we do? With so many people there's no way we can force our way in."

Yun Meng Xin didn't hesitate for long and gently shook her head, "Lets go back. When the time comes there should be a live broadcast."

"But I want to see big brother Ling Tian beat Sword Emperor with my own eyes. It will be incredible! Su Su, you want to see it with your own eyes too don't you?" Xiao Qi's said reluctantly, her lips curled.

In this fight, not many people favoured Ling Tian to win and most people only came to witness the prowess of the Sword

Emperor. After all, Ling Chen's strength was primarily determined through the grade of the equipment he had revealed and no one knew about his true strength, whereas everyone knew the strength of the Sword Emperor. But for Ling Chen, they knew of his 3 Celestial Grade Weapons and his 2 strong pets. This equipment could be considered the finest in all of China, creating jealousy in all players who saw them. But how did he do it? The people would not forget that in the last fight of the previous virtual world, the Sword Emperor was completely covered in Silver Equipment, yet getting a single handed silver sword was not something an average player would be able to attain. There was no earring, no ring, no necklace... the highest-grade equipment the Sword Emperor had was Silver grade, and yet during the fight, the Sword Emperor easily defeated the top 5 in the Heaven Rankings. Which of the players on the Heaven Rankings was not strong? Moreover, in the late game, their equipment was of incomparable magnificence. At that point, the lowest grade was the Celestial Grade and some even had a whole body full of Heaven's End equipment... but it was no help against the simple equipment of the Sword Emperor.

And so, even with Ling Chen's reputation of being astonishingly strong, there was still little faith that he would be able to defeat the Sword Emperor. This was also the opinion of Long Tian Yun, who most fully understood the real strength of the Sword Emperor. On the contrary, Ling Tian appeared extremely arrogant in his eyes. Moreover, it seemed as if he had never been in the virtual world before, what with not having seen Long Tian Yun or the Sword Emperor before. And to think that one was unmatched in strength purely because of equipment grade was extremely conceited. How could this kind of person defeat the Sword Emperor.

But in the unlikely event that Ling Tian managed to actually defeat the Sword Emperor, then his reputation would rise

exponentially overnight. He would have also technically beaten those the Sword Emperor had beaten. He would become the new first rank!

"Lets go back, in order to avoid danger," Mu Bing Yao said, and then turned around to start heading back.

"Mu big sister is right. There are too many people here, which means there are many risk factors. Plus, even if we stay, it will be impossible to push to the front," Yun Meng Xin said, "Qi Qi, Su Su, lets go back. We still have 2 more hours and even more people will arrive in that time."

Although there was still some reluctance to leave, Mu Bing Yao and Yun Meng Xin both agreed on returning. So it was best to return together to the city, to the cabin that belonged to Heart's Dream. Even though Yun Meng Xin had already attained 900 million gold of funds from Ling Tian, she hadn't started using it yet and they still stayed in the small cabin, unwilling to leave it.

The girls had just returned to the Heart's Dream cabin when there was a flash of white and the pure Shui Ruo appeared. Xiao Qi faced up and shouted anxiously and excitedly, "Ruo Ruo, is Ling Tian big brother here yet? We want to encourage him face to face! He must defeat the Sword Emperor!"

"Ruo Ruo, did your brother go directly to the plains district?" Yun Meng Xin looked at the time. The time until the fight was still 1 hour and 40 minutes.

Shui Ruo gently laughed, “Big brother said he had some other things to do so he didn’t come with me. But you don’t have to worry about him, if he says he can defeat the Sword Emperor, then he definitely can.”

“Of course I believe Ling Tian big brother. But… that Sword Emperor is really strong. I’ll ask Ling Tian big brother where he is now,” Xiao Qi said as she picked up her communication device.

“Let it go, he definitely has something important to do. Let’s not bother him,” Yun Meng Xin said.

“Oh, okay,” Xiao Qi heard what Yun Meng Xin said and obediently put the communications device down.

The time slowly passed as people anxiously waited for the fight. The plains district was filled with more and more people as time went on, so much so that if a piece of meteorite landed in the plains right now, it would the biggest tragedy in history. Be that as it may, even more and more people kept going in. It was impossible to force your way through since so many were unwilling to leave, and yet so many continued to accumulate. Within the crowd there remained that large empty gap. The leaders of both parties had not yet arrived.

The time drew nearer still and the disturbance in the crowd grew less. They were looking at the time, anxiously but excitedly waiting for what was to come.

Finally, after a little while, there were what was probably 100

troops coming from the west. A voice rang out.

“Look! It is the Yan Huang Alliance! Leader of the alliance, the Sword emperor… and the Flame Emperor are here!”

The crowd was in turmoil and everyone tried to see past each other. Those 100 troops were led by Long Tian Yun who had the Sword Emperor on his right and the Flame Emperor on his left. With the protection of these two people, no one in the world could harm Long Tian Yun.

“It’s Long Tian Yun! The leader of the Yan Huang Alliance, he really came!! It looks like this fight is of great importance to him.”

“Of course he will be here, because of what is at stake! The two Celestial Grade equips! I suspect that Ling Tian chose to wager these two Celestial equips so as to catch the attention of the Alliance Master.
“……”

“That is the Sword Emperor? His appearance, his step, his breath… it gives off such a sense of indescribable mysteriousness. I can finally say I’ve seen the Sword Emperor with my own eyes. I hope Ling Tian can last a little longer.”

“…Ooh, someone before was taking bets that the Sword Emperor will defeat Ling Tian within 10 seconds. My stomach couldn’t take what he was saying, so I started arguing with him and we almost got into a fight.”

“Cheh! If the Sword Emperor gives Ling Tian seconds, he has already given him some respect. What about that makes you uncomfortable? Do you really think that Ling Tian, the kind of person who came from nobody knows where, could defeat the Sword Emperor?”

“That’s right, I don’t feel good about it!! Say that the Sword Emperor will defeat Ling Tian in 10 seconds again and I will knock your teeth out!! 5 seconds!! The Sword Emperor must defeat Ling Tian within 5 seconds at most! I will lose it if anyone says 10 seconds. That is an insult to the Sword Emperor!”

“Look, to his left is the Flame Emperor. Legends say that in the past, over 100 players were killed within a second when he cast his strongest move! Over a hundred! He is a Fire Elementalist and the fire that he casts is many times stronger than others. Anyone who touches it will die. When can my magic ever reach even half of his potency?”

“Cheh, if you can reach a tenth of the Flame Emperor’s strength it would be good enough already, let alone half…”

The people engaged in heated discussions, staring earnestly at them. As the Yan Huang Alliance moved through the crowd, they opened up and allowed them access to the middle. A line of 100 people altogether may have seemed extreme, but even a fool knew that wherever Long Tian Yun appeared, there would be many members of the Alliance present. In addition to the 100 members, there would also be a huge number of Yan Huang Alliance members concealed in the crowd.

Long Tian Yun and the Sword Emperor had already arrived but there was no sign of Ling Tian. Standing in the middle, Cang Yan looked around and sneered, “This Ling Tian, is very daring. He dare let the Alliance Leader and The Sword Emperor wait on him!”

Under the myriad of gazes, Long Tian Yun’s expression did not waver but deep down he was feeling uncomfortable. In the guild rankings, there was title that was maliciously hung above his name to shame him: “Underneath is the Yan Huang Alliance that the dog set up”. Anyone who opened the guild rankings could see it. That was equivalent to standing on his face and taking a dump on the Yan Huang Alliance. Until he took this down, he would forever be in turmoil on the inside.

He looked around and saw many familiar faces. The people that were stationed near to the front were not just ordinary people. They were strong leaders and even through the dark night, he could see quite a few. It looked like this fight had interested too many people.

“Xie Yu, when you are fighting, finish it quickly,” Long Tian Yun said in a low voice.

The Sword Emperor did not respond and remained still, like a statue.

“Flame Emperor, have you prepared the revival scrolls?” Long Tian Yun turned to ask.

Flame Emperor nodded, “Relax young master. When Ling Tian is

killed by the Sword Emperor, I will immediately bring him back to life."

"Ahem, such a precious revival scroll to be used on Ling Tian, what a waste of resources," Cang Yan said in disdain.

"Although it will be a waste, the motivation behind it is wise. Firstly, it can demonstrate the kind-heartedness of the Yan Huang Alliance. Secondly, after bringing Ling Chen back to life, he will have to hand over the Celestial Equips on the spot. Otherwise if he dies and returns to the city, he can quickly throw the equips away and no one would know."
The time was gradually closing in on 2pm until only a few minutes remained before the fight.

Chapter 204 - Smacked Away!

“……”

“Once upon a time, there lived a King and a Queen, they gave birth to a lovely girl. This girl’s skin was as white as snow, her cheeks were rosy like apples, and she had jet-black hair. She was so beautiful, as beautiful as Leng’Er, and so the King and Queen decided to name her ‘Snow White’.”

Not only was Snow White beautiful, but she was also very obedient and had a good heart. She loved playing with the animals in the forest, such as the fawn, small rabbits, squirrels and birds. The animals all liked Snow White because Snow White brought food for them to eat and told them stories. She lived everyday happily.

“Not long after, Snow White’s mother passed away. Her stepmother was very pretty but wicked. She hated Snow White for being prettier than her and secretly wanted to kill her for it…”

“……”

“…the witch was finally subjected to God’s punishment, and died. Snow White promised to marry the prince, and they held a grand wedding. From then on Snow White and the prince lived happily ever after.”

After telling yet another story, Ling Chen opened his eyes to see the young girl nearby. Leng’Er was lying on a small bed of soft toys

made by Ling Chen. She rolled around occasionally, but was otherwise so peaceful and so comfortable that she didn't want to come back down. On this bed of dolls, she was almost like a doll herself – and a beautiful and cute one too.

"This is Snow White's story, does Leng'Er like it?" Ling Chen asked with a smile.

"I like... master, I want to hear more stories," Leng'Er turned around to lie on her stomach, looking at Ling Chen with her dark eyes.

"You still want to listen..." Ling Chen was beginning to think that telling her children's stories was not the right thing to do. Telling stories like this was not something he did particularly well. He thought, and closed his eyes, saying, "Well, I'll just tell Leng'Er the Snow White story again."

"Once upon a time, there was a beautiful, lovely girl. Her name was Snow White..."

"...Uncle Hunter could not bear to kill Snow White, and so he released her, letting her escape. Snow White kept running into the forest and then she ran into a boy. This boy's name was Pinocchio and he had a really strange nose. Whenever he told a lie, his nose would grow longer, and when he told the truth, his nose would grow shorter..."

"...Snow White fell in love with Pinocchio's nose's ability to grow longer and shorter, and from that day lived happily ever after...

The end.”

This time, Leng’Er’s face was vacant.

“Master, why would Snow White… like… a nose that could grow longer and shorter?” her head was cocked, as she thought about this question.

“This question…” Ling Chen smirked, “Leng’Er will understand when she is a little older. So Leng’Er should be obedient, so this way you will grow up faster.”

Leng’Er still didn’t understand. Moreover, what does being obedient and growing up have to do with each other?

After looking for a while, Ling Chen let out a yawn and stood up from the grass, stretching his waist. Looking one last time, he closed in on Leng’Er, and said with a smile, “Leng’Er, I think we’ll stop now for today. Seeing as you were so good today, these dolls are all yours. If you like to listen to stories, I will come back tomorrow to tell you more. For now, I will take you to a place with many people, it’ll be fun.”

Seeing Leng’Er’s attitude towards to him, Ling Chen couldn’t help but smile as he got back up.

Attitude towards the Master: 2 (Normal)

Finally... it was finally a positive value!! A positive value meant Leng'Er would no longer reject him and wouldn't try to run away. So, he finally felt at peace.

Who knew, when he had a child with Shui Ruo, he would probably coax them like this.

Right now, we should go to the plains district. Looking at the direction of the plains district, Ling Chen's warm smile slowly became cold.

Second District of the Plains Region

When Ling Chen arrived, it was in the final moments before the determined time. He directed the Cloud Stepping Mare to quickly rush ahead, and was greatly shocked by the crowd that was far ahead.

Many people were expected... but surely this was too many!!

But even facing the terrifying number of people present, Ling Chen still did not reduce his speed and continued to rush ahead.

"Ah! Ling Tian... Ling Tian is here!!"

"That's correct! It really is Ling Tian! He's finally here, I thought he wouldn't dare to come."

“Make way, quickly make way!”

In front of Ling Chen, the dense crowd quickly moved aside to make a passage for him. Ling Chen was very fast but the crowd split apart just as quickly. Ling Chen was then able to move through the crowd without obstruction such that from above, he resembled a sharp knife cutting through the crowd.

Not long after, Ling Chen managed to rush through to the centre of the district. There, the people of the Yan Huang Alliance were waiting for him. As he neared, he used one hand to press onto the horse and launched himself up high from the horse, gliding the next 10m... With him descending so quickly, many people were expecting him to meet his unfortunate end but as Ling Chen reached the ground, he landed solidly on his two feet, completely still. He didn’t even wobble let alone fall, not swaying once.

Although not intentional, Ling Chen’s entrance was way more impressive than the Yan Huang Alliance’s traditional entrance. When he arrived there were quite a few people staring at him, yet he merely took a quick look at his surroundings before facing Long Tian Yun, declaring, “Phew, I ended up not being late.”

“With not even a second to spare... you really did make it on time,” said Long Tian Yun cynically. He stared for a time then raised one hand, “Ling Tian, since the time has already come, so lets begin. Are you ready?”

Long Tian Yun was vigorous and resolute as always. Never one to

waste time on idle talk, he immediately started the fight the moment he arrived. This also meant that he had absolute confidence in the Sword Emperor. Ling Chen gently laughed and said, “This line should be mine, Alliance Master Long. Have you prepared the Guild Creation Token? I believe with his prestige, and with so many of his friends present to witness, Alliance Master Long would not fail to bring this item.”

Puffsshhttt… many of players at the scene spat.

“Hahahaha!” Long Tian Yun bellowed. Laughing and clapping his hands, his eyes were slits and his whole face was filled with a happy expression, “Ling Tian, I feel like I’m beginning to like you. For your energy and courage, even I, Long Tian Yun can’t help but admire it. Concerning the Guild Creation Token, you can have faith. Whatever I say, goes. I will never say something I don’t mean. What about you, did you bring Soaring Cloud and Zephyr Blade.”

“The Equipment Ranking has my name written on it, what do you think?” Ling Chen replied.

“Very good, then, lets begin, I believe your time is extremely precious. Xie Yu.”

Shouting towards the Sword Emperor, Long Tian Yun and the others retreated into the crowd. The silent Sword Emperor finally started moving, taking 2 steps forward, standing probably less than 10 steps away from Ling Chen. He didn’t seem to do anything, his body covered in silver with a tall and slender single-handed sword in his right hand.

That’s right, a single-handed sword. The Sword Emperor only used a single-handed sword.

A single-handed sword was held with one hand, usually accompanied with a shield so that one hand held the sword and one hand held the shield. But a single-handed sword of the same grade and level was hugely different to a double-handed sword. If one hand is not needed, then it tended to be that one would choose a double-handed sword... but the Sword Emperor was the exception. His left hand was empty, yet no one had ever seen him use a double-handed sword, only the single-handed sword.

It seemed that the sword that the Sword Emperor was holding was a Silver grade sword. At the present stage, silver weapons were rare, but compared to the Celestial Weapons that Ling Chen had, there was obviously a big difference.

“Since it is a contest, it needs to be fair. Relax, I will not take advantage of you because of your equipment,” Ling Chen opened his mouth and what he said made the people’s chins almost hit the ground.

There was a dim ray of light, and something that appeared to look like a lance appeared in Ling Chen’s hand. It was a one-handed sword! But that sword, as people would have seen before, was a cheap sword from the store. It was a sword that might not have even been picked up, a level 15 common sword!

“The equipment on me is significantly stronger than yours, so

my weapon should be weaker compared to yours. This way, neither will have an advantage. Let's begin." Ling Chen lifted his right hand and pointed his sword at the Sword Emperor.

The large crowd exploded with excitement.

"Is this Ling Tian guy crazy! If he uses his Celestial Equipment he might stand a chance, but now he is using a common equipment!"

"He's suicidal! He doesn't know his own strength!"

"Who does he think he is?! He is facing the Sword Emperor! You should be packing everything you can to face the Sword Emperor!"

"Hahahahah, that's too funny! He's definitely never seen the strength of the Sword Emperor. Use whatever you want! The result will be the same."

"Huh, it must be that Ling Tian knows he can't win, so he is using a common sword to keep his reputation."

"3 seconds!! 3 seconds at most, no longer than that!"

The crowd was filled with laughing, taunting, various snorts and comments of contempt. Ling Chen's overestimation of his own ability was simply ridiculous.

"Huff, extremely arrogant!" Xiao Qiu Feng, who was filled with

anticipation, said as he wrinkled her brow. Against anyone else it would be just, but this is the Sword Emperor!

The calmest was none other than Yun Feng. He completely understood why Ling Tian did this. The Sword Emperor could not beat Eve, but Ling Tian was on the same level of Eve in terms of strength, and so he was willing to take a cheap weapon in fighting the Sword Emperor. After hearing the words of Xiao Qiu Feng, he laughed and leisurely said, “This is a strong sense of self respect, and also a lot of pride. But, if he says something like that, when he beats the Sword Emperor, no one can say that the reason he won was because of his equipment, don’t you think so?”

Xiao Qiu Feng nodded without speaking.

The crowd quarreled on for a long time, until Long Tian Yun called out, with a smile on his face, “Ling Tian, you need not do so. Equips are the measure of strength, you can still use your strongest equipment.”

“Hey, Young Master, you don’t need to waste time with this nonsense,” Cang Yan said, without waiting for Ling Chen’s reply, as he walked out from the crowd, carrying a look of contempt and sneering at him, “Ling Tian, you are the first to dare to act so wildly before the Yan Huang Alliance. Before you and the Sword Emperor fight, I have a few words to say,” he looked at Ling Chen from head to toe and narrowed his eyes. “The Sword Emperor, who is my superior in the Yan Huang Alliance, cannot be challenged by anyone. And you, who have no qualifications whatsoever, wish to challenge the Sword Emperor? Sure, but first defeat me if you can. If you cannot even defeat me, then go away,

for you are not qualified to challenge the Sword Emperor of the Yan Huang Alliance.”

“Well said!”

“Fight the Flame Emperor first!”

“Huh, who is the Flame Emperor? If he is chosen, it would be a great honour.”

To the players, the more chaos the better. After Cang Yan spoke, the crowd once again began to make a racket. Of course, many of these were the people of the Yan Huang Alliance adding fuel to the fire.

Long Tian Yun’s expression did not change, nor did he make a sound.

The voice by Long Tian Yun’s side made Cang Yan smile even harder, he sneered and said, “Ling Tian, come, change to your strongest equipment and try me. I will let you attack first, but if you do not have to courage to do this, best you leave the two Celestial equipment behind and be gone. Save yourself the embarrassment.”

Cang Yan was prone to bearing grudges. Ling Chen still kept what he said yesterday in his heart. He was looking for an opportunity to mercilessly humiliate and teach Cang Yan a lesson, and in his eyes, this was good opportunity.

Ling Chen looked at him. Looking at this contempt was like looking at an idiot. Suddenly…

Swish!!

Bang!!

The people could only see the silhouette passing by, at almost the same time, there was a loud collision, that rang out in everyone's ears.

"Ahhhh!!!"

12,108!

After the sounds and the shout, a purple damage value appeared. It floated above a human figure.

Cang Yan!

The scream was Cang Yan being smacked away like a ball – high and far away he flew. He flew above the empty space in the centre of the district, then towards the surrounding crowd, hitting some players above the head.

Normally when someone was making an action, there would be a warning motion, allowing the opponent to know what was

coming, but no one clearly saw Ling Chen's movements. When they heard the sound of the collision and Cang Yan's voice, all they could see was Cang Yan flying into the distance, the scarily high damage value, the neon green sword that was held in his hands and the other weapon which was the shape of a giant stone column. No one knew even when Ling Chen managed to pull it out before Cang Yan. Afterward, it was Ling Chen's voice that rang out.

"If you don't want to permanently disappear from the rankings, be careful of what comes out of your mouth."

Chapter 205 - Inviting Self-Humiliation

The buzzing Plains District suddenly quietened down.

The players that were initially taunting Ling Tian were unable to make a sound. Those of the Yan Huang Alliance who were ridiculing him before were unable to manage a smile. Everyone was just staring wide-eyed and open-mouthed… even Long Tian Yun's expression was stiff.

No one saw how Ling Tian pulled out his weapon, and definitely no one saw him move. It all just happened in a split second and all they could see was the result… that the Flame Emperor was defeated. The Flame Emperor was taunting Ling Tian, treating him with contempt, when suddenly he was killed by Ling Tian. Moreover he was launched a few hundred metres into the air… flying so far and so high, it must have been a terrifying attack. And that damage value was over tens of thousands! Enough to kill Cang Yan dozens of times over!

Who was Cang Yan? – China's 4^{th} ranking player, the top Elementalist. No other Elementalists were able to surpass his power. He was worshiped by many players and was admired by many more. When he provoked Ling Tian, the people were looking forward to a great display of his strength, but in the end, he was killed! It was instantaneous – it wasn't even a struggle when he was killed by Ling Tian.

"If you don't want to permanently disappear from the rankings, be careful of what comes out of your mouth."

It was a voice of slight disdain, of one who had killed the Flame Emperor in 1 second. Cang Yan had sneered at him for being over-confident… but that's right, it was actually Cang Yan who was over-confident in his own ability! He spoke as if the 4th ranking Flame Emperor was nothing but a pitiful ant in his eyes. But upon hearing this taunt, no one dared laughed. All of the Flame Emperor's subordinates knew that he had eaten his words.

"Heh, he brought the humiliation upon himself," Yun Feng had a wry smile, which he then couldn't help but turn into a grin. He was the one who understood Ling Chen's real strength the most and he hadn't believed that the fight against the Flame Emperor would be particularly suspenseful, but he didn't think it would end this quickly and cleanly… dealing tens of thousands of damage, and launching him hundreds of metres away – such a picture was definitely intimidating, such strength indubitably terrifying… Is that the level of Eve, the highest peak of human strength?

He looked at Xiao Qiu Feng from the corner of his eye, the sight of the Cold Magistrate with his brows raised satisfied him… he believed that the Cold Magistrate would never say that Ling Tian was over-confident ever again.

After a period of deathly silence, the crowd burst out.

"Wow!!! So cool!!!"

In the house where the fight was being broadcasted live, Xiao Qi jumped up, both hands cupping her cheeks. Jumping around, she didn't even know what she was doing, but she couldn't express the excitement that she was feeling. Su'Er was covering her lips with

both her hands, her eyes shining. Yun Meng Xin's pupils widened in awe, and Shui Ruo was cheering in laughter, her happiness was incomparable... Ling Tian managed to, in one shot, defeat not an ordinary player, but the 4th ranking, awe-inspiring Flame Emperor!

This alone, would make him world famous.

The calmest of all, was Mu Bing Yao. Her expression was indifferent, as if what just happened was completely normal and nothing out of the blue.

"The Flame Emperor... has... has been killed..."

"Over ten thousand damage... What?! Is this real..."

"What was that skill just then, over ten thousand damage... ten thousand!"

"Is this Ling Tian's real strength? Even facing the Flame Emperor... he can easily defeat him!"

"That is scary levels of strength... with this strength, who can escape that technique?"

"The stone pillar looking weapon he is carrying, could it be the equip that has recently appeared on the equipment rankings?"

The instant defeat of the Flame Emperor gave the players new insight. The players' impression towards Ling Chen had changed completely from that of "privileged", "rich" and "extremely arrogant", to feelings of fear towards him... and maybe even a growing support for him. The people had moved aside to make way as the Flame Emperor flew, and they could now see his body lying on the ground bent. That one technique had dealt over ten thousand damage. There was no way the Flame Emperor would survive. He was laying there as dead as could be. Before, he had energetically come out to challenge Ling Tian, but the situation had changed so much in a blink of an eye that he didn't even have a chance to attack before dying. His former provocations towards Ling Tian now all just seemed a joke.

Yaaahhh....

At this time, a large number of players rushed out into the district centre. Ling Chen found himself completely surrounded. There seemed to be thousands of players surrounding Ling Chen, with the tanks at the front, the warriors in the middle, and the mages at the back who were starting to recite their spells. The archers pulled their bowstrings and the summoners started their incantations. All this was aimed at their mutual target, which was Ling Tian in the middle.

These people were all the members of the Yan Huang Alliance. Seeing the Flame Emperor killed, they could no longer idly stand by and so had rushed out.

The sudden action quietened the scene, making it peaceful once again, but immediately the sounds of whispers could be heard.

“What is the meaning of this? They want to attack from all directions?”

“The Flame Emperor tried to pick a fight with Ling Tian and that’s what got him killed.”

“The Flame Emperor got himself killed but such a big Yan Huang Alliance attack for that? They couldn’t win so they are attacking from all sides?”

Ling Chen looked around at the people surrounding him, and laughed coldly, clapping loudly, “Hahahaha, I’ve heard that the Yan Huang Alliance was large in number what with being China’s number 1 guild! Today, it seems like you have really fulfilled that reputation. Your Flame Emperor tried to pick on me, so I completely defeated him, tut tut. Your sudden, overwhelming number of superiority puts on a good show. As the number 1 guild in all of China, you have really given me some respect.”

Ling Chen’s words were the most cutting of taunts, especially that last line. The anger of the Yan Huang Alliance members grew. Unseen, Ling Chen looked around the crowd, and turned to face Long Tian Yun, “If you want to attack me, then get it over with, I don’t think there’s a point of a duel between the Sword Emperor and myself anymore, because even if I win, you’ll just get hundreds and thousands or even millions of players to attack me. Forget about giving me the Guild Creation Token, hahahaha...”

“Woah, they really have no shame!”

“If you can’t afford to lose then don’t fight, tch”

“Ling Tian, this time I support you”

“The Flame Emperor lost all his dignity in a second, and he was the one looking for it, everyone could see that. There is no doubt about it and now that he didn’t win they are trying to surround Ling Tian. Yan Huang Alliance, do you want to be disgraced completely?”

Ling Chen’s taunts and what the surrounding crowd of players said made Long Tian Yun’s brow twist. He looked at Flame Shadow and said coldly, “Who let them come out?!”

“...Cang Yan died, they must have subconsciously rushed out,” Flame Shadow said immediately. He did not give such an order... Of course, there was a possibility he didn’t speak of – that it was an order given by Cang Yan in anger after his death. Given his attitude, his smug provocation, and then being killed in one second, the moment of shame and humiliation was enough to make one explode with rage.

“Make them all stand down!” Long Tian Yun bellowed.

“Yes sir!” Flame Shadow said accordingly. If this was because of a personal vendetta, it was over. With so many people witnessing it, the Flame Emperor would never regain his dignity after this and this would cause severe damage to Yan Huang Alliance’s reputation. He said in a low voice, “That Cang Yan...”

“Do not revive him. Is he not sufficiently disgraced? If he is revived, who knows what else he will do,” Long Tian Yun said while waving his hand.

Flame Shadow deeply agreed. He did not take out the Revival Scroll, and quickly instructed the group to disperse.

“Everyone leave! Who told you to come out? This was a fair fight, no one can be blamed for the death of the Flame Emperor!” Flame Shadow took a few steps forward and exclaimed loudly.

As Flame Shadow spoke, these originally restless players rapidly withdrew from the scene, leaving the centre space open until soon, the only two remaining were Ling Tian and the Sword Emperor.

“Just now when the Flame Emperor died, my people of the Yan Huang Alliance got a little anxious so they did something without thinking and made a fool of themselves. My Yan Huang Alliance always keeps to their commitments. We will not go back on them and will not use our power to bully others,” Flame Shadow stood in the front, and said, “Can everyone please forget that ever happened. The main event for today was for the fight between Ling Tian and the Sword Emperor. I hope that these other things will not interrupt that. Ling Tian, if you are ready, you can begin.”

“I have always been ready to begin,” Ling Chen responded, he then put away his Celestial Equips and took out the common single-handed sword that he had revealed before.

“Be careful,” Long Tian Yun said to the Sword Emperor in a low voice.

The Sword Emperor didn’t say a word. Before, Long Tian Yun had told him to “end it quickly”. But at this moment, he told him to “be careful”. Obviously, what Ling Tian did just then had struck fear into him. Before today, he, and everyone else had underestimated Ling Tian. Everyone thought that his strength came from his level and equipment, but this was not the case from what could be seen of his strength. Yet this did not strike fear into Long Tian Yun. He still had complete faith in the Sword Emperor’s true strength. Just now when the Flame Emperor was killed in one shot; the quick movement, the rapid equipment switch, and the violent and relentless strike…the Flame Emperor was strong – not only did he have a formidable fire that he could control, but he had combat consciousness that was far greater than that of any other person – and even he could not respond to Ling Tian’s attack. This kind of attack that managed to catch the Flame Emperor completely off guard was something not ordinary people could do.

Right now Long Tian Yun had already begun to regret accepting Ling Tian’s challenge from yesterday. At the time, he was feeling violent anger and was unstable in his thinking. It really wasn’t the best time to make decisions. When he calmed down, he regretted it a little bit, but that regret had immediately disappeared because he understood the strength of the Sword Emperor. Moreover, Ling Tian seemed untrained, so Long Tian Yun was unable to find a reason that the Sword Emperor would lose to him.

But now Ling Tian, with the display of his real strength, was causing Long Tian Yun’s initial regret to resurface, even though it was too late. He saw that Ling Tian was really strong, but it was

not Ling Tian's strength that made him uneasy. Instead, it was that from yesterday till today, even under so much pressure, he always remained completely calm, with a collected posture. With such a mood, how could he be the impulsive and extremely arrogant person that others made him out to be?

He said yesterday that this kind of person was either too smart or too stupid... the latter was now impossible, so it had to be the former. A person who was too smart decided to face Sword Emperor on his own initiative and with large stakes involved too. There was only really one possibility, and that was... he had absolute confidence!

Chapter 206 - Ling Tian vs The Sword Emperor

"The attack that Ling Tian used before, could you evade it?" Against the Sky quietly asked Skyfall within the crowd.

"No," Skyfall said simply, shaking his head. "With that kind of explosive power and such a small distance, it is impossible for me to dodge that attack. If I got close enough and he fought me, I would, without a doubt, be defeated."

Hearing the almost invincible Skyfall release such words would have startled anyone, especially as he was ranked third.

"This Ling Tian is certainly full of mysteries. Everyone underestimated him. It looks like the arrogance and lack of restraint he demonstrated previously seemed to be intentional. Fighting the Sword Emperor was also with thorough preparation and purpose, and the usually astute Long Tian Yun has actually been led by the nose by him," Skyfall said softly as he looked at Ling Tian. "This person must be of remarkable talent or... a freak of nature. Long Tian Yun might be humiliated today."

"Are you saying Ling Tian can defeat the Sword Emperor?" Against the Sky asked, surprised.

"At first, I didn't think he could, but now, the possibility really exists. Long Tian Yun himself is also somewhat flustered," Skyfall said with a laugh, his eyes lighting up as he waited to enjoy the sight. There was no doubt that the Sword Emperor was strong but

if Ling Tian actually defeated the Sword Emperor today, it would greatly frustrate the Yan Huang Alliance, and that was something he would be glad to see.

"The Sword Emperor is the strongest player in this generation. His sword technique is unparalleled in this world. You have fought him before so you should have the clearest impression. What Ling Tian suddenly did before was surprising, but I still think he will not be able to defeat the Sword Emperor... However, what you said, boss, is correct. There is, at the very least, a possibility. It is not a situation where it is 'impossible'," Against the Sky said.

They were not the only ones sharing that thought. What all the players had anticipated to happen in this showdown had completely changed. Not only did he kill the 4th ranked player, the Flame Emperor, in one blow, but he also dealt over ten thousand damage in one hit. If anyone had a chance of beating the Sword Emperor, it was Ling Tian – and if he truly did win, then he would become the new 1st ranked player!

But with the Sword Emperor's strength, could he really do it? Would Ling Tian really be capable of defeating the Sword Emperor?

"Whether Ling Tian can actually defeat the Flame Emperor is interesting, but what I am more interested in is that he killed the Flame Emperor in under a second. No matter what happens now, he has already thoroughly offended the entire Yan Huang Alliance, which means Cang Yan, with his temperament, will have an undying, deep-to-the-bone, hatred for him. Except, when Ling Tian defeated Cang Yan, it was clean and quick without hesitation.

If he is not a stupid person, he too knows the consequences of that action. Thinking of what happened yesterday, he probably does not care that he has offended the Yan Huang Alliance. Maybe it was even intentional. This could turn out to be very interesting," Skyfall nodded meaningfully.

"Offending the Yan Huang Alliance was inevitable but maybe we can attract him to our Skyfall Dynasty. With his level, equipment, fame, as well as the fact that he killed the Flame Emperor in one second, it will give us a tremendous boost in strength!" Against the Sky said.

"That is correct," Skyfall nodded, looking straight ahead at Ling Tian. He began contemplating how he could win him over to the Skyfall Dynasty.

The numerous players in and around the plains quietened down.

At first almost everyone had thought that the Sword Emperor would win, but now the expectations had changed. The tension grew increasingly higher – it was the moment before the showdown between Ling Tian and the Sword Emperor.

"Big brother, good luck!" Ling Shui Ruo clasped both hands in front of her, her eyes sparkling as she anxiously looked at her brother. She believed that he would be able to succeed because in her heart, she knew that there was nothing her brother could not do. But even so she was unable to control her anxiety, as he was about to face the best in china.

“Big brother Ling Tian, you must win! Even if it’s the Sword Emperor, you have to win!”

“Big brother Ling Tian, good luck.”

Hearing the nervous shouts of these girls, Mu Bing Yao’s eyebrows pricked slightly. “The Sword Emperor will lose,” she said without expression.

The Second Region of the Plans District was completely filled with people, but at that moment, it was so quiet that one could hear a pin drop. Ling Tian and the Sword Emperor had been facing each other for a long time, but neither had made a move. The Sword Emperor was ranked 1st, so naturally, the Sword Emperor would not want to be the one attacking. But Ling Chen, full of pride, would not want to attack first either.

“I don’t want to waste any time and I trust you feel the same. I made the challenge, so I will make the first move,” Ling Chen said, lifting his sword slightly so that it was a sharp 45 degrees from the ground.

A pleasant breeze blew by and the Sword Emperor’s cape rippled. The Sword Emperor, who was stationary until this point, now moved like a strong wind – no, it should be compared to a storm, full of speed and strength – and just like when Ling Chen killed the Flame Emperor. Only a remnant of the Sword Emperor’s silhouette was left as the Sword Emperor rushed towards Ling Chen. The Sword Emperor’s wrist was wrapped in grey cloth and the Sword Emperor’s hand made innumerable illusory swords with the sword as it was thrust towards Ling Chen’s body.

“Ahh!!” The crowd shouted out in surprise.

The Sword Emperor’s movement shocked the whole world.

The Sword Emperor was formidable not only because of sword techniques, but also because of combat knowledge and explosive movements that were unparalleled in the world. Ling Chen couldn’t focus on the numerous illusory swords that were heading towards his body. Even though the Sword Emperor was holding one sword, it was pointing in so many different directions and creating so many strong breezes in its wake that it was as if each of them were real swords and not just illusory after-images.

This was definitely not a technique in the Mystic Moon World but one that the Sword Emperor had developed individually.

What went into the game world was not the player’s body, but his consciousness. When an ordinary player entered the world, they fought with the skills of their profession and class. But, if one entered with real world mastery of the sword, then when they were in the game world, they would still have mastery over the sword. The game could not remove the memory of a player, nor would it stop the player’s ability to control the sword. The game couldn’t make it forget the real world sword techniques that the players knew.

Taking Cang Yan as an example, he had great control over the use of fire in the real world, and so when he entered the game world, his control of fire was of a superior level. The players whose

skills were far beyond that of ordinary players did not exist without reason.

With the Sword Emperor's first attack, the players could see that the illusory swords seemed to have blocked all of Ling Chen's escape routes. The Sword Emperor clearly only had one sword, but it was as if Ling Chen was being cut by innumerable swords. Those who saw the Sword Emperor attack for the first time let out a surprised cry and in that moment they understood why the Sword Emperor was called the Sword Emperor.

The Sword Emperor's attacks were capable of cutting his opponent to bits... it was like being attacked by more than ten swords, ten times, in an instant. Even the players with high levels of HP would be unable to withstand the attack and would be killed in an instant. Ling Tian, who was already covered by the illusory swords, would die in an instant unless his defence and HP were high enough to withstand the Sword Emperor's strong ten swords' attacks

But...

Within the illusory swords, the people noticed that Ling Tian's body was in a trance. It was as if his body was placed in a light screen, fuzzy and immaterial. The swords were passing through him as he just stood there, no damage values appearing. It was just like he was nonchalantly floating. Then while still within the illusory swords, he suddenly lifted the silver sword in his hands, casting a "Ling Tian Burst", which covered a 5m arc in front of him, towards the Sword Emperor.

Ling Tian Burst's range was 5m and the speed in which he raised his hands was incomparably fast. There was no way that anyone would be able to dodge that. Just when his sword was about to hit the Sword Emperor, a "ding" sound that came to his ears.

The Sword Emperor's illusory swords had disappeared and the Silver grade sword was pressed against Ling Chen's sword, preventing the skill from activating. Ling Tian wrinkled his brow and added more pressure in his arm. The Sword Emperor pushed away, and moved backwards so that the two separated. They looked at each other, silent.

The whole plains were silent.

The first time Ling Tian and the Sword Emperor crossed swords, it left the whole crowd of players dumbfounded.

Ling Tian was perfectly fine and the Sword Emperor was perfectly fine. There was not yet a damage value to be seen.

"He was clearly within the illusory blades, how..." seeing Ling Tian perfectly fine, Xiao Qiu Feng whispered, unable to believe his own eyes. He understood clearly what the Sword Emperor's technique was capable of.

"Hey, its not just you!" Yun Feng clasped his hands and his vision became fiery. When the illusory swords covered Ling Chen, his heart sank. But even within the illusory swords, Ling Chen had managed to not get hurt at all, which meant that none of the illusory swords touched his body, which was even more surprising.

To his knowledge, the Sword Emperor could swing at 13 different angles in one second, so if you wanted to evade it you had to evade the swords shapes entirely. Otherwise, if one were to use their sword, they would have to do so within one second in order to precisely match all the swings!

This was not something a normal human could do!

But Ling Tian didn't get hit once.

The players who knew how scary the Sword Emperor truly was would find this the most shocking and wouldn't be able to believe it.

"This... is... impossible...!!"

Long Tian Yun was thoroughly surprised and his assistant, Flame Shadow, nearby was also thoroughly surprised. They were completely unable to believe that what happened just a moment ago was real.

Under the whole heavens, there was only one person who could achieve that. That person was a player called "True God", and would never be surpassed... Eve!

This Ling Tian, could it be that his strength compared with Eve?! No way, there was definitely no way! There could only be one with Eve's strength! How could someone possibly surpass the Sword Emperor to approach her strength? No way!!

“As expected of the Sword Emperor, using a Silver grade sword to perform a parry,” Ling Chen looked straight ahead at the Sword Emperor, seemingly wanting to look past the cloak to see the Sword Emperor’s true appearance. In the game world, only weapons of Celestial Rank and above could have the chance of triggering a parry, but the Sword Emperor was able to create one with just a Silver grade sword in hand.

The Sword Emperor’s sword technique was truly terrifying. Even an ordinary sword could be used as a terrifying weapon in those hands.

Chapter 207 - Heaven's Edge, Butterfly's Dance (1)

It was absolutely crucial to keep one's distance from the Sword Emperor-because once the Sword Emperor got within range, the fight would already be over. This was something all players... especially those who had fought against the Sword Emperor knew. In a split second, the Sword Emperor could attack many times, making it impossible to dodge, much less counterattack.

Just then, everyone saw the Sword Emperor come within close range of Ling Chen, and shot out countless illusory blades that completely covered Ling Tian. At that moment, everyone was sure that Ling Tian was dead... although the Sword Emperor's equipment were all very ordinary, but normal attacks could do around 300 damage (unless, of course, Ling Tian had unrealistically high Defence). Attacking ten or so times in just a split second, that would deal over 3,000 damage. Even if Ling Tian was covered in Celestial grade equipment, it was impossible for him, at his level, to have over 3,000 HP.

However, he was not hit even a single time, and was even able to successfully counterattack, striking the Sword Emperor backwards.

"Im...Impossible!!" Long Tian Yun gnashed his teeth, repeating that word over and over again. Even with his mental fortitude, he was still shocked to the point of disbelief... the Sword Emperor was the strongest player in his Yan Huang Alliance, as well as the strongest player in China. The Sword Emperor was also his main bodyguard, who he had absolute faith in. However, the Sword

Emperor's attack had been easily broken by the opponent-this was something that he simply could not believe, and did not want to accept.

Flame Shadow could understand how Long Tian Yun was feeling. Seeing the person that he had absolute confidence in being forced backwards, it was something extremely unpleasant and worrying. Seeing Long Tian Yun's expression changing, he hurriedly said, "Young master! Don't worry, that was only the Sword Emperor's most basic attack. The Sword Emperor is unparalleled in China, so after he becomes serious, even 10 Ling Tians will not be able to defeat him! Please do not worry, young master!"

Flame Shadow's words caused Long Tian Yun to calm down slightly. Long Tian Yun frowned, and gripped his hands into fists, "You're right. Right now, the Sword Emperor might even be able to fight on even grounds with Eve. How could he lose to this Ling Tian!"

"This time, it's my turn to attack."

In the second bout of attacks, Ling Tian decided to take the initiative and attack first. However, his attacking style was completely different to that in the first bout of attacks. He held the sword in front of him, and slowly walked towards the Sword Emperor. His walking seemed extremely casual, as if he was taking a stroll, rather than fighting an extremely important match with an incredibly powerful player.

However, in contrast, the Sword Emperor was not at all at ease. Instead, every time Ling Chen took a step closer, the Sword

Emperor could feel an invisible pressure becoming greater. The Sword Emperor could almost see an incredibly venomous and dangerous snake slowly and stealthily creeping forwards, ready to strike out suddenly at any moment.

Swoosh!!

Although movement speed was something players were limited by, explosive power and speed were not restricted at all. Usually, before most people ran at their full speed or released their full power, their feet would always have a slight preparation movement. However, Ling Chen didn't have one-he was like a gale that burst forth suddenly, charging towards the Sword Emperor. The Pale White grade sword in Ling Chen's hand was like the venomous fangs of a snake, piercing towards the Sword Emperor's head.

Seeing such an explosive movement, without needing any preparation, the experts who were present were all shocked. With this sort of explosive speed, let alone in close quarters, but even if he was a mid-range distance away, his opponents still wouldn't be able to easily defend even if they were mentally prepared.

This was the first time that Ling Chen had attacked first. His extremely ordinary sword actually brought pressure to the Sword Emperor. The Sword Emperor's mastery of the sword was at an incredibly high level, to the point that it was unnecessary to actually see the opponent's attack-after all, just based on the pressure from the opponent's sword, the Sword Emperor was able to immediately work out the trajectory of the sword. The Sword Emperor did not retreat, because with such explosive speed behind

the attack, there was simply not enough time to move backwards. Moreover, the Sword Emperor's body was much slower than the sword, so although retreating was impossible, the Sword Emperor could still execute a perfect parry.

With his sword pointing towards the Sword Emperor, Ling Chen's lightning fast attack would cause most ordinary players to panic, and pray that their weapon would activate a parry. Nonetheless, when Ling Chen's sword was a mere 10cm away from the Sword Emperor, the Sword Emperor already prepared to parry it in the next instant... however, in that last moment, the Sword Emperor suddenly felt that the sword suddenly disappeared... the Sword Emperor immediately gripped down on the sword.

–

Clang!!

Although Ling Chen's attack seemed to be aimed at the Sword Emperor's head, it was only a feint-his real target was the left side of the Sword Emperor's chest, but his sword was suddenly parried by the Sword Emperor.

A look of shock flashed past on Ling Chen's face... the Sword Emperor could even parry this? The Sword Emperor's sword intent was indeed monstrous. To be able to cultivate such a sword intent, even if it was the Xuanyuan family, it would take someone perhaps sixty or seventy years. To be precise, even if one began to train in the sword as soon as they were born, they would still have to be sixty or seventy to achieve this level of sword intent. However, the person in front of him didn't seem to be an elderly

person, based from their movements and the aura they gave off. At most this person seemed around forty.

To be able to achieve such a sword intent at the age of forty, this sort of talent could be described as a monstrous genius!

In the way of the sword, it was incredibly difficult to train one's sword intent. This was because training sword intent was not just about training, but also about one's talent and comprehension. It was something that could only be developed over a long period of time. The more powerful one's sword intent was, the more skilful their execution of sword skills and techniques would be.

To have such a cultivation at such a young age... was the reason this Sword Emperor is completely wrapped up to protect his identity? Ling Chen looked up at the place where his sword and the Sword Emperor's sword were locked together, and smiled...

To be able to parry whenever one wanted, that was an incredible skill. As long as one could get the timing right, as well as block at the right place, one could parry any type of physical attack. With Ling Chen's skill, it wouldn't be too difficult for him to do such a thing. However, Ling Chen had not used this many times in the Mystic Moon world, especially not while fighting strong bosses. The reason was simple-just because one parried, that didn't mean the attack would be completely blocked. Rather, this was extremely dangerous...

It would be possible for one to completely parry and block the attack from an opponent whose strength was similar, or weaker. However, if an opponent with strength much greater than the user

attacked, if the user tried to parry, that would be courting death. The opponent's attack would easily break through or thrust aside the parry, resulting in the attack hitting the user.

Ling Tian put most of his points in Strength, and his War God Technique also boosted his Strength greatly. Thus, in terms of Strength, the Sword Emperor definitely wasn't Ling Tian's match. Moreover, taking into account Ling Chen's explosive speed... the moment his attack was parried, Ling Chen continued to burst forwards. Just like he expected, the Sword Emperor's body was easily pushed back by him, causing the Sword Emperor to stumble backwards. Ling Chen continued to rush forwards, sending a Ling Tian Burst towards the Sword Emperor.

The players in the crowd let out gasps and cries of shock. Even Long Tian Yun involuntarily took a step forward. Ling Tian's attacks could deal over 10,000 damage-if the Sword Emperor was hit, then the match would be immediately over.

Clang!!

The sound of metal clashing once again sounded out. The Sword Emperor's sword, as if it had a life of its own, once again parried Ling Chen's attack. Immediately after, the Sword Emperor's wrist flicked, pushing Ling Chen's sword aside, and rushed towards Ling Chen with the sword pointing towards Ling Chen's chest.

Being able to parry even while off-balance, and immediately counterattacking afterwards, Ling Chen simply could not look down on this Sword Emperor. The sword in the Sword Emperor's hand came closer and closer, but this time, there was only the

single sword, and no illusory swords. However, as the sword drew nearer to Ling Chen's body, everyone's eyes widened... because the straight sword suddenly bent and curved.

The sword was clearly heading towards his chest, and yet the sense of danger came from the right. In the next moment, the sword seemed to bend and attack from the left, right and centre.

Ling Chen frowned, and retreated, then suddenly leaned backwards. Three gusts of wind passed over him. Ling Chen then immediately shot forwards, barraging into the Sword Emperor's chest.

With the sword piercing over Ling Chen's head, there was no way for the Sword Emperor to dodge Ling Chen who charged like a meteor. Ling Chen's left elbow struck the right side of the Sword Emperor's chest, making the Sword Emperor lose balance. Immediately, Ling Chen also cast a Ling Tian Burst.

Bang!!

-1260!

After being elbowed and hit by a Ling Tian Burst, the Sword Emperor was knocked back by 10 steps and fell down. Because Ling Chen was only using a Pale White grade sword, his Ling Tian Burst only dealt 1260 damage, leaving the Sword Emperor with just a sliver of HP.

Woosh—-

The Sword Emperor falling to the ground and almost being insta-killed caused all of the spectating players to call out in shock and dismay. Long Tian Yun staggered, and felt as if he was going to vomit blood. Flame Shadow quickly rushed over and supported Long Tian Yun's body, "Young... young master! The Sword Emperor hasn't used his full strength yet, please do not worry. He will definitely defeat Ling Tian."

"The one to fall was actually... actually... the Sword Emperor!"

"Ling Tian really does have the power to defeat the Sword Emperor!"

"I couldn't even see what he did clearly. My goodness, is this really a game? Why does it seem like a scene from an action movie..."

"I can't believe it! Is the Sword Emperor's legend going to be dispelled? What sort of person is this Ling Tian?"

"Damn! Who was it that bet with me that the Sword Emperor would destroy Ling Tian in 5 seconds? Come out!"

The development of the battle was out of everyone's expectations. They had only exchanged a few blows, but it was already obvious who had the upper hand; it was Sword Emperor... who had fallen. Although the Sword Emperor was still alive,

anyone could see the difference in strength... and it wasn't a small, either.

"Yeah!!!" Within the small house in the Azure Dragon City, the girls cheered wildly.

"'Cool Breeze Caressing the Ridge' of the Xuanyuan family's thirty six sword techniques. It seems that you are indeed from the Xuanyuan family." Facing the Sword Emperor, Ling Chen spoke in a low voice that only the Sword Emperor could hear. Suddenly, Ling Chen's expression changed, and said in a shocked voice that only audible by the Sword Emperor, "You're a woman!?"

Chapter 208 - Heaven's Edge, Butterfly's Dance (2)

"You're a woman!?"

Although Ling Chen blurted out these words, he said them in a low voice, so that only the Sword Emperor heard. As this sentence came out of his mouth, a wave of shock passed through his heart.

As he struck the right side of the Sword Emperor's chest, his elbow felt something that was curved and soft. For males, if they had strong pectoral muscles, it would instead feel solid and thick. However, what he touched was a softness and roundness that only women had.

Ling Chen was almost certain that this Sword Emperor was actually a woman!!

Come to think of it, it was impossible for anyone to know Sword Emperor's actual gender. After all, the Sword Emperor was always wrapped in a cloak, and did not reveal anything. The Sword Emperor never spoke either... thus, no one knew that the Sword Emperor was actually a woman! Moreover, even if he said it out loud, no one would believe that the almighty Sword Emperor was a woman.

Ling Chen's lips slightly curved upwards into a smirk. He was sure that in order to gain this level of skill, this person had to be at least forty or fifty years old. It was unfortunate that the breasts he had just touched belonged to a forty or fifty year old woman,

rather than a young lady. However, a woman possessing such sword intent at such an age caused one to marvel.

Originally, after knocking down the Sword Emperor, Ling Chen had the chance to immediately finish her off and conclude the duel. However, finding out that the Sword Emperor was a woman caused him to pause in shock, which resulted in him losing his chance.

At this moment, the Sword Emperor slowly stood up. A cold killing intent radiated out from her body, causing the surrounding temperature to drop. The people in the crowd nearby all fell silent, and the players who were especially close began to shiver.

Ling Chen frowned. He was much too familiar with killing intent. This Sword Emperor's killing intent... was extremely strong and heavy.

The killing intent radiating out from the Sword Emperor was so thick that those around her felt that there were countless sharp swords stabbing into their faces. For the players who had only read about 'killing intent' in novels and manga, this was the first time they had truly known what it was.

"Young master, the Sword Emperor has gotten angry-such a strong killing intent. Ling Chen is doomed for sure." Flame Shadow quickly said to Long Tian Yun.

Long Tian Yun's gaze was dark and cold, and he stared at Ling Chen and the Sword Emperor. He would not allow the Sword

Emperor to lose! There was nothing he wanted more than for the Sword Emperor to instantly destroy Ling Tian.

Everyone present could feel the Sword Emperor's killing intent and anger. However, they all believed that this was because the Sword Emperor had been knocked down by Ling Tian, whereas only Ling Chen knew the true reason... because he had touched her chest.

In the virtual world, there was a penalty setting for sexually assaulting females. If a male player touched a private part of a female's body without her permission, the female player could use the system to punish the offender with lightning from the heavens. The degree of the punishment would differ according to how serious the offence was. Just then, he had touched a private part on the Sword Emperor's body, which allowed her to use the lightning punishment on him. However, she did not do this-after all, this would be like telling the whole world that she was actually a woman!

"Things are getting interesting. The one who is clearly superior is actually Ling Tian." Within the crowd, Against the Sky said in shock.

"Long Tian Yun's emotions must be quite interesting right now. This Ling Tian... his background definitely isn't ordinary. Even the Xuan Yuan family's 'Sword Emperor' can't do anything to him! He's simply a monster." Skyfall's words were incredibly accurate and pertinent.

"This is the first time I've seen or heard about the Sword

Emperor getting angry; it almost doesn't seem right. Wasn't it said that the Sword Emperor already cut off all emotions? Back when the Sword Emperor was defeated by Eve, he didn't have any reaction at all." Against the Sky pondered out loud.

"This isn't important; let's just continue watching this entertaining performance."

Everyone had things that they were especially mindful or defensive about. This was especially so for women and their private parts. From the Sword Emperor's reaction, she was as defensive as other women in this respect... no, perhaps even more defensive. This sort of killing intent and hatred radiating out from her was similar to that of an irreconcilable hatred.

Didn't I just accidentally touch your chest? Why is such an old lady getting so worked up over that!? Could she be an old virgin or something?

"Ai, you don't have to get so worked up over it. I didn't know you were a woman, and I didn't do it on purpose. Alright, I'll definitely keep this a secret." Ling Chen helplessly said in a low voice that only the Sword Emperor could hear.

The Sword Emperor's response was her blade coming towards him, filled with boundless killing intent.

Ling Chen's body moved back and forth as he dodged all seven of the illusory blades. He continued to speak, "The Xuan Yuan family's 36 Sword Techniques are indeed quite powerful. Forget it,

since I don't know you, I can't just take advantage of you like that. In return, I'll let you use thirty moves against me without retaliation."

Swish! Woosh!

As the Sword Emperor's sword slashed and pierced through the air, it created tearing sounds. It was obvious how devastating her attacks were. Ling Chen withdrew his sword, and directed all of his focus onto the Sword Emperor's sword. As he retreated backwards, he dodged the Sword Emperor's first strike, and muttered "Splitting Clouds, Revealing Sun." As the Sword Emperor's third attack came towards him, the blade split into two illusory blades, then four, then eight...

Ling Chen's eyes narrowed, and his body rapidly swung back and forth from left to right, causing all of the illusory blades to miss him. Four words came out of his mouth, "Heaven and Earth Strike."

All of the words that came out of his mouth were the names of the techniques the Sword Emperor was using.

The Sword Emperor continuously moved, furiously striking towards Ling Chen. Sometimes the strikes came from the left, sometimes they came from the right; sometimes from above, sometimes from below; sometimes twisting, sometimes illusory, sometimes even disappearing...

Every technique that the Sword Emperor used was vastly

different to other ones; there was no repetition in her attack pattern. This caused the spectating players to watch with their mouths hanging open. What was even more shocking was that the Sword Emperor's target, Ling Tian, had not been hit a single time. He had been evading the entire time-sometimes to the left, sometimes to the right, sometimes retreating, and sometimes even advancing. If one had to describe him, it would have to be like a ghost or a spectre. No one could clearly see his movements. Sometimes it seemed that he was standing still, and yet the sword was still not able to touch his body. Moreover, no one knew that every time the Sword Emperor used a technique, he would call out its name...

"Soaring Snow Like Rainbows!"

"Boundless Heavens and Earth!"

"Turning Clouds, Rippling Wind!"

"Big Dipper Chaotic Dance!"

"Rolling Clouds, Flowing Waters!"

Ling Chen continuously dodged the Sword Emperor's thirty strikes, and did not retaliate at all. Instead, all he did was yell out thirty technique names... he did not miss even a single one! No one could see the shock in the Sword Emperor's heart. The feeling that Ling Chen gave the Sword Emperor was the same as that which

Eve gave her. Back when Eve had defeated her, it was like she already knew how she would attack... she would never forget the feeling of being attacked by Eve-not only did it seem like she could predict how and where the Sword Emperor would attack, but could also seemingly tell where she would retreat. No matter how the Sword Emperor dodged, Eve's attacks always found their mark on her body.

The Ling Tian in front of her was similar to that Eve!

"I said that I'd give you a handicap of thirty moves, and now that's complete, so I don't owe you anything. Now, it's my turn to attack!"

After calling out in a low voice, Ling Chen's semi-closed eyes suddenly flew open, and the Pale White grade sword in his hand flat stabbed towards the Sword Emperor.

Clang!

The Sword Emperor twirled her sword, and swept aside Ling Chen's strike. Ling Chen laughed, and he flicked his right wrist, smashing a Ling Tian Burst diagonally towards the Sword emperor... he believed that with the Ling Tian Burst's power, even if the Sword Emperor blocked it, she would be blasted back.

However, the block that he had expected did not come. The Sword Emperor jumped high above this diagonal strike... she didn't just jump up, but also flipped and turned a few times. As she spun, the sword in her hands also struck out numerous times,

creating many illusory blades. In the lighting, it looked as if there were countless stars and meteors around her body, giving the entire scene a dream-like appearance. To the spectators, it looked as if there was a meteor piercing towards Ling Chen's chest.

The Sword Emperor's sword intent had been gathered into an attack which focused on a single point. If it hit, it would unleash devastating damage. Faced with such a scene, it would be incredibly hard to dodge. As for Ling Chen with his monstrous spirit power... how could he not be able to dodge this sort of attack?

However, just as the Sword Emperor was still spinning in the air with the meteor-like illusory swords around her, Ling Chen was so shocked that he felt as if he had been struck by lightning, and his body stiffened, and a ringing sound appeared in his head.

Whish!!

The swift and sharp blade pierced through the air, and brushed past Ling Chen's body. Ling Chen had used all of his strength to desperately twist to the side to avoid the Sword Emperor's attack. Otherwise, with his not-so-outstanding HP, it was possible that he could have been instantly killed. However, this desperate dodge was not executed with the earlier precision and calmness. He had taken three steps back before he recovered his balance again. Ling Chen raised his head, and looked at the Sword Emperor... if he took off his mask, everyone would clearly see that his eyes were shaking, and even his hands were slightly trembling.

The Sword Emperor did not continue to attack, and stood still,

coldly staring at him. After those thirty moves, her anger had more or less dissipated. Just then when she had attacked, she could also feel that Ling Chen had slightly spaced out, and thus was nearly hit by her. She could also tell that his breathing had become irregular.

Ling Chen's throat was dry as he faced the Sword emperor. His calm heart had been thrown into chaos, and his heart was furiously thumping. It was as if there were giant waves crashing about in his mind.

"You... you are..."

He said a few vague words, but the words he truly wanted to say did not come out.

He also knew the name of the technique that the Sword Emperor had just used.

Its name was called Heaven's Edge, Butterfly's Dance (Tian Ya Dia (Die) Wu)

[TLN: I'll be translating 蝶 (Die, meaning butterfly) as Dia, as 'Die' obviously has a completely different meaning in English].

This technique was created by two people... and only one person knew how to use it...

Chapter 209 - You've Lost

To be attacked by the Sword Emperor at close range meant certain death. This was common knowledge to all Chinese players.

However, the Sword Emperor had attacked Ling Tian thirty times, but he had not taken any damage at all. He had actually put away his weapons, and casually dodged the attacks with his hands behind his back. Evidently, he was allowing the Sword Emperor strike out at him without retaliating-he didn't take the Sword Emperor seriously at all. In fact, it seemed like he was just playing around with the Sword Emperor.

The Yan Huang Alliance players all began to tremble. Their pride, their god, was like nothing to this Ling Tian. Even when attacking at close range, the Sword Emperor was powerless against Ling Tian... no, it wasn't because the Sword Emperor was weak, but because of how monstrous Ling Tian was.

Long Tian Yun's face was now twisted in anger, and Flame Shadow by his side was sweating profusely. Cang Yan, who had been instantly killed by Ling Tian, had revived at the Azure Dragon City, and was so furious that he couldn't make a sound.

Before today, who would have thought that this battle wasn't the Sword Emperor bullying Ling Tian, but rather Ling Tian controlling everything.

Ling Tian... what sort of deity was he! This thought passed through every spectator's mind.

“It’s difficult to believe that this person… can only be described as a ‘monsters’. Not only can he suppress the Sword Emperor, but he can even play around at the same time. Perhaps he’s even at the same level as Eve!” Xiao Qiu Feng said in awe.

Beside him, Yun Feng’s mouth curved up into a smile. This wasn’t just ‘perhaps’- this was a fact. Back then, he had personally seen Ling Tian face off against Eve on equal grounds. He frowned, and said in a low voice, “However, it was pretty weird just then- although Ling Tian was able to dodge multiple illusory blades at the same time, there was only one in that last attack, but it seemed that he spaced out at that moment. What happened? Did he realise something?”

Xiao Qiu Feng: “……”

Azure Dragon City, within Heart’s Dream’s small house

“Big brother Ling Tian is so, so awesome! He’s so cool, wowowow!”

Even if it was someone who had never stepped into the virtual world before, they would still know that Ling Tian was completely in control of this battle. The strongest player in China was being completely suppressed by Ling Tian, who was their fellow guildmate in Heart’s Dream. They all felt extremely honoured and glorified, and they as excited as defeating the Sword Emperor themselves.

In this small room, the girls cheered unceasingly. There were great waves crashing within Yun Meng Xin's heart. Big brother had found such a person to help her-it was simply inconceivable and unbelievable. From how things looked, it seemed that it would be incredibly easy for him to defeat the Sword Emperor. It wouldn't even take him much time or effort. From today onwards, his name would travel throughout the entire China, and the entire world! Once Heart's Dream was officially established, with him as a member, their fame would also spread throughout the entirety of China in a single night. At that time, Heart's Dream's fame and reputation would be comparable to that of the Yun family financial group's!

As for gold... yesterday, Ling Tian had all of a sudden given her 900 million gold! Moreover, he gave it to her so easily, so casually... indeed, at that level, it would be incredibly easy for him to earn money. In that case, amassing a wealth that rivalled the Yun family financial group's within two years was no longer impossible.

Because of him, the seemingly distant and impossible dream was starting to become a reality.

"Ling Tian..." Unconsciously, Yun Meng Xin gently said this name.

All of the girls were wildly cheering, except Mu Bing Yao. The Sword Emperor's last strike had been barely dodged by Ling Tian, which was incomprehensible to her. Even if that attack was twice as fast, Ling Tian would still be able to easily dodge it. So what happened just then? What had happened to cause him to lose focus

to such an extent?

“You… you are…”

Ling Chen’s heart trembled, and his body shook. His mind was filled with countless memories of scenes and voices that caused his emotions to run amok.

……

“Big brother Tian Ya, let’s give this sword technique we made together a name! What should we call it… right, let’s call it ‘Heaven’s Edge, Butterfly’s Dance’ (Tian Ya Dia Wu), what do you think?”

“Heaven’s Edge, Butterfly’s Dance… ha! What a beautiful name.”

……

Heaven’s Edge… Butterfly’s Dance…

No…

Impossible…

Impossible…

She already… she definitely already…

……

“What are the results… have you found any information about her!? Where is she? How is she?”

“… Master, please, you have to remain calm.”

“What are you saying? Did something happen to her? Tell me!!”

“Yes… Master, the information we found out about her was… was… within the Xuan Yuan family, there’s no longer a person called Xuan Yuan Dia Wu… seven years ago, she already… already… fasted to death.” [TLN: as in died from refusing to eat]

“……”

“No… impossible! It’s definitely not true… It’s definitely not true!!!”

“Master, I’m sorry, but seven years ago, Xuan Yuan Dia Wu already…”

“Shut up!! I… don’t… believe… it!!!!”

……

Ling Chen's breathing became incredibly heavy and ragged, and his vision became distorted. Right now, if the Sword Emperor attacked, he definitely would not be able to dodge.

Heaven's Edge, Butterfly's Dance...

Tian Ya and Dia Wu...

Ling Chen raised his head, and rested his gaze on the Sword Emperor, unable to move at all. The Sword Emperor had covered every inch of her body so that nothing could be seen. Her appearance, eyes, hair-everything was completely hidden... the Sword Emperor never spoke, and did not make any noise... no one had ever heard her speak before...

Ling Chen's heart ached as if someone had shot an arrow through it.

.....

"Dia'er, I beg you, leave me. Get away from me as far as you can, otherwise... you'll die as well!"

"I don't want to! I trained so hard with my sword so I can protect you, I don't want you to die... If you're really going to die, then let me die with you. I'm not afraid of dying, I'm only afraid that you'll leave me alone. Big brother Tian Ya, please don't chase me away, don't... wuu...wuu..."

.....

“Dia’er, I don’t want to die... I really don’t want to die. If I die, I’ll never be able to see your eyes... I’ll never be able to hear your voice again... Dia’er....”

“Big brother Tian Ya, you’re a man, so you can’t... you can’t cry... we all can’t cry... nothing’s going to happen to you... no matter what happens, I’ll stay with you... my everything belongs to my Tian Ya. If big brother Tian Ya really died... I... I will also die... no one will ever see my eyes again, no one will ever hear my voice...”

.....

“No one will ever see my eyes again, no one will ever hear my voice...”

Ding.....

The sword in Ling Chen’s hand fell to the ground with a gentle ‘ding’.

Sword Emperor: “!?”

At this moment, every player saw that there was something wrong with Ling Tian. They all began to quietly discuss among themselves. Ling Chen raised his head to the sky, and gently let out

a breath.

“Time to finish this.” He dropped his head down, and his eyes became peaceful again. He only said four emotionless words to the Sword Emperor.

Clang!

He did not pick up the sword he dropped on the ground. Rather, one grey and one green light appeared respectively in his left and right hands-they were the Great Ravager and Zephyr Blade. As soon as these two weapons appeared, the crowd began to go crazy... before, Ling Chen had been suppressing the Sword Emperor with just a single Pale White grade sword. Now, he had taken out his two strongest weapons. Could it be that... he wanted to finish this quickly?
Indeed, it was so.

He tightly gripped the Great Ravager and Zephyr Blade, and charged towards the Sword Emperor. However, he did not swing his weapons at all, but rather simply charged incredibly quickly towards the Sword Emperor.

The Sword Emperor flicked her wrist, and sent a wave of illusory swords towards Ling Chen. Ling Chen’s hands finally started to move. He swung the Great Ravager out, not towards the Sword Emperor’s body, but towards the illusory swords.

Bang!!

The Sword Emperor's illusory swords were incredibly fast, and it was extremely difficult to defend against such an attack. However, Ling Chen's Great Ravager had solidly blocked the attack... moreover, blocking it was not the end. The Great Ravager's special attribute was that if he parried an attack or if his attack was parried, there was a certain chance to knock the opponent's weapon flying. It did not specify what the chance was, but it was made clear that the greater the difference between Ling Chen's and his opponent's strength, the greater the chance of the special attribute triggering.

Under Ling Chen's full strength swing, as well as the Great Ravager's incredible weight, the force slammed into the Sword Emperor's hand, causing her body to be knocked back and her sword was sent flying into the distance...

The crowd of spectators yelled out in shock.

The Sword Emperor's lost balance, but Ling Chen did not stop, and instead slashed towards the Sword Emperor's chest with the Zephyr Blade. Ling Chen was able to wield both weapons effectively at the same time without disrupting either hand. After the Great Ravager in his right hand had knocked the Sword Emperor's weapon flying and caused her to lose balance, his left hand immediately followed through with the Zephyr Blade... even if she was a god, she would not be able to dodge this second strike.

Whoosh...

When wielded, the Zephyr Blade carried a breeze with it. The green arc flashed towards the Sword Emperor's body... however,

just as it was about to cut into her, it suddenly stopped.

Time had stopped.

Clang!

The Sword Emperor's sword fell down from the sky, and smashed into the ground. However, no one took any notice of the sword, but rather stared dumbfounded at Ling Chen and the Sword Emperor who both stood unmovingly, as well as the Zephyr Blade that was millimetres away from the Sword Emperor.

"Just then, if I went a bit further, you'd be dead," Ling Chen said, "So, you've lost."

Chapter 210 - Venting (1)

You've lost...

These two words concluded the intense duel, and gave a conclusion that was completely unexpected by everyone present. The Sword Emperor had indeed lost-it was obvious that the Sword Emperor was far inferior to Ling Tian, just based on the thirty moves that Ling Tian had earlier dodged. Afterwards, a single strike from Ling Tian had sent the Sword Emperor's sword flying, and another could have immediately taken the Sword Emperor's life. Although Ling Tian's Zephyr Blade did not touch the Sword Emperor, everyone knew that with the 10,000+ damage he had earlier dealt to the Flame Emperor, the Sword Emperor would have been instantly killed.

The moment Ling Tian swept the Sword Emperor's sword flying and stopped his Zephyr Blade in front of the Sword Emperor's chest, all the spectators stopped breathing, and stared dumbfounded. The players who were close to the action were unceasingly taking photos of this scene that would shake the entirety of China.

The legend of the Sword Emperor had been shattered. This Ling Tian, who had previously been unheard of, and had monopolised all of the top rankings, had defeated the number 1 player on the Heaven Rankings, the invincible Sword Emperor.
Annihilating the Flame Emperor, defeating the Sword Emperor- Ling Tian had consecutively defeated the two strongest players in the Yan Huang Alliance. At this moment, Ling Tian's fame had skyrocketed. Even the incredibly famous and reputable Yan Huang Alliance had become his stepping stone to fame and glory.

“He won… He won!!!!”

Within Heart’s Dream’s small house, Xiao Qi yelled out joyously, and excitedly hugged Su’Er beside her. They jumped up and down cheerfully like a pair of rabbits. Her big brother Ling Tian had really defeated the almighty Sword Emperor. Such a strong person was actually their guildmate, someone who trained with them and gave them many precious equipment. For him to achieve such an accomplishment, it gave them a feeling of boundless pride and joy.

Shui Ruo cupped her cheeks in her hands, her smile like that of a pure and unblemished doll. Yun Meng Xin’s mouth contained a trace of a smile, and her gaze was completely dumbfounded. Mu Bing Yao’s expression grew warmer, and her mouth drew upwards into a smile, gazing at this man who everyone had their attention on… this sort of attention, glory and fame was something that he had always deserved.

Ling Chen withdrew the Zephyr Blade from against the Sword Emperor’s chest. Under his mask, no one could see what sort of expression he had, and what sort of emotions were held in his eyes. He desperately wanted to softly ask, “Is it you?” However, looking at the Sword Emperor standing right in front of him, his lips trembled, and he was not able to make a sound.

Within his field of vision, the Sword Emperor silently turned around. The fury and killing intent that had been radiating out from her immediately disappeared. She walked forward for about three steps, and flicked her wrist, sending a small token flying out towards Long Tian Yun, which he caught.

Guild Creation Token!

She didn't give it directly to Ling Tian, but rather gave it to Long Tian Yun. Afterwards, she disappeared. Perhaps she returned to town, or maybe she had logged off.

The Flame Emperor had died, and the Sword Emperor had been defeated. Neither of Long Tian Yun's guardians were by his side. This time, even with the entire Yan Huang Alliance behind him, Long Tian Yun had been completely upstaged by Ling Tian.

As the Sword Emperor departed, the Plains Region erupted into shouting and cheering.

"Ling Tian! Ling Tian! Ling Tian! Ling Tian! Ling Tian!"

"The Sword Emperor lost! Ling Tian is number 1 on the Heaven Rankings now!"

"I was expecting to see the Sword Emperor dominate Ling Tian-I never thought such an inexplicable thing would happen! Ling Tian's so strong! He beat both the Flame Emperor and the Sword Emperor!"

"Hey, do you guys think Ling Tian, who beat the Sword Emperor like that, could fight on par with Eve?"

“It’s very possible! If our China Region has a player who can fight against Eve, we won’t be laughed at by those Western players anymore! Ling Tian! Ling Tian!”

“Ling Tian! Ling Tian!”

The Plains Region was inundated by shouts of “Ling Tian”, which caused one’s ears to ache. The strong were always worshipped and admired by all-yesterday, when he had challenged the Sword Emperor, he had been ridiculed. The moment he had defeated the Sword Emperor, those mocking laughs had turned into cheers of admiration.

This result had been completely unforeseen by everyone, including the Yan Huang Alliance. No matter how hard he tried, Long Tian Yun could not suppress the dark look on his face as he tightly gripped the Guild Creation Token. He had spent a gigantic fortune in order to purchase it, in order to set alight the fire of the Yan Huang Alliance’s glory. However, what he had been met with was unimaginable humiliation-the token had gone from being the “first” to “second”, and had even been rendered unusable. Now, the Sword Emperor had lost and the Guild Creation Token was going to given to Ling Tian… even if Long Tian Yun wanted to go back on his promise, this was impossible, as he had made the bet with Ling Tian in front of the whole world.

Anyone could imagine how furious and humiliated he felt.

“Heheh, what a spectacular outcome.” Hearing the unceasing shouting and cheering, Yun Feng secretly smiled, and said to himself, “But I just don’t understand why he challenged the Sword

Emperor, and set the Guild Creation Token as stakes... come to think of it, what is his background? Why does he seem to have such deep enmity with Long Tian Yun? It even seems to be incredibly grievous, absolutely irreconcilable...

"What an exciting outcome," Against the Sky said with a laugh, "I bet the misfortunes he's suffered in these past two days have been the biggest he's ever experienced in his whole life, hahaha."

"Indeed. It seems that we need to do some research on this person's background. However, something seems a bit off." Skyfall tapped on his chin, looking at the unmoving Ling Tian, "Before, he was extremely arrogant, even towards the Yan Huang Alliance. Although he definitely could have easily killed the Sword Emperor, he chose not to... and he clearly won, but now he's so silent, completely different to before."

"Perhaps because he doesn't want to push the Yan Huang Alliance to far. After all, the Yan Huang Alliance is still quite powerful. Even if he was ten times as powerful, if he made an enemy of the Yan Huang Alliance, he would still be finished." Against the Sky replied.

Skyfall shook his head, "No, he's already made an enemy of the Yan Huang Alliance. Now, he has two choices-he could join the Yan Huang Alliance, and Long Tian Yun would welcome him with open arms. Otherwise..."

"Be destroyed by the Yan Huang Alliance." Against the Sky finished his sentence. Without enough power, this is the only result. If he doesn't choose to join the Yan Huang Alliance, our

Skyfall Dynasty would be the best place to go."

"Alliance Master Long." At this time, Ling Tian, who had kept silent, finally spoke. As soon as he started to speak, everyone began to quieten down. No one could possibly forget the stakes of the bet Ling Tian and Long Tian Yun had made.

He walked towards Long Tian Yun, stopped about ten steps away, and stretched out his hand, "Your Yan Huang Alliance's Sword Emperor has lost. According to our bet, the Guild Creation Token belongs to me."

Being someone who had been respected and admired since he was young, being spoken to in such a way as the loser of the bet was something that would normally never happen in Long Tian Yun's life, nor would there ordinarily dare to speak to him like this.

However, this was exactly the current reality.

As such, he elegantly smiled-the smile did not seem forced at all.

"To be honest, this result was out of my expectations, because I understand how powerful the Sword Emperor is, and have absolute faith in the Sword Emperor's power," Long Tian Yun casually said, "I was very shocked that the Sword Emperor lost, but I'm also feeling very excited. This is because this means that a player that can defeat the Sword Emperor has appeared in China! This is an extremely joyous occasion for all of China! Our China's strength has once again significantly increased. In the next International Mock Battle, if Ling Tian can represent China, our

country will definitely achieve great results!”

“Yeah!!”

“Well said!!”

Within the crowd, there were many shouts of agreement.

Long Tian Yun did not stop, and passed the Guild Creation Token to Flame Shadow beside him, “Compared to what I just talked about, this Guild Creation Token is a small matter. Ling Tian, since you’ve won, our Yan Huang Alliance will definitely keep its word and give the Guild Creation Token to you.” As he said this, he nodded towards Flame Shadow, who presented the Guild Creation Token to Ling Chen.

“Heh, Long Tian Yun’s ability to control the situation and twist it to his favour is quite outstanding.” Against the Sky said as he coldly laughed.

“Although he’s young, he’s definitely much harder to deal with than those much older than him. It’s true that there are no ordinary people in the Long family.” Skyfall said.

Ling Tian took the Guild Creation Token and put it away. This Guild Creation Token that had costed the Yan Huang Alliance 1 billion gold now belonged to Ling Tian.

“So that matter’s now over. Although we lost a small Guild

Creation Token, we received a joyful surprise, so I'd say it's worth it." Long Tian Yun said smilingly. No one could see any fury or resentment in his expression. He took two steps forwards, and said while looking at Ling Chen in the eyes, "Brother Ling Tian, right now I, Long Tian Yun, have a favour to ask of you. I would like you to invite you to join our Yan Huang Alliance. I guarantee on my surname, 'Long', that you will never regret your decision if you decide to join us."

Chapter 211 - Venting (2)

“I would like you to invite you to join our Yan Huang Alliance. I guarantee on my surname, ‘Long’, that you will never regret your decision if you decide to join us.”

Boom.....

The Plains Region once again erupted into roaring and shouting. After the intense battle, Long Tian Yun had personally invited Ling Tian to join the Yan Huang Alliance in public. This caused everyone to feel incredibly shocked.

Every great power would want to have a player that could defeat the Sword Emperor-including the Yan Huang Alliance.

If Ling Tian joined the Yan Huang Alliance, they would have Ling Tian, the Sword Emperor and the Flame Emperor... it would be like giving wings to a tiger, and they would become absolutely invincible. At the same time, they wouldn’t have really ‘lost’ the Guild Creation Token, and the shamefulness of the Yan Huang Alliance’s Sword Emperor losing to Ling Tian would also disappear... because it would have just been a duel between two parties in the Yan Huang Alliance.

Based on his performance in the duel, if Ling Tian decided to join the Yan Huang Alliance, he would receive the highest treatment. His position would only be inferior to that of Long Tian Yun’s, and so would his fame. He would probably have millions of people under his command. Long Tian Yun even promised that he would

never regret his decision, and staked this on his name.

This was simply an irresistible offer.

After all, on the other hand, if he publicly refused, he would once again damage Long Tian Yun's already shattered pride and dignity. His reward would be the hatred and fury of Long Tian Yun and the entire Yan Huang Alliance. Everyone knew what would be the outcome. With the strength of the Yan Huang Alliance, even if Ling Tian was incredibly powerful, he was still an ant.

As such, to all the spectators, accepting or rejecting was the difference between heaven and hell.

Everyone's attention was once again focused upon Ling Tian, waiting for his answer. If he chose to accept, the Yan Huang Alliance would gain another super expert, and everything that had happened on this day would go from negatively affecting the Yan Huang Alliance to greatly benefiting them. If he refused... he would still be the number 1 on the Heaven Rankings, but his life in the Yan Huang Alliance would become much more difficult. It was even possible that the Yan Huang Alliance would come after him to kill him.

Ling Tian remained silent for a long time. No one could see his expression, but it seemed that he was staring at Long Tian Yun, seriously considering the benefits and costs.

Long Tian Yun's mouth grew wider as he spoke again, "Ling Tian, from your past actions, it seems that you're someone who

treasures freedom, and doesn't like anyone or anything imposing on your freedom. This I can completely understand. With your power, you probably wouldn't be willing to be under anyone either. You can rest assured that if you join the Yan Huang Alliance, you can still maintain your freedom-you can go wherever you want, do what you want to do, and will not be accountable to anyone. Instead, you can use the Yan Huang Alliance's power whenever you want. All that will be required of you will be to appear when the Yan Huang Alliance needs you."

If he joined the Yan Huang Alliance, not only would he keep his freedom, but would be able to use the Yan Huang Alliance's power whenever he wanted. This was an unimaginably good deal. Even the Sword Emperor and Flame Emperor were not treated in such a way. Many players' hearts began to thump loudly. Who could resist a deal like this? Would the Yan Huang Alliance once again gain a super expert?

In the Azure Dragon City, within the small house occupied by Heart's Dream, the girls all began to look worried. The Alliance Master of one of the largest guilds in the world was personally inviting Ling Tian in public with such irresistible conditions. They couldn't help but be anxious that Ling Tian would really join the Yan Huang Alliance. After all, if he joined the Yan Huang Alliance, he would instantly become someone in charge of countless people. However, if he stayed in Heart's Dream, he would receive little to no benefits from this guild that no one had even heard of.

"No way, no way, big brother Ling Tian definitely wouldn't betray us. He'll definitely refuse." Xiao Qi's hands were tightly clasped together, staring at the silent Ling Tian on the screen. His silence meant that there was still a possibility of him accepting.

The longer he stayed silent, the faster her heart thumped.

"Big sister Qi Qi, don't worry, big brother will definitely refuse." Ling Shui Ruo smilingly said as she pulled on Xiao Qi's sleeves.

"I also believe that he'll definitely refuse." Yun Meng Xin said. However, a flash of worry appeared on her face... if he publicly refused, Long Tian Yun's pride would once again take another blow, and he would hate Ling Tian even more... at that time, what could he do? It was the Yan Huang Alliance that he was facing!

"Goddamn! With these sorts of conditions, even I want to join!" Against the Sky frowned, and his face darkened, "If Ling Tian really joined the Yan Huang Alliance, it would be terrible for us!"

"Ling Tian can no longer be considered as simply 'a person'. With his incredible fame and attraction, if he joins the Yan Huang Alliance, we will never be able to fight with them ever again." Skyfall replied.

At this moment, the silent Ling Tian began to speak.

"Haha." A very casual laugh came out of his mouth. No one could tell that behind the mask, within those eyes was a look of wrath and hatred!

Originally, he did not intend to fully become enemies with the Yan Huang Alliance. His goal was to simply anger Long Tian Yun and make him lose some face. It wasn't yet time for him to

completely go against the Yan Huang Alliance.

However, that name, “Heaven’s Edge, Butterfly’s Dance” and the silent Sword Emperor wrapped tightly in her cloak... caused boundless hatred to flow out from within him. His silence earlier was not in contemplation, but rather in an attempt to control his emotions. In the end, he still failed.

The result of his failure was the uncontrollable release of his emotions.

He laughed sinisterly, “Long Tian Yun, the conditions you gave were pretty good. If you asked earlier, I might have really agreed. However...”

“However...” This word caused Long Tian Yun’s face to stiffen, and caused every player to hold their breath. Because this word meant that Ling Tian had refused!

“...There’s someone else who gave me equally good conditions in exchange for me defeating the Sword Emperor and taking away your Guild Creation Token.”

Whoosh—

As soon as Ling Tian said this sentence, the players began to clamour and shout, and Long Tian Yun’s face darkened. From his words, it seemed that Ling Tian was being instructed by someone. The next sentence that came out of his mouth caused everyone to

be greatly shocked.

"At the same time, I was also instructed to take your life!"

As soon as he finished speaking, the Zephyr Blade and Great Ravager appeared in his hand. Like a bolt of lightning, he charged towards Long Tian Yun who was about ten steps away.

"Ahh!!" Within Heart's Dream's small room, the girls left out a cry of dismay... he, he actually wanted to kill Long Tian Yun! He wanted to kill the man with the most influence in the entire virtual world!

"Holy crap! Is he crazy?!!" Yun Feng's eyes widened as he shouted out loud.

Compared to when he had defeated the Sword Emperor, this scene was much more unbelievable to the spectators. Ling Tian actually wanted to kill Long Tian Yun, the one person no one would even dare to anger!

"Protect the Alliance Master!!"

"Stop him!"

However, Ling Chen's rage exploded, and he let out his full strength. This shield formation that could only stop normal players, how could it block him?

“Piss off!!”

He yelled as a “Ling Tian Burst” flew out from the Great Ravager in his right hand, and five Shield bearers were sent flying. This caused a large gap to appear in the shield formation. Through this gap, he saw the glow of a scroll, and Long Tian Yun subsequently disappeared.

Ling Chen frowned. He was about ten steps away from Long Tian Yun, and his attacks were enough to force Long Tian Yun into combat mode. This meant that he would not have been able to use a teleport scroll that allowed him to return to town. Thus, what he used was probably a scroll that could allow him to teleport somewhere not too far away while in combat mode.

Immediately after, a flash of light shone out, and Long Tian Yun appeared 20 metres away within a group of players!

So it was a scroll that allowed him to short-range teleport while in combat mode! It wasn’t too strange that Long Tian Yun had such an item-after all, the Yan Huang Alliance was quite large and had abundant resources.

From when Ling Chen had attacked, to the formation of the shield formation then Long Tian Yun teleporting, only a few seconds had passed. Most players had only just realised what was happening, and began to shout and yell in disbelief. Countless players charged out from the gigantic crowd towards Ling Chen.

These were all members of the Yan Huang Alliance who were hiding within the crowd. Seeing that Ling Tian wanted to kill their Alliance Master, they couldn't stand by and do nothing.

"The Yan Huang Alliance has all come out, it's impossible for Ling Tian to kill Long Tian Yun! Immediately order people to help Ling Tian escape, but don't let the Yan Huang Alliance know it was us. In public, we still have to maintain good relations with them. In future, we'll reveal this favour to Ling Tian, which will benefit us greatly!" Within the chaos, Skyfall quickly said to Against the Sky, who immediately nodded.

Ling Chen's attack towards Long Tian Yun was like the flame that sparked a massive explosion. Countless members of the Yan Huang Alliance flooded out, surrounding him. Countless shields, spears, swords, axes surrounded him, and countless elemental attacks and arrows were all locked on to him.

In just a moment, he had been completely surrounded by hundreds of people.

Ling Chen ignored everything around him, and his hate-filled gaze was directed at Long Tian Yun, who was about 20 metres away.

Seeing as I want to kill you, not even god can keep you alive today!

Ling Chen was not fazed at all by the encirclement, and did not have any plans of retreat. Instead, this caused him to become even

more furious. He charged towards where Long Tian Yun was, and waved both hands outwards.

Whoosh!

Bang!!

Two Ling Tian Bursts came out of his weapons, and instantly annihilated all the players around him. At this moment, countless arrows and elemental attacks flew at him from all directions... no matter where he went, he would definitely be hit. Ling Chen continued to press forward, as if he didn't see the attacks, then jumped up. He activated 'Moon Shadow' , and froze everything around him. A white light flashed and the Soaring Cloud Spear replaced the Zephyr Blade in his left hand.

The distance between Long Tian Yun and himself was now only around 15 metres. However, there were numerous Shield bearers gathered around Long Tian Yun, forming an impenetrable wall. With circles upon circles of Shield bearers surrounding him, it was almost impossible to even get near.

Ling Chen coldly laughed, and threw the spear towards Long Tian Yun. The Soaring Cloud spear shot out from his hand like a silver meteor.

Bang!

Bang!

Bang!

Bang!

Bang!

One, two, three, four, seven, ten, thirteen, sixteen, twenty one...

The silver meteor pierced through twenty one Shield bearers and their shields, and then finally pierced through Long Tian Yun's chest, nailing him to the ground.

Ling Chen's lips curved upwards. He had finally been able to release some of the anger stored up within him.

If I want you dead before dawn, no one can keep you alive to see the sun rise!

Chapter 212 - Nightmarish Light

Ling Chen was now LV18, and Moon Shadow's effects covered an area of 18 metres. Within this area, apart from Ling Chen, everything else was frozen in place. As such, when Moon Shadow's light burst forth, everyone saw an incredibly strange scene. Within the area around Ling Chen, every person stood unmoving, and all attacks, including arrows and elemental attacks also froze in the air... it was as if time had stopped. Moreover, anyone who entered into that area would become frozen as well.

The only one who could move was Ling Chen. Everyone could only watch as he jumped up, raised his hand and threw the silver spear, which eventually nailed Long Tian Yun to the ground. Because Long Tian Yun was also within the AOE of Moon Shadow, he remained upright, and no damage figure arose above him.

What sort of skill was this?!

To be able to freeze everything around him... if he used this skill against the Sword Emperor, then it would have only taken 1 second to defeat the Sword Emperor!

Ling Chen moved towards Long Tian Yun in the last seconds of the effect of Moon Shadow, moving past the attacks that were locked onto him and the players that were about to attack him. In the last second, he stood in front of Long Tian Yun, stretched out his hand and retrieved the Soaring Cloud spear.

"How can I let my Soaring Cloud fall into your hands!" Ling Chen

derisively said as he looked at Long Tian Yun.

At this moment, the effects of Moon Shadow expired. A gigantic damage figure rose up above Long Tian Yun, whose eyes widened. Under the gaze of countless players, he fell to the ground.

Long Tian Yun, the highest authority in the Yan Huang Alliance, which had the greatest fame and reputation in China, had been killed by a single Ling Chen despite being surrounded by countless Yan Huang Alliance guild members.

This was the first time Long Tian Yun had ever died in the virtual world. This death meant that from this day onwards, he would be lifelong enemies with Ling Tian.

“The Alliance Master… The Alliance Master died!!”

“The Alliance Master… was killed…”

“Kill… Immediately kill Ling Tian!!”

……

The players quickly fell into confusion, and all members of the Yan Huang Alliance were completely furious. Ling Tian had annihilated the Flame Emperor, defeated the Sword Emperor, and killed Long Tian Yun despite the fact that he was so heavily protected… moreover, this was all carried out by himself without anyone helping him. This one person had completely destroyed the

dignity of the Yan Huang Alliance. Some of the Yan Huang Alliance guild members were furiously shouting to kill Ling Tian. This was what they had to do, as well as the only thing they could do to retrieve a bit of honour.

Within Heart's Dream's small room, the excited atmosphere had become one of dismay and fear. The girls' faces had all become pale... none of them expected that Ling Tian would actually kill Long Tian Yun. However, right now this was not important-Ling Tian was currently surrounded by more and more Yan Huang Alliance members, all of whom were intent on killing him. The girls' hearts were beating so hard that they threatened to explode-with so many people around him, Ling Tian definitely wouldn't be able to escape... this was exchanging his life for Long Tian Yun's life!

Only Mu Bing Yao remained completely calm. Looking at the colossal group of players around Ling Tian, she softly gave a cold harrumph, "You want to kill my lord? You don't have the right..."

The entire Plains Region was in uproar. Killing the Alliance Master of the Yan Huang Alliance was equivalent to killing an Emperor in the olden days. The entire Yan Huang Alliance was now in movement, and there were now thousands of people charging at Ling Tian furiously. Even a god would not be able to escape.

Ling Chen slightly frowned, and he coldly harrumphed, and sprang into action. He charged into the group of players charging towards him, but because he was too fast and his action was too sudden, they were unable to react in time. As soon as he entered

into the crowd, the players began to fall like leaves.

Bang bang bang bang bang bang bang bang...

From the left and right, two Ling Tian Bursts were sent out... in such a dense crowd, the Ling Tian Bursts' effects were fully displayed. A grey arc of light and a green arc of light flew out, and instantly wiped out twenty or so players... Ling Chen's attacks would never result in a 'miss'. Coming into contact with Ling Tian's attacks was an instant death sentence-there were no exceptions. Those who were slashed by the Zephyr Blade immediately fell to the ground, and those who the Great Ravager came into contact with were sent flying, crashing into the players behind them. Ling Chen's actions did not stop at all, and continuously attacked within the group of players while quickly moving around. As such, the archers and Mages were unable to lock onto his position. Every time he changed his position, two gigantic arcs of light would be sent out, resulting in pitiful cries as players died.

In a one vs many fight, the worst thing that could happen was being surrounded. This was because once one was surrounded, it would be difficult to defend from both the front and back. However, Ling Chen was different, as he could use two weapons at the same time. Thus, he could attack in front and behind him at the same time. Every time he released a Ling Tian Burst, he would clear out the area within 5 metres of him. By the time the next wave of players filled this area, his next Ling Tian Burst would be there to meet them. Thus, those who came too near to him would instantly die, without even a chance to attack him. It was simply a massacre.

Swish! Swish! Bang! Boom…

The sounds of people being continuously hit and sent flying rang out, accompanied by the cries of people as they died. Ling Chen's two weapons were like two Deathgod's scythes, mercilessly killing waves and waves of players.

Swish swish swish swish swish swish…

A large wave of arrows descended towards Ling Chen like a downpour of rain, covering the entire area around him. Similarly, countless elemental abilities rained down on the area around him.

As the arrows and elemental attacks descended from above, Ling Chen did not panic, but rather continued to slaughter the Yan Huang Alliance's players with his Ling Tian Bursts. When the arrows and elemental attacks finally fell on where he was, the spectating players all cried out in shock, as if they had already seen Ling Tian fall to the ground… However, they saw Ling Tian's body almost become illusory, and his speed skyrocketed as he charged towards the players behind him. In the blink of an eye, he had escaped from the area that the arrows and elemental attacks were falling towards. Raising his two weapons, he once again began to slaughter.

-152, -308.

Above Ling Tian's head, people only saw two damage figures.

In such a dense attack, Ling Tian was only hit twice! The spectators simply could not believe their eyes... how had he done this? Could it be that just then, his body really had become illusory!?

“He’s simply a monster!!” Against the Sky’s eyes twitched. Evidently, he was very shocked by this sight. Right now, the Yan Huang Alliance was determined to kill him. Although there were probably thousands of people attacking him, he still had not died, and there were countless bodies of the Yan Huang Alliance on the ground.

“Indeed, he’s even more terrifying than a monster. This sort of performance can’t be achieved by just relying on levels or good equipment. However, he has his limits. Being blocked like this, it’s impossible for him to escape, and I doubt he can last for too long. See if you can create an opening for him and get a favour. He will remember this.” Skyfall said.

“Mmm, I’ve already given out the orders. Right now, our players have more or less finished preparing.”

Ling Chen was like a sharp blade, stabbing in and out of the crowd of Yan Huang Alliance players. In just a moment, he had charged into the group of Mages that posed the greatest threat to him. Having come into such close proximity with Ling Chen, these fragile Mages were like defenceless lambs, and were annihilated by Ling Chen with two Ling Tian Bursts... at this moment, in the distance, the light of a scroll flashed, and Long Tian Yun, who had been lying on the ground, slowly stood up.

The revival scroll that Long Tian Yun had been preparing to use to revive Ling Tian after the Sword Emperor killed him was instead used on himself. Although Long Tian Yun had revived, he was still incredibly furious, to the point that his eyes became red. He personally ordered all of the Yan Huang Alliance's players, "Kill Ling Tian, he must die!!"

However, just as his words came out, a player somewhere else called out, "I can't watch this anymore. So many people attacking just a single person, this is too shameless! Ling Tian, I'll help you!"

This one sentence caused many other players to roar in approval, and a large group of players wearing different clothing and equipment charged towards the group of Yan Huang Alliance players attacking Ling Tian... however, it was evident from the actions of the new group of players that they were a group of people working together from the beginning!

"Hmph! Looking to die!" Seeing the group of players charging towards the Yan Huang Alliance's players, Long Tian Yun's expression became incredibly unsightly.

The group of players coming to Ling Tian's assistance was surprisingly large, and there were more and more joining them, creating great pressure for the Yan Huang Alliance. Ling Tian did not pay much attention to them at all-his gaze was directed at the revived Long Tian Yun.

He actually... dared to revive!!

Hahaha...

Ling Chen coldly laughed, and raised his right hand. The Lunar Scourge released an intense silver light.

Flash!!

“Arghhh!!!!!!”

Countless voices cried out in agony. A terrifying bright light had cut into their eyes, painfully blinding them. No matter what they did, they were unable to get rid of the pain or open their eyes. The players in the distance were not affected, but the intense silver light caused them to look away, not daring to look in that direction. Within 36 metres around Ling Tian, the entire area was covered by the silver light... inside that area, nothing could be seen except the intense light. From a distance, it looked like a silver sun had appeared.

“Protect the Alliance Master!!”

“Don’t panic! No one panic! Immediately kill Ling Tian!!”

It was painful to even slightly open their eyes, so they could only scream and yell as they stumbled around covering their eyes. They had no idea who they were attacking, and could not see at all.

After 5 seconds, the silver light disappeared.

Inside the area covered by the silver light, there were countless bodies strewn on the ground. Some of them were killed by Ling Tian; others were killed by their fellow guildmates in the confusion. By the time the nightmarish light had disappeared, they could not see Ling Tian anymore.

“Bastard!!” Flame Shadow gnashed his teeth. The light from before was definitely released by Ling Tian. Why did he have such a terrifying skill?! He yelled loudly, “In such a short period of time, Ling Tian can’t have escaped too far away. He definitely changed the equipment he’s wearing and is hiding in the crowd. Immediately find him for me! Young master, should we… young… young… master!!”

He suddenly discovered that his young master was no longer beside him. Flame Shadow trembled as he looked down, and found that Long Tian Yun’s body was lying beside his feet.

Chapter 213 - The Curtain Falls

After the nightmarish light had disappeared, Ling Tian was nowhere to be seen, and the revived Long Tian Yun once again lay dead on the ground.

This time, the Yan Huang Alliance did not have any more revival scrolls to revive Long Tian Yun with.

Flame Shadow gnashed his teeth, his entire body trembling. At the same time, he felt an unimaginable fear well up within him... annihilating the Flame Emperor, defeating the Sword Emperor, and killing the Alliance Master twice! And he had even been able to escape!

Being surrounded by thousands of Yan Huang Alliance players, he had been able to kill Long Tian Yun not once, but twice, and was even able to safely escape!!

No one had ever been able to pull of such a feat before... and prior to today, no one would even believe such a thing was possible.

Was this Ling Tian even human!?

Being enemies with such a person... the Yan Huang Alliance could not be intimidated by any person or any power, but yet when it came to Ling Tian...

“Immediately find me Ling Tian, he’s definitely in the crowd

somewhere!”

Despite Flame Shadow yelling out in a loud voice, everyone could hear a sense of powerlessness in his voice. The Flame Emperor had been killed, the Sword Emperor had been defeated, and Long Tian Yun had been killed twice... after today, Ling Tian’s name would resound like thunder throughout the entirety of China. As for the Yan Huang Alliance, it had been reduced to a stepping stone for Ling Tian, having been completely defeated by him.

There were countless players gathered at the Plains Region. Ling Tian, who was probably hiding within the crowd, had definitely already changed the equipment he had on, and his mask was a very commonly used one. Finding him in such a large crowd was like trying to find a needle in a haystack. Moreover, with his power, how could he be found so easily?

Just as the Yan Huang Alliance began their search for Ling Tian, players began to quickly leave. Soon, more and more players were beginning to leave in different directions. There were simply too many people leaving, and even with thousands of people present, it was impossible for the Yan Huang Alliance to stop everyone. They could only watch as masses of people departed... it was almost impossible to find Ling Tian in such conditions.

In the end, they could only cut their losses and collect the items and equipment that the players who had died had dropped. From yesterday to today, the Yan Huang Alliance’s dignity and reputation had plummeted, and this was the first time the guild members of the Yan Huang Alliance had felt so ashamed to be part of it.

There were still some people remaining who were looking around to see if Ling Tian would reappear, in hope that they would see this legendary figure again.

“Why did he kill Long Tian Yun... he shouldn’t have done this.” Yun Feng’s mind was a complete mess. Yesterday, Ling Tian had directly confessed that it was him who had defrauded Long Tian Yun, but he said that he wouldn’t make an enemy of Long Tian Yun. However, what he did just then was in complete contradiction to his words from yesterday. Having killed Long Tian Yun, Long Tian Yun would definitely hate him to the bones, and would use the full force of the Yan Huang Alliance to completely crush him!

“Do you know him?” Beside him, Xiao Qiu Feng suddenly asked.

“Err... no, no I don’t.” Yun Feng quickly shook his head.

“You don’t?” Xiao Qiu Feng gave a slight harrumph, “I heard Qi Qi say that it was you who recruited Ling Tian into Heart’s Dream.”

A trail of cold sweat rolled down Yun Feng’s forehead. If this was known by Long Tian Yun, it would be easy for him to discover Ling Tian’s identity through Yun Feng, which would be disastrous. Yun Feng gritted his teeth, and desperately tried to think of an excuse or explanation. However, Xiao Qiu Feng had already turned to leave, and a cold voice entered Yun Feng’s ears, “Don’t worry, I won’t tell anyone. However, if it’s possible, I’d like to get to know

this Ling Tian. Annihilating the Flame Emperor, defeating the Sword Emperor and disrespecting Long Tian Yun to such a degree, then escaping so easily… he's a true man."

Yun Feng let out a breath of relief. Hearing Xiao Qiu Feng say such a thing, he could be at ease.

Before, he didn't think that there was such great enmity between Ling Chen and Long Tian Yun. It seemed that he would have to be more careful from now on-any evidence of a connection between Ling Chen and himself had to be covered up… otherwise, there would be great trouble for himself, Meng Xin, as well as any other of Ling Chen's friends.

Yun Feng was very curious as to what caused Ling Chen to hate Long Tian Yun so much.

There weren't any people around where he was, so he turned on his communication device and contacted Ling Chen, asking in a low voice, "Ling Tian, are you alright?"

"En." Ling Chen calmly replied.

"Why did you kill Long Tian Yun? Didn't you think of the consequences? The Yan Huang Alliance is much more powerful than you think, and didn't you say yesterday…"

"I let my emotions get the better of me," Ling Chen bitterly laughed, "Although I completely and utterly hate him, I was too

rash. However, I don't regret it at all. Since I've already started this, in future, whenever I see him, I'll kill him. As for consequences, I'm not too worried-I'm not afraid of their revenge.

Yun Feng was shocked, "You..."

"Yun Feng, you saved Shui Ruo, so I will definitely accomplish what I promised you. Moreover, I won't bring any trouble to your Yun family, and especially not Meng Xin. Don't worry." Ling Chen replied.

Yun Feng was silent for a while, then shook his head and sighed, "Ling Tian, the things you did today made me feel shocked, confused, but also excited. You're a true hero, a real man. Heh, no less than what's expected of someone who I saw once then spent three years looking for. Whatever is the result, I'll stand by your side. You don't have to worry about Meng Xin and myself too much-Long Tian Yun doesn't dare to casually offend our Yun family. After all, this is a personal grievance between Long Tian Yun and you. Even if Long Tian Yun knew of our connection with you, he wouldn't be able to do anything to us. The one I'm worried about is you... you and Shui Ruo need to be careful, and don't let them find out anything about you."

"Don't worry, there won't be any problem with our safety. Long Tian Yun better pray that he doesn't find out anything about us." This sentence was completely incomprehensible to Yun Feng.

"I'm a bit tired, we'll talk of other things tomorrow."

After Ling Chen hung up his communication device, Yun Feng raised his head and looked at the empty plains around him, and quietly said, “Ling Chen, just who are you exactly…”

……

“Big news! A new number 1 of the Heaven Rankings has appeared! The number 1 on the Level Rankings, Fame Rankings, Equipment Rankings, Pet Rankings, Ling Tian, shas defeated the Sword Emperor, and has become number 1 on the Heaven Rankings!”

“Selling Ling Tian vs Sword Emperor video! HD, no mosaic, super close up action. Priceless!”

“Buying any method to contact Ling Tian personally… I’m willing to pay a high price! I want to ask Ling Tian to be my bro!”

“Annihilating the Flame Emperor, defeating the Sword Emperor and killing Long Tian Yun twice, then fighting the entire Yan Huang Alliance! What is the true identity of this Ling Tian person? Is he some sort of hidden expert? A descendent of a legendary martial arts or ESP family? Or a creation of god…?”

“Rumour says that after going back, Alliance Master Long started to vomit up blood, and vowed to cut Ling Tian into a thousand pieces. Within three days, he’s going to issue a permanent order to continuously kill Ling Tian. If his real life identity is found, then… heheh.”

.....

The events that had occurred at the Plains Region caused great waves to be sent throughout all of China, which certainly would not die down within a short period of time The first time the name “Ling Tian” had appeared, it hung far above normal players, but now, it surpassed even the Sword Emperor, and stood at the very peak of the mountain of players. Moreover, the tales of Ling Tian became more and more exaggerated, until he was told of as an existence comparable to even Eve.

The entire world was in uproar because of him, but at the moment he himself sat in silence.

Ling Chen silently sat against a large tree, deep in thought. The equipment he currently had equipped were extremely plain, and he had changed his mask. Even if someone passed in front of him, they would not be able to recognise him as Ling Tian.

“Big brother, where are you?”

Shui Ruo’s worried voice caused Ling Chen to open his eyes. He gently replied, “I’m at the boundary of Peace Town.”

“We’re coming over now, wait for us!”

Ling Chen raised his head, and once again closed his eyes. Him killing Long Tian Yun probably made all of the girls extremely worried. After all, with the Yan Huang Alliance’s power, if he

wasn't strong enough, he would never be able to appear in public again.

A short while later, a black shadow soundlessly appeared, and knelt down in front of Ling Chen.

Ling Chen did not open his eyes, but said in a low voice, "I was too rash just then."

The black shadow stayed silent.

"However, the original plan does not change."

"Roger."

"Before, who were the ones that had helped me?" Ling Chen asked.

"Skyfall Dynasty." The black shadow curtly replied.

"I thought so," Ling Chen gave a calm laugh, "Only they would dare to take such a risk to help me in such circumstances. They wanted me to owe them a favour, but it's a pity that I'm going to give them a big gift. Not that I think about it, I feel a bit bad."

"No need."

“……”

“Of course there’s no need,” Ling Chen once again laughed, but his expression then became serious, “The reason I called you here was to ask you how much you know about the Sword Emperor.”

The black shadow thought for a while, then replied, “Sword Emperor’s real name is Feng Xie Yu, with an unknown history. The Sword Emperor only appears in the virtual world, and lives in secrecy in the real world. We have not paid much attention to the Sword Emperor before.”

“That’s all you have?”

“Yes.”

“...Do you remember, six years ago I asked you all to look for information about Xuanyuan Dia Wu?”

“……”

“Go and investigate what’s the connection between the Sword Emperor and Xuanyuan Dia Wu.”

The black shadow remained in silence for a while, then nodded and prepared to leave.

“Wait!”

Ling Chen suddenly called to stop him. His chest rose up, and his face slightly twisted in pain and indecision. After a long pause, he said in a low voice, “Forget it, there’s no need to look into it. Thirteen years ago, Xuanyuan Dia Wu already… already died. The Sword Emperor is Feng Xie Yu, not Dia Wu… not Dia Wu… right now, I only have Shui Ruo.”

Once again the black shadow did not respond.

The black shadow turned, and silently left. At this moment, he completely understood why Ling Chen had zoned out during the fight with the Sword Emperor, as well as why he was so determined to kill Long Tian Yun afterwards… He definitely would not forget what happened six years ago, when Ling Chen had found out that Xuanyuan Dia Wu had already fasted to death. Ling Chen’s emotions had completely run out of control, and the hellish pain had caused him tears to flow out in grief.

That Sword Emperor, could it be…

Xuanyuan Dia Wu…

Dia’Er…

Is it really you…

My Dia’Er…

My wife…

Chapter 214 - Tian Ya And Dia Wu (1)

Xuanyuan Dia Wu……

Dia Wu…

Ling Chen vigorously shook his head, but he was unable to get rid of this name, as well as that angelic face from his mind. He forced himself to believe that she had already died thirteen years ago; forced himself to believe that she couldn't possibly have any connection with the Sword Emperor; repeatedly told himself that he would only be with Shui Ruo in this life.

However…

How could he forget… how could he just lie to himself like that.

Because that person was someone who he had been willing to protect with his life…

Dia'Er, is it really you…

Why do I so desperately hope that it is you, yet at the same time hope that it isn't? If it isn't you, my heart will be shattered again; if it is… what should I do?

He heavily leaned back against the tree, his heart in shambles. Leng'Er, hugging a doll, appeared at his side, curiously looking at

him.

“Master, Leng’Er, wants to hear Master… tell a story.”

With one hand, Leng’Er hugged her doll, and used the other hand to pat Ling Chen’s shoulder. Her soft, gentle voice broke the silence that hung over the area.

Ling Chen gave a slight smile, and replied, “Master is a bit tired today, so I’ll tell Leng’Er a story tomorrow. Here, this doll is for you.”

He took out a doll and gave it to her, causing her to become extremely delighted.

Not too long after, five familiar silhouettes appeared, walking towards Ling Chen. The appearance of these people caused Leng’Er to hurriedly return to the Pet Dimension.

“Big brother.”

As soon as she arrived, Shui Ruo was able to sense that Ling Chen’s spirits were quite low. Her emotions also plummeted, and she walked over to him and sat down.

“Big brother Ling Tian, are you alright? Did you know? You were so, so cool and awesome today!” Xiao Qi loudly said.

“Is that so?” Ling Chen smiled, and held Shui Ruo’s small hands. He looked to Yun Meng Xin and said, “Meng Xin, I lost control and ended up killing Long Tian Yun.”

“Don’t worry,” Yun Meng Xin gently shook her head, “You have the freedom to do whatever you want. We’re all guildmates, so we don’t want to burden you or inhibit your freedom. As long as you’re okay, that’s fine.”

“That’s right, that’s right!” Xiao Qi vigorously nodded her head, “I know that big brother Ling Tian must be worried that Long Tian Yun might take revenge on us because of our connection to you. Hehe, don’t worry! Even if he knows that we’re guildmates, he can’t do anything to us. I’m the princess of the Battle Alliance, so I’m not afraid of him at all. Su’Er’s dad is the Mayor of Beijing, and Su’Er’s uncle is also quite influential as well. Plus, he’s after big sister Meng Xin, so he won’t do anything to her, and big sister Bing Yao is so strong that she doesn’t have to be afraid of him at all. Even if he tortured us, we wouldn’t tell him your true identity… because we don’t even know. So, big brother Ling Tian just has to look after himself. You don’t have to worry about us at all.”

“Big brother Ling Tian, please take care of yourself.” Su’Er said in a nervous voice while blushing.

A warm feeling spread throughout Ling Chen’s heart, and his gaze rested on each of the three girls’ faces. He smiled, and replied, “Don’t worry, I’ll definitely protect myself. Unless I permit it, Long Tian Yun can do nothing to me.”

“En! We all believe big brother Ling Tian… big brother Ling

Tian, did you know? You were so cool today! So cool that you just can't describe it! Right now the whole world is talking about you. Wherever we go, people are always talking about you. Right now, big brother Ling Tian has become the idol of the entire country!"

"Really?" Ling Chen amusedly laughed.

"Now that you're number 1 on the Heaven Rankings, more and more people will be paying attention to you. No matter where you go, you'll always see things about you. The waves you've created will last for quite a long time, as the things you did today were probably the most exciting things that have happened in a long time. Moreover, you've also raised quite a bit of attention in other countries as well." Yun Meng Xin said.

"Haha, people will soon forget about this sort of thing after a while, don't pay too much attention to it." Ling Chen calmly and casually replied.

"Then, big brother Ling Tian, can you fulfil a small, small wish of ours?" Xiao Qi clasped her hands together, her body leaning towards, looking at Ling Chen with a sparkle in her eyes.

Ling Chen was a bit shocked, "A small, small wish?"

The ever-energetic and playful Xiao Qi suddenly seemed to be a bit bashful and nervous. She battered her eyelashes, and said anxiously, "Right now, we've all known big brother Ling Tian for a while, but none of us have seen your face before. Can we see what the big brother who we think is so cool, so strong, looks like?"

After speaking, Xiao Qi once again stared into his eyes. Although they had all known each other for quite a while now, they had never seen what Ling Chen really looked like. The more time passed by, the more their curiosity grew.

Ling Chen's hand moved to his mask, and stopped there. As the girls' hearts sped up, he put down his hand, and gently shook his head, "I'm afraid that if I take off my mask, everyone will be disappointed... I think I'll let you all keep whatever images you have in your head, haha."

"No way, no way, we definitely won't be disappointed!" Xiao Qi almost began to jump up and down, "Big brother Ling Tian is so strong, he's definitely.... Definitely very handsome!"

Ling Chen continued to shake his head, "For this period of time, I'm going to be getting my emotions back in control. When the time comes, I'll show you all my face."
"But..."

Xiao Qi wasn't willing to give up so easily, but just as she began to speak, she was cut off by Meng Xin, "That's alright, we believe that it won't be too far away. Ling Tian, you seem quite down, did something happen?"

"I remembered some blissful, yet also painful memories." Ling Chen held Shui Ruo's hand as he stood up, and sighed, "It doesn't matter though, people always have times when they're down. I'll be fine in a bit. I'm a bit tired today, so Shui Ruo and I are going to

log off. We'll see you tomorrow."

"En." Yun Meng Xin nodded.

After he exited the Mystic Moon world, Ling Chen opened his eyes, and looked at the white ceiling, his emotions in disarray. No matter if he opened his eyes or closed his eyes, what he saw and thought of was inevitably the Sword Emperor, completely wrapped up in her black cloak.

"Big brother... what made you... so upset?"

Beside him, Shui Ruo lay on the bed, listening to his irregular heartbeat. When she was sick, she knew that Ling Chen had never been truly happy. After her recovery, both of them had been extremely joyful every day... however, something had caused Ling Chen's emotions to spin out of control.

"Shui Ruo, I... I..." Ling Chen started to speak, but had no idea how to say it to Shui Ruo.

"Big brother, if there's anything that makes you feel down, please tell me, alright? That way, I can help big brother forget about those things." Ling Shui Ruo reached over and hugged him, gently whispering into his ear.

As such, he decided to tell everything to this girl who was even more important to him than his life.

The room quietened down, and the only thing that could be heard were both of them breathing gently. After a long while, Ling Chen put his arm around Shui Ruo and looked up at the ceiling as he slowly said, “Ruo Ruo, I’ll tell you a story… it’s a story that happened a long time ago, before I met Ruo Ruo.”

Shui Ruo did not reply, instead gently nodding and moving closer to Ling Chen.

Ling Chen closed his eyes, and cast his mind back to the memories that were sealed deep in his brain…

“In a very powerful, very influential family, a boy was born in the wrong place at the wrong time. The year he was born, his mother had died. Before his mother died, she had given him the name ‘Tian Ya’ [TLN: Heaven’s Edge], because she could see his future… he belonged at the edges of heaven, the boundaries of the sea [TLN: meaning he should be free], as opposed to a powerful family. At that time, Tian Ya didn’t understand the meaning of the name his mother had given him, and continued to live in that family. His status in that family was very special. No one was willing to speak to him or even come into contact with him. Everyone would look at him strangely, but would not neglect him by letting him starve or freeze. Just like this, the boy called Tian Ya grew up in loneliness and solitude.”

“That family was extremely large, and every day there would be many people coming and going. Some were other families allied with his family, others were families that were there to protect his family. In one of these families, Tian Ya met a girl who was about his age. She belonged to one of the strongest families that

protected his family. It was a pity that the family she belonged to only valued boys, and she was often neglected and bullied. However, that girl was incredibly cute and kind. They met when Tian Ya was five. She smiled at him, then shared a large pile of candy with him."

"Tian Ya, who had always lived in loneliness, began to unceasingly think of that girl. Afterwards, he found out that she was called Dia Wu (Butterfly's Dance), and that they were born in the same year, same month and same date... this sort of coincidence was as if the heavens had caused them to meet by fate."

"Afterwards, when she was being bullied by some other kids, the boy rushed up and fought with them. He was not very strong, but he was incredibly vicious. In order to protect and stand up for Dia Wu, he was beaten very severely, but also injured the other kids quite a bit as well... from the onwards, whenever someone would try to bully Dia Wu, he would charge over like a rabid wolf... for her, his body was always covered in many bruises. Although it was very painful, he did not regret it at all. For him, who had been accustomed to living in loneliness, that girl's smile was incredibly beautiful, and completely moved him."

"When they were six, Dia Wu pulled him to the garden. Under a tree, she gave him a cake that had a few flowers and leaves on it, and wished him a 'happy birthday'. That day, they had celebrated their birthdays together. It was the first time Tian Ya had ever celebrated his birthday, because before then, no one even remembered his birthday. Even he had forgotten that it was his own birthday. On that day, Tian Ya cried. Initially Dia Wu laughed at him, saying that boys shouldn't cry, but soon, she began to cry

with him as well... at that time, Dia Wu probably had no idea what that cake, covered with flowers and leaves, and that ‘happy birthday’ meant to Tian Ya...”

Chapter 215 - Tian Ya And Dia Wu (2)

“Tian Ya continued to live in solitude as he grew up. However, as time passed, people began to avoid him more and more. They were unwilling to even go near him, as if he had some kind of disease. There, he felt that his life was completely meaningless, and that there was no point to his existence. In that sort of environment, he had matured quite quickly. However, after being together with Dia Wu, his entire life changed.”

“From the time they were six years old, they were together nearly every day, and had innumerable things to talk about. Dia Wu was his teacher-by the time she was six, she was able to read and write more than one thousand words, and had a decent mathematical knowledge. When they were together, she would carefully and patiently teach Tian Ya... Tian Ya had never been to school before, but he could not be considered uneducated. This was because he had a very good teacher, who was Dia Wu. No matter what Dia Wu taught him, he would learn it extremely quickly, and would not forget any of it. As Dia Wu learnt more and more herself, she taught Tian Ya more and more. At that time, although Dia Wu’s family didn’t really care about her, they were unwilling to see her together with Tian Ya, so they tried to stop her and rebuked her. Even though Dia Wu was a gentle and kind girl, deep down she could be quite stubborn too. She, who had always been obedient, refused to comply this time... her family also talked to Tian Ya many times, and warned him to stay away from Dia Wu... one of Dia Wu’s older brothers even mockingly called Tian Ya scum, and said that he should have been kicked out long ago... he said many humiliating things, but Tian Ya endured it all. This was because Dia Wu’s older brother was ten or so years old at that time, and was quite strong. Tian Ya knew that he definitely wouldn’t be able to beat him in a fight, and he didn’t

want to risk not being able to meet Dia Wu anymore... Although Dia Wu's brother relentlessly mocked Tian Ya, because of Tian Ya's special status, he did not dare to physically attack him..."

"Perhaps it was because Dia Wu was incredibly stubborn, or perhaps she was like Tian Ya, and saw him as he saw her, as the most important person in her life. Finally, her family relented... as long as she practiced her sword skills for 6 hours every day, the rest of the day she could have as her free time. That family was one that specialised in swords, and was an ancient, secretive martial arts family."

"Dia Wu agreed... she, who had never touched a sword before, and was unwilling to even come into contact with such a thing that could take away lives, bitterly trained. Every day, after she finished her practice, she would go to find Tian Ya, and teach him everything she knew. Whenever she learnt a new sword skill, she would show it to him. She once said that she would practice hard, so that she could become as strong as her father and her big brother, so that when she grew up she could protect Tian Ya."

"Everything she taught him, every single word she said to him, as well as every sword skill she showed him, Tian Ya remembered it all in his heart. They even began to create their own sword skills that were fun and looked nice. Although the time they had together had been reduced, they were still quite satisfied and happy. Although they were both still quite young, they had already understood what mutual dependence meant."

Ling Shui Ruo silently listened, and did not say anything that would distract Ling Chen. After all, she knew nothing about his

past, but every time she had asked him, he would say that he had forgotten everything. As such, she decided not to ask anymore. If the things from the past were that painful, she would prefer that he did not have to think of those things again. However, deep in her heart, she wanted to completely understand him and his past. No matter what had happened, she would help him through it and heal his wounds, and gradually help him forget about it.

"Dia Wu's talent with swords was simply outstanding. She, who had always been neglected, was now revered as a genius, and was greatly favoured by her family. At the same time, they also began to gradually shorten the time she had with Tian Ya. However, despite this, Dia Wu would continue to go and find Tian Ya... especially when it was their birthday, she would spend the entire day with him."

"As each day passed, they became more and more inseparable. As Tian Ya grew up, the way people looked and him grew weirder and weirder. However, Tian Ya did not care about this at all; he was happy as long as Dia Wu was by his side... however, even such a simple thing was eventually bound to be taken from him."

Ling Shui Ruo's small hands unconsciously clasped together.

"There was a young master in that family... a young master who was respected by everyone, someone who had grown up in praise and admiration. No matter what commands he gave, they would surely be fulfilled. That young master was older than Tian Ya by four years, but their differences were as large as heaven and earth. Because the young master was always out, Tian Ya very rarely saw him. Every time they saw each other, he would nod his head

towards Tian Ya in a friendly way. Although they never spoke, he was not as cold and harsh towards Tian Ya than other people. On the fifth day after Tian Ya's ninth birthday, that young master suddenly returned home, and as they walked past each other, Tian Ya found that his leg had been pricked by something. When he returned ot his room, he found that there was a small needle hole. Tian Ya thought that perhaps there was something sharp on the young master's body, and had accidentally poked into him while they were walking past each other. The Tian Ya back then was not willing to associate with anyone except for Dia Wu, and he didn't want to unnecessarily cause any trouble. As such, he didn't pay much notice to this incident, and soon forgot about it, and did not even tell Dia Wu."

"However, from that night, his body often felt very light, and could clearly feel his strength flowing out from him. He usually slept at 10pm, but found that he went to bed earlier and earlier, and woke up later and later. He found that he didn't want to walk or eat. Every day, he felt weaker and weaker, and his complexion became more and more pale. In order to not worry Dia Wu, he tried his best to act normal when he was with her. At that time, he naively believed that he just had a cold, and that he would be better in a few days... after three days, a big group of people wearing white clothes came to the family, and said that they were there to do a check-up on the whole family. Every wealthy and influential family did such check-ups, and everyone had to go through them, even servants. However, this time, they came much earlier than previous years. Although Tian Ya had never been checked before, this time they seemed to be especially focused on him... the results of his check-up sent the entire family into fear."

Ling Chen's eyes slightly opened, his eyes filled with a glow of hatred, "What they found in Tian Ya was the world's most

terrifying disease... Isrock Disease!!”

“Ahh!!” Ling Shui Ruo cried out. Her body trembled, and she grabbed onto Ling Chen’s hands, worriedly shouting, “And then, and then, what... what happened to Tian Ya...?”

Ling Chen gently held Shui Ruo’s small hands in his own, and his tone became gentle again, “The Isrock Disease that Ling Chen had contracted sent the entire family spiralling into fear. However, it was fortunate that Tian Ya had not contracted the Isrock Disease for too long, and he hadn’t transmitted it to anyone. Apart from Tian Ya, no one had contracted the disease. On that day, the family completely disinfected every single inch of their residence, and everything that Tian Ya had come into contact with was destroyed with fire. As for Tian Ya, he had become like a terrifying demon to everyone else. Whenever people saw him, they would run away in terror. Even the auntie who cooked for him and looked after him would stay far away from him... in the afternoon, he was locked up by a few people dressed in biohazard suits. They said it was only a temporary quarantine, so that no one else was infected, and that they would immediately inform the head of the family so that he could take care of things.”

“Tian Ya was already nine at that time, and he fully knew how terrifying the Isrock Disease was. There was no incubation period, and once someone was infected, it would rapidly devour a person’s lifeforce. At that time, Tian Ya had already contracted the disease for four days. After finding out that he had the Isrock Disease, he felt that he no longer had the strength to stand, and lay like a corpse on the cold, hard ground. He somewhat wished that he could just die there and then, but he also didn’t want to die, as he didn’t want to lose Dia Wu.”

“Just as he was calling out Dia Wu’s name, she appeared. She had gotten hold of a key, and unlocked the door. She rushed in, and hugged him while crying. Seeing Dia Wu, he was extremely happy, as if his dream had come true. However, he immediately pushed her away, and yelled at her to leave, and to stay away from him. Even if he was going to die, he didn’t want to infect Dia Wu with the Isrock Disease as well. However, Dia Wu continued to hug him, and no matter what he did, he was unable to push her away…”

Remembering that scene, Ling Chen’s heart trembled in happiness, as well as pain.

“On that night, Dia Wu carried the strengthless Tian Ya on her back to a small creek that they liked to go to together. The night sky on that night was especially beautiful, and there was not a single cloud in the sky. Tian Ya’s head lay on Dia Wu’s legs, and he looked up at the sky full of countless stars, as well as a pair of eyes that were even more beautiful than the stars in the sky…”

……

“Dia’Er, I don’t want to die… If I die, I won’t be able to see your eyes or hear your voice… Dia’Er…”

“Big brother Tian Ya, you’re a man, so you can’t… you can’t cry… we all can’t cry… nothing’s going to happen to you… no matter what happens, I’ll stay with you… my everything belongs to my Tian Ya. If big brother Tian Ya really died… I… I will also die… no one will ever see my eyes again, no one will ever hear my voice…”

.....

The girl’s voice from that night rang in his ears, assaulting his mind and emotions.

Chapter 216 - Tian Ya And Dia Wu (3)

"... On that night, they were together for a long time. Dia Wu told him that he absolutely couldn't give up hope, because he still had her. She would convince her family to try to find a cure for the Isrock Disease... however, before then, Isrock Disease had never been successfully cured before, and at most one had a few years to live. In order to give him more hope, she took out a long piece of red string that she had prepared earlier. She bound one end on Tian Ya's pinky finger on her right hand, and bound the other end on her own pinky finger on her left hand."

Ling Chen clearly saw that scene in his mind. He remembered that had happened on that night with absolute clarity... he would never forget until the day he died.

"This piece of red string is a symbol that the god of marriage has bound us together. One end is attached to you, and the other end is attached to me. Big brother Tian Ya, do you know what this means? Hehe... it means that from now on, I, Xuanyuan Dia Wu, has become big brother Tian Ya's wife, from now till forever. Big brother Tian Ya is my husband, and we'll always be together. No matter what happens, we'll never be separated."

Under the silvery moonlight, the young girl held the young boy's hand, and closed her eyes, praying to the heavens, "I, Xuanyuan Dia Wu, am willing to become big brother Tian Ya's wife. We were born on the same date in the same month and year, and I'm willing to die with him on the same date in the same month and year. This entire life, I'll only belong to big brother Tian Ya. Heavens, please be the witness of everything I've said. If I go back on any of my words, let me suffer eternal punishment. Please bless big brother

Tian Ya and myself so that no matter what happens, we can always be together."

Just like this, the girl sincerely and earnestly made a promise and a wish, binding her life to this boy who was very likely going to die.

"... Tian Ya, who had originally given up all hope, once again had a strong desire to live. For Dia Wu, he continued to be strong, and was unwilling to die. This was because they were now bound together. On that night, they stayed at the creek until it was dawn. Dia Wu then carried him back to his room. The family's security was usually extremely tight, and not even a fly could pass through without their detection. Somehow, when they were going out, or coming back, no one found out. When she was leaving, Dia Wu gently kissed him... it was the first time Tian Ya had been kissed by a girl, and it was also the first time he had kissed a girl. It was possible to transmit the Isrock Disease through saliva, so Tian Ya initially refused, but his weak body was unable to stop Dia Wu... after all, Dia Wu told him that no matter what happened to him, she would not reject him at all. She would even be willing to contract the Isrock Disease with him."

"Dia Wu, she's truly a good, kind girl." Ling Shui Ruo said quietly. In her mind was the scene Ling Chen was describing. The more she listened to Ling Chen's story, the more she wanted to meet that girl called "Dia Wu", and thank her for being so kind to the boy called Tian Ya... just like how big brother refused to abandon her while she was still sick. The only reason she was able to survive for three years after contracting the Isrock Disease was because of Ling Chen.

“After Dia Wu left, Tian Ya was left in the darkness by himself. Tian Ya gritted his teeth, and resisted the feeling of strengthlessness in his body. No matter what, he wanted to live for as long as possible. However, ten or so minutes after Dia Wu left, the door was suddenly opened, and a few people charged in. Before Tian Ya even had the chance to make a sound, something was shoved into his mouth, and his body was thrown into a large sack.”

“Ah!” Shui Ruo, who was already very tense, let out a gasp.

“Tian Ya didn’t know what had happened, and he was unable to make a sound because of whatever had been stuffed into his mouth. He felt himself tightly wrapped in the bag, unable to move, and was carried away. After a while, he felt himself being thrown down, and lost consciousness. Just before he passed out, he heard the starting of a car engine.”

“Where did they take him? What were they going to do with him?” Ling Shui Ruo couldn’t help but ask anxiously, her hands covered in cold sweat.

Ling Chen continued to calmly narrate, “When Tian Ya woke up, he was once again thrown downwards. This time, he was thrown into a cold, dark place. Afterwards, he felt clumps of things falling down on him, which became heavier and heavier. It became harder and harder for him to breathe, and he realised what was falling on him was dirt. He was being buried in a very deep pit.”

Shui Ruo’s body began to shake.

“Tian Ya desperately struggled, but he was so weak that he could not budge the dirt at all. There was something stuffed in his mouth, and he couldn’t even make a sound. Slowly, he lost consciousness... he knew that he was going to die. He stopped struggling, and as he felt his last bit of energy disappearing, he thought back to the times he had spent with Dia Wu. He wasn’t afraid of dying, but he was afraid that if he disappeared, and Dia Wu couldn’t find him, she’d be completely heartbroken and devastated, because today she had become his wife.”
“Why would they do such a thing to him! He never did anything wrong, but those people were so cold, so cruel to him!! Why were they so cruel that they would bury him alive!” Streaks of tears travelled down Shui Ruo’s face, and she buried her head into Ling Chen’s chest as she sobbed.

Ling Chen tightly hugged her, and gave a long sigh, “Because as long as he existed, he was like a poisonous thorn to that family. Anyone who saw him would feel uncomfortable, and yet they couldn’t drive him out, much less hurt him. Especially to the young master, he was a ticking bomb that could explode at any time. As the young master grew up and became more and more intelligent and devious, this became more and more clear to him.”

“Why was this?” Shui Ruo raised her head as she asked.

“Why? Ah... the reason isn’t too important anymore. From that night onwards, they all believed that Tian Ya had died, and had thought up many reasons for his death. The reason behind all this is not too important anymore. From that day onwards, there was no longer any connection between Tian Ya and that family... and there never would be.”

“And then… what happened to Tian Ya?” Shui Ruo used her hands to wipe away her tears as she gently asked.

“Afterwards, just as he was about to release himself into death’s embrace, he heard some people talking above him… Although the voices were quite soft, he was able to hear clearly.”

“Is this really the right thing to do? After all, he’s…”

“Hmph, this is something the young master explicitly ordered. No need to waste your breath. Quickly erase all evidence and go. No one usually comes here; being buried here, he won’t be discovered for maybe 10 years.”

“Haha, young master’s so cunning at such a young age; he’s definitely got a bright future in front of him.”

Their words caused the strengthless Tian Ya’s eyes to fly open. Boundless hatred filled his mind, and waves like floodwaters crashed in his heart. He didn’t know where the energy came from, but he started to desperately struggle again, as well as tried to call out. The hatred within him caused him to be unwilling to give up and die. He wanted to meet Dia Wu again; he wanted to go and ask the young master why he would do such a thing; he wanted… revenge!”

“The sound of an engine starting sounded out, and the people who had brought him here left. His willpower was strengthened by his hatred, and he continued to struggle furiously… since he was born, he had been born into an emotionally cold and harsh

environment. Perhaps he had always been suppressing his unhappiness and resentment, but in the face of such despair and stimulation, this was all released. At that moment, his desire was to kill every single person except Dia Wu…”

“… He didn’t know how much time had passed, but he knew that he had been buried for a very, very long time. Tian Ya didn’t know that still being alive after being buried for such a long time in his weakened state was already something incredible. Afterwards, he finally reached his limits. His consciousness began to fade, and began to draw nearer and nearer to death, but the hatred in his heart was still just as strong. Just as he completely lost consciousness, a deafening sound erupted above him, and he felt himself being grasped and raised up… he subsequently lost consciousness.”

“And then, and then… who saved Tian Ya? He was fine, right?” Shui Ruo’s voice was incredibly anxious and worried.

“Indeed, someone had saved him. It was someone who was just passing by. The reason for them saving him was because of the resent and hatred that he was releasing. What that person was trying to find was people who were filled with hatred and resentment-the type of people who were absolutely determined not to die. The person rescued Tian Ya, and took him to a faraway place… a place called ‘Heaven’.”

Chapter 217 - Hard To Look Back

“Heaven? Was it... a very wonderful place?” Shui Ruo quietly asked.

“No, it was a terrifying place. There was a Mad Scientist... a true madman. He had a terrifying power-the devastating Isrock Disease that humans could do nothing about, he was able to casually cure. He looked down on humans, and called himself a ‘messiah’ who was superior to humans. He wanted to create the world’s most terrifying killing machines, then watch those ‘pitiful humans’ cry in despair as they were slaughtered. Tian Ya was taken to that place and became one of his guinea pigs, and was given a new name-Number 1353. He was the 1353rd child to be taken there.

Shui Ruo: “!!!!”

“He stayed at ‘Heaven’ for three years. There were countless times when his mind and spirit were nearly completely broken, and they were stimulated to reach new limits. His body was always bathed in a special liquid that the madman created... just like this, after three years, his mind and spirit, as well as body, became monstrously strong. Out of those 1353 children, 1351 could not handle the experimentation and died. Only two children survived-a boy and a girl. The boy was Number 1353, and the girl was Number 17. She had red hair and blue eyes.

A few sentences spanned an entire three years. Ling Chen spoke very calmly-he had endured so much, and he felt nothing when looking back. However, anyone would know that in those three years, facing death countless times would have resulted in

unimaginable pain and torture. Shui Ruo's heart was in pieces, and she hugged Ling Chen while sobbing.

"The reason why Tian Ya was able to endure all of this was because he was not willing to die. He wanted to take revenge; he wanted to see Dia Wu again. After the third year, he was taken by the person who had saved him to a place called 'Hell'. That person was also called 'Hell'. There were many people there, who looked at Tian Ya and Number 17 with cruelty and pity in their eyes. The people there called the man 'Instructor Hell', and they all feared him immensely. No one dared to disobey his orders."

"It was there that he and Number 17 learnt many terrifying killing techniques. Although his mind and spirit had been repeatedly devastated over the past three years, Tian Ya's memories were still intact. After enduring three years of pain, there was nothing he could not take anymore. In order to take revenge, in order to see Dia Wu again and protect her, Tian Ya went all out in learning and practicing. Tian Ya and Number 17's minds, spirit and bodies were terrifyingly strong, and they surpassed everyone else there in a short period of time. Deserts, oceans, forests, marshes, mountains... they had never failed any of their training in these sorts of difficult environments. Afterwards, Tian Ya began to learn true killing techniques. Surprisingly, the first time he killed someone, he did not feel afraid or hesitant, but rather did it quickly and cleanly, as if plucking out a blade of grass. From then onwards, he would kill people almost every day. Those few years, he killed many, many people-so many that he could not remember if it was hundreds or thousands. At that time, he knew that he had become an evil demon, as well as that he was no longer good enough for Dia Wu. However, he still greatly desired to see her again... and then use his strength to take revenge."

“No way, no way!” Shui Ruo’s face paled as she furiously shook her head, “Dia Wu wouldn’t blame him, much less despise or be afraid of him… Dia Wu said that no matter what he became like, she would always be together with him. If Tian Ya killed so many people, but left her behind, that would be devastating to her.”

Ling Chen slightly smiled, “Mm. I know… the killings Tian Ya carried out were all ordered by Instructor Hell. However, the person who Tian Ya wanted to kill most was Instructor Hell. As long as he did not die, Tian Ya would never have freedom. Everyone under Instructor Hell’s command all wanted him dead… however, Instructor Hell was truly terrifying. Even if Tian Ya worked together with Number 17 and everyone else, they would not necessarily be able to defeat Instructor Hell. He was something that the Mad Scientist called a ‘god’. Many leaders of countries, upon hearing his name, would break out in cold sweat. There were people who tried to retaliate against Instructor Hell, or tried to escape from his control. Unfortunately, those people all died pitiful deaths. After they died, their bodies would be sent to the Mad Scientist, and became his experimental subjects. The two people who Instructor Hell was least vigilant about was Tian Ya and Number 17, as the Mad Scientist told him that he had already put mental restrictions on them, and they would forever obey his commands… however, neither Instructor Hell nor the Mad Scientist knew that Tian Ya and Number 17 had already escaped from the mental restrictions using special methods.”

What that special method was, Ling Chen did not describe, nor was he able to describe it.

“After being trained by Instructor Hell for three years, Tian Ya couldn’t take it anymore. Together with Number 17, they planned

how they would kill Instructor Hell. As such, using Instructor Hell's lowered wariness towards them to their advantage, they planted a liquid bomb on the island they were doing training on. As soon as Instructor Hell drew near, they detonated the bomb... however, Instructor Hell was very sensitive towards danger, and he was able to dodge. When the bomb detonated, he only lost his right hand... luckily, the nerves on his right hand were damaged, and he was unable to use it. Facing Instructor Hell who was only able to use his left hand, Tian Ya and Number 17 had a chance, so they charged up with knives in their hands to kill him... that battle was incredibly intense and deadly; even without his right hand, Instructor Hell was able to inflict many injuries on Tian Ya and Number 17. However, he had taken heavy damage, and the longer they battled, the more blood he lost. In that battle, Tian Ya was struck by Instructor Hell 29 times, Number 17 was hit 13 times, whereas Instructor Hell had taken 13 hits from both of them. Finally, Number 17 was able to cut off Instructor Hell's entire right arm, and Tian Ya rushed up and used all of his power to plunge his broken dagger into Instructor Hell's stronger-than-steel body, piercing into his heart... before he died, Instructor Hell displayed a desperate burst of
strength, and jumped into the ocean... although they could not find his body, because his heart had been completely pierced, he could not possibly have survived."

"Because of Instructor Hell's death, those under his control were all freed. When Tian Ya and Number 17 brought Instructor Hell's arm to them, they all started to cheer in joy, and expressed their willingness to become Tian Ya and Number 17's subordinates... they had all decided that whoever could kill Instructor Hell and let them leave this hell, they would be forever loyal to them."

"Tian Ya was Asian, so all of the Asian people followed him.

Number 17 was Caucasian, so all the Caucasian people followed her. On the third day after killing Instructor Hell, Tian Ya and Number 17 returned to 'Heaven'. However, they did not find the Mad Scientist. The Mad Scientist had terrifying intelligence and wisdom, but did not have Instructor Hell's strength and power, so they did not continue to look for him... not long after, Tian Ya suddenly took his subordinates and left, returning to China... he did not even say goodbye to Number 17. This was because Number 17 expressed her willingness to go to China with him, but Tian Ya only had Dia Wu in his heart, so he secretly left."

"After... after he left, did he reunite with Dia Wu?" Shui Ruo anxiously asked.

"No..." Ling Chen shook his head, "After he returned to China, Tian Ya immediately sent his people to investigate how that family group and Dia Wu were. His subordinates all had superb intelligence gathering skills, so they quickly reported back to Tian Ya... seven years ago, which was when Tian Ya had been taken to 'Heaven'... she refused to eat and fasted to death."
"Ahh!!" Shui Ruo cried out in shock. She shook her head, unwilling to accept it, "No... how could it be like this... how could it be..."

"After hearing about that, Ling Chen felt incredible pain, to the point that he almost became crazy... in fact, he really did go crazy. He secretly infiltrated that family by himself, because he knew how terrifying that family's defences and security measures were- they had all of the most high-tech weapons, as well as the strongest guardian family group protecting them. He didn't want to bring harm to any of the companions he had just gained. As such, lost in his grief and torment, he went by himself. At that time, although

Tian Ya was only 16 years old, his body was terrifyingly strong and he was incredibly powerful. His rampage caused the three legendary bodyguard family groups to appear, as well as heavy armed forces. Tian Ya wore a set of black clothing, and concealed his face, so no one discovered his true identity. He killed many people, but in the end, that family group was indeed the most powerful family group in China, and thus had incredibly heavy defences. Tian Ya was able to kill many people, but also suffered heavy injuries, and was forced to leave. He was chased for an entire night, and lost much blood. At the end, he finally climbed up onto a train and passed out on top of it."

Ling Chen closed his eyes, and said in a low voice, "At that time, Tian Ya truly hated himself. If it wasn't for him, Dia Wu wouldn't have died... if it wasn't for that family group, Dia Wu wouldn't have died. However, that family group was much too powerful-he did not have the ability to take revenge for Dia Wu and himself. He thought back to the cold, cruel, painful days he had endured... only Dia Wu was the single bit of warmth in his life. However, the heavens had even taken away this single bit of warmth. He didn't know whether he would be able to smile or laugh in future, or if his heart, which was becoming colder and colder, could become warm again. He thought that perhaps, from this day onwards, he would live only for revenge... however, deep in his heart, what he truly desired was the warmth of a real family. This was something that even someone with a cold heart subconsciously desired. One day, if he could meet a girl like Dia Wu, he would use his everything to protect her, and definitely would not allow the same thing to happen again."

Shui Ruo: "....."

“When Tian Ya finally woke up, the train was still in motion. He had no idea where the train was travelling, but his body had recovered significantly, so he jumped off, and began walking. He didn’t know where he was going, but he walked for a long, long time, until he reached a place where there were people living there… it seemed to be one of the outer suburbs of a city. After chatting with a few people passing by, he found out that this place was called ‘Zhong Zhou’. Afterwards, he once again collapsed on the ground… until a very, very beautiful girl’s voice woke him up.”

Ling Chen concluded his narration there. Ling Shui Ruo covered her mouth, trying her best not to sob. However, her face was covered by her tears.

Chapter 218 - Today's Weather Isn't Too Bad

What Ling Chen had just described was his past. Of course, Tian Ya was Ling Chen; Ling Chen was Tian Ya, or Number 1353. The family group that he had referred to was the Long family... only the Long family had the right to be called the most powerful family group in China. These were all blindingly obvious things that Shui Ruo understood.

Everything that happened after, Shui Ruo already knew-after all, the girl who had woken him in Zhong Zhou was her. The first time she had met him, he was wearing black clothes, lying on the unbelievably hot ground. There were many people walking past, but not a single person took notice of him. On the way home, she saw him lying on the ground, and hurriedly went to wake him up... because her father was a doctor, he had always taught her to be kind to others, and that she should do what she can to help those in need. She woke Ling Chen up, and saw an extremely pale face. He wasn't completely awake, and definitely could not walk by himself. As such, she, her father and her mother took him home and looked after him. When they asked him about his past, he said that he wanted to forget it, and did not want to talk about it. When they asked him where his home was, he said he did not have one. When they asked him what his name was, all he said was 'Chen', meaning 'dust'- he said that he was just like a speck of dust, blown by the wind, without anywhere to go.

As such, Shui Ruo exclaimed, "Then how about this will be big brother's home? I've always wanted a big brother!"

Her father and mother smiled, but being mature adults, they thought this wouldn't be too good. However, because they loved

their daughter dearly, they only smiled, but did not say anything. At that time, Ling Chen's body and mind had both taken much damage. Shui Ruo was like an angel who had saved him; her voice, her smile all caused his frozen heart to grow warm... he, who had always been rejected by, and always rejected other people, could only nod his head.

As such, he became Shui Ruo's big brother and stayed with the family. He had a father, mother, little sister... he had a family. This was the first time he had ever had a real family. In that family, he finally understood what family love was, which caused him to gradually forget about the pain and hatred in his heart. He even wanted to forget everything that happened in the past, and forever stay in this family, protecting Shui Ruo and her parents. How wonderful would that be...

It was a pity that the heavens only allowed him to live this sort of peaceful, carefree life for three years. After three years, the father, who frequently came into contact with patients with Isrock Disease contracted the disease, and also passed it on to the mother and Shui Ruo. Only Ling Chen... who had a monstrous body that could not get sick, did not become infected. He decided to take care of this entire family by himself. After one year, the father and mother both passed away. In his life, there was only Shui Ruo left. In order to cure Shui Ruo, he went to countless places, looking for different ways to cure the disease. He even sent people all over the world to find the Mad Scientist who had disappeared... because he could easily cure the Isrock Disease. However, after three years passed, he had made no progress. That was until they had come to Beijing, and met Yun Feng.

"Big brother... why... why didn't you tell me all this earlier."

Ling Shui Ruo tightly hugged him as she sobbed. When she had first met him, she never knew that he had such a tragic past. At this moment, she finally knew that his past wasn't just tragic. He had suffered unimaginable pain and agony, something other people could not even imagine. Losing his mother when he was born, growing up in a bitter environment, being cruelly harmed by others, being buried alive, struggling to survive in the terrifying 'Heaven' and 'Hell', then finding out that his most loved person had died... those years, he had suffered much anguish and torment... Shui Ruo's heart hurt as if it had been shredded; the feeling in her heart was much more painful than even that from the Isrock Disease. She pressed herself against him, and could not even speak as she sobbed... as her vision clouded, she could almost see her big brother in those scenes, desperately struggling against the pain in his heart, as the hatred and bitterness devoured him... she hated fate for being so cruel to him; hated that family group for doing such a thing to him; hated herself... for not being able to help him...

"Haha!" Ling Chen laughed, and used his fingers to brush away Shui Ruo's stream of tears. He said in a comforting voice, "Don't cry, Ruo Ruo, these things all happened long ago in the past. Fate already gave me compensation for all that... by putting Ruo Ruo by my side. Being able to meet Ruo Ruo, I'm able to forgive god who put all those other things in my life. Because if it wasn't for those things, I never would have met Ruo Ruo, and neither would I have the power to protect Ruo Ruo. After meeting Ruo Ruo, I've been trying to forget about those things, and planned to never think of them again. I never thought that I'd talk about them again today, and even cause my Ruo Ruo to cry so much. Okay, Ruo Ruo, don't cry; if you keep crying, my heart will really break."

"Big brother... big brother... I... I... wuu...." Shui Ruo was crying

so hard that she couldn't speak. Even though everything was in the past, but her heart still hurt so much; so much that she almost couldn't breathe.

"Whew..." Ling Chen let out a breath, and stroked Shui Ruo's hair, waiting for her to calm down. After being with Shui Ruo, he really did try to forget about the past, and sealed Dia Wu away in his memories. He didn't even think of the hatred in his heart-as long as he had Shui Ruo, nothing else mattered. When Shui Ruo contracted the Isrock Disease, he felt as if his whole world was collapsing, so to him, he would be willing to pay any price for her to become well again... as for the hatred, he didn't have the time or energy for that.

However, with Shui Ruo now healthy again, his heart was no longer heavily burdened. Upon entering the Mystic Moon world, he had heard of the surname "Long"... and just like that, a small tongue of fire began to burn within Ling Chen's heart, igniting the hatred inside. As such, he started to plan how to take revenge against the Long family.

Am I being a bit too greedy? I know that doing such a thing could disturb Ruo Ruo and my peaceful life together...

The hatred that had kept him alive after being buried alive for two days; the hatred that had supported him in those three years in 'Heaven'- how could it be so easily forgotten? The hatred that he had been trying to suppress and forget had not been forgotten at all. Rather, it had been sleeping like a dormant monster in his heart-the slightest stimulation would cause it to awaken, unable to be contained.

After a while, Shui Ruo finally began to calm down. She tightly hugged Ling Chen, wanting to be able to protect him… she blinked the tears out of her eyes as she sobbed, “Big brother, you still haven’t told me… why you suddenly became upset… is it because… you thought of those things… from the past?”

Ling Chen had told Shui Ruo everything, and he didn’t want to hide anything from this girl who he wanted to be with forever, “Because… because the Sword Emperor… She might be Dia Wu…”

“Ah!” Shui Ruo let out a cry of surprise, as her eyes widened in shock and surprise

Ling Chen slowly said, “Earlier when we fought, when our bodies touched, I accidentally found out that she is a woman… and that last sword technique she used… that sword technique was exactly the same as the one I created with Dia Wu… that sword technique let Dia Wu slash out many illusory blades while in the air, making her seem like a butterfly. It was very beautiful to look at, but it wasn’t much more than that-it was much weaker than the thirty six sword techniques passed down from her family group. We called that sword skill ‘Heaven’s Edge, Butterfly’s Dance’ (Tian Ya Dia Wu). Back then, Dia Wu would often show me that skill, to let me appreciate the beauty of it… the skill that the Sword Emperor used was almost exactly the same as Dia Wu’s, but with one difference-the Heaven’s Edge, Butterfly’s Dance of that year was incomparably beautiful, whereas the one the Sword Emperor used was unimaginably powerful, just like a proper sword skill.”

“She… she’s really… but… didn’t she… already…” In her shock,

Shui Ruo forgot about crying, as her heart rate suddenly sped up.

Ling Chen shook his head, “I don’t know if it’s her or not. Perhaps the sword skill was just similar, or maybe Dia Wu taught that skill, Heaven’s Edge, Butterfly’s Dance, to someone else… maybe I’m just thinking too much…”

“No… definitely not! That was something that only belonged to you two, how can she teach it to someone else.” Shui Ruo vigorously shook her head, “Big brother, at the time, why didn’t you… why didn’t you call her name; why didn’t you tell her who you were… that way, you would’ve know if she was big sister Dia Wu…”

“I… couldn’t…” Ling Chen bitterly shook his head, “The Dia Wu in my heart already died 13 years ago. After suddenly finding out that she might still be alive, and might even be right in front of me, my emotions spun out of control. I didn’t dare to call out her name, because if she wasn’t Dia Wu, I would once again have to suffer that pain, but if it was her… if it really was… I wouldn’t know what to do…”

Shui Ruo’s eyes became clouded again. Of course, she knew what Ling Chen meant by that he wouldn’t know what to do, “… Is it because of me? Big brother’s worried that if she really was Dia Wu, you wouldn’t know how to face both of us, right?”

“Ruo Ruo, I said that I will be with you forever. Ruo Ruo will not leave me, and I will not leave Ruo Ruo.” Ling Chen softly said.

“Then, what if she’s really big sister Dia Wu? When big brother was abandoned by everyone, she was determined not to leave you, and was even willing to become your wife… from that night, big sister Dia Wu was already big brother’s wife, with the bright moon and stars as witnesses. If that really is big sister Dia Wu, how can big brother just abandon her, his own wife? She loved big brother so much, so I’m sure that she has always been waiting for big brother to come back, and has been waiting for many, many years.

Ling Chen: “……”

Chapter 219 - Big Brother's Dessert

Everything Shui Ruo had said was exactly correct. Back then, Ling Chen's world only had Dia Wu, so it would be impossible for him to just forget about him. Those six or seven years at Heaven and Hell, he had thought of her every day. However, when he had returned, he had found out about her death. In his despair, he had met Shui Ruo. She had gradually healed his wounded heart, causing him to want to protect her forever. However, today he felt that Dia Wu was still alive, and was completely at a loss as to what he should do.

When he was infected with the Isrock Disease, Dia Wu was still willing to become his wife. She trained hard for his sake, and fasted to death for him. He would never allow himself to hurt her. However... how could he hurt Shui Ruo either?

Seeing the confusion in Ling Chen's eyes, Shui Ruo completely understood why Ling Chen would suddenly become upset... no, he wasn't upset-knowing that Dia Wu might still be alive, he must be incredibly happy in his heart. Instead, what was making him feel conflicted was probably guilt. Guilt that although Dia Wu had been alive, he had not found her; guilt that he had been with another girl for such a long time. As such, he didn't dare to see if it was her, because he felt that he didn't have the right, nor the courage to face her. Moreover, he was also afraid that it wasn't her... and even if it was, he wouldn't know what to do. If he was together with Dia Wu, he would have to let down Shui Ruo, and if he was with Shui Ruo, he would have to let down Dia Wu...

"Big brother, did you know, you're a big, big idiot." Shui Ruo wiped away her tears, and rested her head on his shoulder as she

quietly spoke.

"Ruo Ruo... I..."

"Hehe..." Ruo Ruo, who was sobbing before, gave a gentle laugh. She stretched out her hands, and put them against Ling Chen's mouth, softly saying, "Big brother, let's talk about this later, alright? I'm a bit hungry, so can big brother make some desserts? I haven't had any desserts made by big brother in a long time."

"Sure!" Ling Chen nodded, and stroked Shui Ruo's face, then walked out of the room.

Shui Ruo continued to gaze at Ling Chen as he walked out, then closed her eyes, with her hands clasped on her chest. Within her heart, she said, "Big brother, I always believed that you were an angel sent by heaven. You turned every day of my life into heaven. Only today did I find out that big brother has suffered so much in the past. When I was in total despair, big brother refused to leave me, and helped me through that period... but when big brother was in despair, I wasn't there to help him..."

"Big brother, now that you know big sister Dia Wu who you love might still be alive, isn't that wonderful? Before, it was always big brother protecting me, letting me live a happy life. In future, I will use my everything to help big brother to forget about all of the tragic things that happened in the past. I never want to be the reason for big brother becoming unhappy. I will definitely give my all to make big brother the happiest person in the world... as long as big brother is happy, I will definitely be happy as well."

“Even the Isrock Disease couldn’t separate us, so as long as we’re together, what is there that can’t be accepted? Big sister Dia Wu, you feel the same, right?”

As she opened her eyes, Shui Ruo smiled. She took off her gaming equipment, put on her slippers, and walked out of the bedroom.

“Big brother, I’m going to have a shower!”

Shui Ruo knew that Ling Chen’s cooking skills were incredible. There was practically nothing that he could not make, and back then Shui Ruo’s parents praised his meals every time. Perhaps this was one of the reasons why they allowed him, a complete stranger, to continue living with them. These cooking skills were developed in ‘Hell’, because using delicious food to kill unsuspecting victims was very efficient. While making the desserts, he heard the sound of water flowing in the bathroom. Shui Ruo would have a shower every day, to keep herself completely clean.

After he finished making the desserts, he carefully placed and arranged them on the table. Seeing his creation, he smiled to himself, confident that Ruo Ruo would like it.

“Ruo Ruo, the desserts are ready, have you finished showering?” Hearing that the water had stopped, Ling Chen called out.

Just as Ling Chen spoke, the bathroom door opened, and a snow white, exquisite figure walked out. Shui Ruo’s eyes shone like stars as they gazed at him, and she smiled, revealing an extremely cute

but alluring smile.

Ling Chen felt as if an electric current had passed through his body, causing his body to be frozen in place. His eyes were locked onto Shui Ruo's body, unable to move away.

Shui Ruo had walked out without any clothes on, and the only thing that she had on was a small towel. Her delicate hands were holding the towel in place, and below it, Ling Chen could see her jade white, slender legs. The towel could not fully cover her ample breasts, revealing a wondrous sight.

Shui Ruo's tender cheeks were red, and her eyes were fixed on Ling Chen. She bewitchingly smiled, and let go of the towel, letting it fall to the ground.

Ling Chen: "……"

Shui Ruo's flawless body was completely displayed to Ling Chen, causing him to stop breathing. It felt as if he had forgotten how to speak, or even make a sound. Her large breasts were like a pair of flowers, waiting for him to go and pick them, and grasp them in his hands. Her slim waist and beautiful legs all seemed to be inviting him. Although he had seen Shui Ruo's body many times, but in that instant, he was completely mesmerised by the scene.

Shui Ruo's cheeks became redder, and her hands moved down her body from her shoulders to her legs as she quietly asked, "Big brother… does my body look nice?"

Look nice? No one would believe that there would be anything more beautiful in the world. Ling Chen dumbly nodded his head. He moved his lips as he spluttered out, “Ruo Ruo, you… this… catch a cold…”

Ling Shui Ruo’s lips parted into a sweet smile, clearly amused by her big brother’s flustered reaction. She stepped over the towel, and walked towards the dazed Ling Chen, leaning her body against his, “Big brother, before eating desserts, do you want to eat Ruo Ruo first… Ruo Ruo wants to become big brother’s favourite dessert…”

Shui Ruo extended her arm around Ling Chen’s neck, pulling him close and kissed him… the first time they had kissed was when Shui Ruo was thirteen. That time, it was also Shui Ruo taking the initiative to kiss him. If it wasn’t for Shui Ruo making the first move, Ling Chen definitely would not be willing to ruin the innocence of this pure angel.

This sort of seductive gestures and language, as well as that perfect body could cause any man to lose his sanity. Their lips were joined together as Ling Chen desperately tried to quell the burning passion in his heart. He hugged Shui Ruo’s body, and greedily sucked on her lips, using his tongue to explore her mouth. Shui Ruo let out a gentle ‘wuu’ sound, and she raised her head, passionately reciprocating. The warm breath from her nostrils blew on Ling Chen’s face; she was completely enraptured within Ling Chen’s embrace, as if she was drunk.

Ling Chen’s breathing became more and more erratic and heated. He pressed his hand against her breasts, greedily rubbing, his other

hand passing over her sleek waist, the grabbing onto her bottom, causing Shui Ruo to let out a small cry of ecstasy. She furrowed her brows, biting her lips as her face increasingly reddened, feeling those groping hands on her breasts and bottom. In her excitement, she opened her eyes, dumbly gazing at Ling Chen as her head spun with euphoria. She stretched out her hands into his clothes, feeling the warmth of his body. Gradually, one of her hands travelled downwards, touching a burning hot area, gently grabbing and nervously stroking it with her fingers.

Although this was only the seduction of a young woman, Ling Chen's passion and lust burned brighter than ever before. Their mouths were still pressed together, and their bodies trembled as their pleasure increased. The gentle and reserved Shui Ruo, at this moment, was using up all of the courage in her body... Finally, Ling Chen could not take it anymore, and carried the gasping Shui Ruo onto the sofa, gently spreading out her legs. He lay down, his chest pressed down on her body.

"Ruo Ruo..."

"Big brother, quickly eat me up..."

The mysterious 'lock' was broken in one thrust, and it gradually became darker as evening fell. A cry of pleasure, mixed with pain sounded out from the room, filling the air. Shui Ruo tightly wrapped her arms around Ling Chen who was above her, and wrapped her slender legs around his waist. Her skin was red, and covered in much sweat. Although it was painful, it was incredibly pleasurable and she smiled in her joy.

Big brother, I’ve finally… become yours completely…

And even earlier than big sister Dia Wu!

Chapter 220 - Shui Ruo's Heart

The moon and stars shone brightly.

Long Tian Yun was sitting in the middle of a large hall, his head lowered in thought. He was completely silent, like a peaceful statue, and had been like this for the past hour. The various leaders and officials of the Yan Huang Alliance all stood before him, completely silent as well. Long Tian Yun was much too calm, causing them all to feel fearful; not a single person dared to make a sound.

Tap...

One of Long Tian Yun's fingers tapped on the table in front of him. The sudden sound caused everyone's hearts to jump. Long Tian Yun raised his head, his gaze calm like water. He muttered in a low voice, "Having the guts to kill me in public, having the power to defeat Xie Yu, and his voice sounds young enough to be less than thirty years old. In my memory, I can't think of a single person."

"Young master, that person Ling Tian has not been part of the virtual world for very long, so he must not know you... or our Yan Huang Alliance's fame and reputation. He must have unknowingly done this..."

"Unknowingly?" Long Tian Yun laughed coldly, "Under heavy defence, I was killed twice, and 137 other people were killed-you call this unknowingly? If this was not in a game, but in the real world, I would be more dead than dead!!"

All of the people present were at a loss for words, their bodies covered in cold sweat and heads hung down in shame, unable to say even a word. Apart from the Sword Emperor and Flame Emperor who were always by Long Tian Yun's side, there was also a group of experts, as well as the thousands of other Yan Huang Alliance players present. They were all there to protect Long Tian Yun, as well as keep the situation under control if anything happened. However, they had allowed Ling Tian to kill Long Tian Yun twice in such a short period of time... and even let him escape.

This had never, ever happened before. To them, to the entire Yan Huang Alliance, this was a complete and utter humiliation. By now, what had happened at the Plains District was being talked about everywhere. Ling Chen was being described more and more like a god, whereas the Yan Huang Alliance had become a stepping stone.

"Forget it," Long Tian Yun stood up and flicked his wrist, "This wasn't entirely your fault. Even I didn't expect Ling Tian to be so strong, that he could completely dominate Xie Yu. There wasn't anything strange about you all not being able to stop him."

Flame Shadow walked forwards and said, "Please rest assured, young master, we'll find Ling Tian's real identity within 3 days. Moreover, our Yan Huang Alliance definitely will not endure this silently. I've already prepared to pass down a kill-on-sight command for the entire Yan Huang Alliance targeting Ling Tian. What is your view, young master?"

"Send out the command. Once you find Ling Tian, destroy him at

all costs! Also, arrange some people to keep an eye on the Revival Centre. Once Ling Tian appears, immediately notify the guild! [TLN: Teleport Scrolls teleport you to the Revival Centre] Moreover, because our Yan Huang Alliance has not been officially established yet, we don't have a guild channel for communication and management. As such, guild members can join or leave as they wish. After all, today's events will cause many people to leave. The most important thing right now is to find that 'Peter Pan', and then establish the Yan Huang Alliance as soon as possible!"

"I understand," Flame Shadow nodded, "The Dark Night has already accepted this request, and they will have results soon. There's another matter regarding Ling Tian..."

"Speak!" Long Tian Yun coldly replied.

Flame Shadow took a step forwards, and earnestly said, "Young master already knows that Ling Tian seems to be quite close with the big miss of the Yun family, the princess of the Battle Alliance, as well as the Su family's princess... moreover, it seems that Ling Tian has already decided to join the big miss of the Yun family's guild, "Heart's Dream". The Frozen Hearted Man-eater, Mu Bing Yao, has already joined, as well as another person... a young girl, who seems very close to Ling Tian-perhaps his relative. That girl also wears a mask, just like Ling Tian, and no one has ever seen her true appearance before."

"Have you found Ling Tian's reason for helping Meng Xin?" Long Tian Yun asked. He was certain that before Mystic Moon was released, Yun Meng Xin and Ling Tian did not know each other, otherwise he would have known. However, Long Tian Yun did not

know how they met, or why Ling Tian was willing to help her.

"This... we've indeed received some information about his reasons," Flame Shadow thought for a short while, then hesitatingly said, "Alliance Master Xiao's little sister is also part of that guild, and I earlier asked Alliance Master Xiao about this. He said that including his little sister, no one has ever seen Ling Tian's face, and none of them know about his true background. As for him joining Heart's Dream and wanting to help the big miss of the Yun family, it's because... because..."

"Because what? Spit it out!" Long Tian Yun frowned.

"Because... Ling Tian fell in love with the big miss of the Yun family at first sight, and afterwards found out about the matter between young master and her. As such, he wanted to help her fulfil her bet with her father, in exchange for her marrying him afterwards... and she... agreed..."

"Bastard!!" Long Tian Yun yelled out, causing Flame Shadow to quickly lower his head and stop speaking. Long Tian Yun's hands were tightly clenched, his face twisted, "Ling Tian, from today onwards, either you die, or I die!!"

Everyone present knew that this time, Long Tian Yun was truly furious towards Ling Tian... although he was already quite furious before. It could be said that before Ling Tian, the big miss of the Yun family was the first time Long Tian Yun had ever failed. With his Long family background, power, looks, ability... who wasn't he good enough for? As such, he had extremely high taste... there was only one woman who he was satisfied with, and that was Yun

Meng Xin.

Yun Meng Xin's looks were indeed peerless; anyone who saw her would think that she was some sort of goddess that had come down to earth. Even when Yun Meng Xin was younger, after seeing her once, Long Tian Yun was unable to forget her, let alone the current her. However, Yun Meng Xin had actually rejected him harshly.

This was known by everyone in the upper echelons of the society in Beijing, causing Long Tian Yun to lose much face. However, he refused to give up. Because the Yun family would do anything to gain the favour of the Long family, ordinarily, Yun Meng Xin's refusal would not have meant much... as such, the almost-impossible bet between Yun Meng Xin and her father came to be.

Long Tian Yun did not at all doubt what Flame Shadow had said. Ling Tian and Yun Meng Xin did not even know each other, so the only reason for him helping her would be this. Even he, Long Tian Yun, could not resist Yun Meng Xin's looks, let alone other people! He believed that any man who saw Yun Meng Xin would forget everything, and be willing to do anything for her. Long Tian Yun ground his teeth as he suddenly realised why this Ling Tian, who he had never met before, was so determined to ruin him-it was all to gain Yun Meng Xin's favour!

He was simply going too far!

If he, Long Tian Yun, saw the woman he wanted being taken by Ling Tian as well, that would be the greatest humiliation of his life!

Long Tian Yun's eyes narrowed... You want to fight me for Meng Xin? I want to see how you're going to help her rival the Yun family's fame and fortune in just two years... or how you'll even live to that day!

"Immediately send out a kill-on-sight command to the entire guild targeting Ling Tian. Additionally, keep an eye on Meng Xin's actions, I want to meet her... remember, don't let her find out, and don't disturb her either!"

.....

Xiao Qiu Feng's lie was quite ingenious, because he understood Long Tian Yun quite well, and knew what he would lose his cool over. This way, he prevented Long Tian Yun from finding out the real reason why Ling Tian was helping Yun Meng Xin, keeping the Yun family siblings as well as Ling Tian and his sister, Xiao Qi and Su'Er from getting into much trouble.

As for Ling Tian, he had not even seen what Yun Meng Xin really looked like, and didn't seem to be too interested anyways. Whenever Yun Meng Xin was with him, she would always be covering her face, whether it was out of habit or out of caution.

.....

Ling Chen hugged Shui Ruo as they lay in the bathtub, enjoying the pleasant, relaxing feeling of the warm water. Shui Ruo lay on Ling Chen's chest, without even a bit of energy in her body. Ling Chen's hands would occasionally touch some sensitive spots on her

body, causing her to let out small moans.

“Big brother…”

Shui Ruo’s voice was incredibly soft, just like her body. In contrast, Ling Chen’s body was much too strong, and even though he was controlling himself, doing his best to be gentle, Shui Ruo was still completely drained after their session, and almost fainted afterwards. She gently said, “Mum said that you should only do this sort of thing with your husband… does this mean I’m big brother’s wife now?”

Ling Chen smiled, “In my heart, Ruo Ruo has always been my wife.”

“I know… I can feel big brother’s heart beating right now.” Ruo Ruo closed her eyes, enjoying the feeling of her skin pressed against Ling Chen’s, “However, big sister Dia Wu is also big brother’s wife.”

Ling Chen: “……”

Shui Ruo felt the hands roaming around on her body suddenly freeze, and she giggled, “Big brother, now you have two wives, are you not happy?”

Ling Chen was dumbfounded, and at a loss for words, “Ruo Ruo, I…”

“Big brother, I know, you’re afraid of letting down either me or big sister Dia Wu,” Shui Ruo cut him off, slowly saying, “In reality, big brother’s really dumb. Did you forget that during those years when I had the Isrock Disease, big brother did not leave me at all, and put me first… at that time, I wanted to get better so badly, so that I can do so many things with big brother. As long as big brother is happy, I will be happy as well. Now that I’ve completely recovered, big brother is still with me. As long as big brother doesn’t leave me, and as long as big brother is happy, I will be the happiest person in the world. Big brother should be really happy, having found big sister Dia Wu whom he loves so much. I’m also very happy, and I definitely won’t get jealous or sad, or fight with big sister Dia Wu, because I know that even if big brother has big sister Dia Wu, he won’t leave me. If we can bring big sister Dia Wu back someday, I know I’ll definitely get along well with her, and thank her for being so good to big brother back then. I’ll listen to her and take care of big brother with her; the three of us living together… wouldn’t that be perfect?”

Ling Chen: “……”

“I believe that big sister Dia Wu would be willing as well. If that really is big sister Dia Wu, she must have been waiting for such a long time… after all those years, she finally found her big brother Tian Ya; I’m sure she would feel the same way as me. After going through so many things, how could we be like other girls who care about such petty things at the cost of big brother’s unhappiness? Oh, and if big brother likes any other girls, you can bring them over as well. Because as long as big brother likes that girl, it means that that girl is truly good to big brother, so I’ll like her as well.”

Shui Ruo closed her eyes with a blissful smile on her face, looking

even more pure and beautiful than a snow lotus from a celestial mountain. Ling Chen repeatedly blinked, unable to say anything.

Big brother, you suffered so much all those years, so you should have suitable compensation. You should be allowed to have happiness that other men can't have. I will do my best to make big brother become the happiest man in the world. That way, I'll become the happiest girl in the world...

Chapter 221 - Heading To Vermillion Bird City

In the Western side of the world, at an unknown place.

On the screen was the scene of Ling Tian battling the Sword Emperor. The massive waves that were created were not limited to just China, but also attracted the attention of many players outside of China, especially...

“Ling... Tian...”

The woman turned off the screen, and muttered that name. She slowly stood up, and under the light from outside the window illuminated her hair, revealing a red glow.

“I finally found you. This time, I won’t let you escape!”

.....

Forgotten Continent.

It was already quite late, and Xiao Qi, Su’Er, Mu Bing Yao had already gone offline. Yun Meng Xin continued to train in the Plains Region by herself. Because she was quite an independent person, just because someone strong like Ling Tian helped her, she wouldn’t casually relax. Since she was young, she knew that the only person she could rely on was herself. Although she was a

woman, she definitely would not allow this to become an excuse for her to be weak... even if it was in terms of battle power. The profession and weapons Ling Tian gave her provided her with a good foundation, but even so, she wouldn't allow herself to grow complacent.

The Phantasmal Bladedancer class was originally created by a woman, so the skills were all especially beautiful... however, despite being beautiful and aesthetic, the skills were still powerful and deadly. As Yun Meng Xin danced with her twin swords, her body spun and her clothes fluttered in the wind. From afar, it looked as if there was a beautiful celestial dancing. Long Tian Yun stood far away, gazing at the scene. His subordinates did the same, their eyes glued on the elegant figure in the distance. A gust of cold wind blew past, and they shivered as they lowered their heads. This was the woman who the young master had his eyes on; even if they had 100 times their courage, they wouldn't dare to have any thoughts about her.

Clap! Clap! Clap!

Long Tian Yun clapped, as he walked forwards, exclaiming loudly, "So it was you, Meng Xin. I just knew that apart from you, there would not be anyone else in this world who could look so beautiful."

Long Tian Yun's voice caused Yun Meng Xin to frown. She put away her twin swords, and turned around, calmly saying, "Long Tian Yun, it's you."

Naturally, she didn't believe that Long Tian Yun appearing here

was a mere coincidence.

"Meng Xin, you can call me big brother Yun, just like you did when we were younger. It sounds much more affectionate that way." Long Tian Yun said while smiling.

Yun Meng Xin did not reply, instead saying, "It's already late. I need to rest, so if you have anything to say, please say it now."

Yun Meng Xin's coldness caused Long Tian Yun to sigh, "Meng Xin, we haven't seen each other for a while now. I know that you've been consciously avoiding me. Today, I just have some things that I want to ask you; I won't waste too much of your time. You should know that I would never do anything to make you unhappy."

After speaking, he turned around, and signalled his subordinates. The people behind him all immediately retreated far away. Facing Meng Xin's coldness, he instead decided to be calm and gentle. The only person who could make Long Tian Yun like this was Yun Meng Xin. After seeing Yun Meng Xin's beauty, any person would understand this.

Yun Meng Xin knew that Long Tian Yun was someone who never gave up until he got what he wanted. She could already guess what Long Tian Yun wanted to ask her. As such, she calmly asked, "What is it?"

Long Tian Yun nodded, saying, "Meng Xin is extremely intelligent, so I'm sure you can already guess I want to ask...

Indeed, I want to ask something about Ling Tian. Recently, I've heard that Ling Tian and Meng Xin have been quite close, and that he has already decided to join Meng Xin's "Heart's Dream"."

Yun Meng Xin: "....."

"I know Ling Tian came to help Meng Xin reject me, haha..." Long Tian Yun laughed self-mockingly, "Meng Xin must be unhappy with me asking about these things, I believe. However, Meng Xin should know that Ling Tian is now my enemy-many of the things he did went past my bottom-line. Meng Xin should know the sorts of things I absolutely cannot stand. So, I want to know what the relationship is between Meng Xin and Ling Tian? If I moved against Ling Tian, what would be Meng Xin's reaction?"

Yun Meng Xin raised her eyebrows. Long Tian Yun didn't ask her about Ling Tian's background. It seemed that he already understood that she did not know either. After thinking for a short while, she expressionlessly replied, "You can do whatever you want. I'm just a powerless woman who can be ignored; why would my opinion matter? How could I prevent Alliance Master Long from acting against someone?"

Long Tian Yun laughed as he shook his head, "As long as Meng Xin wanted it, countless men would risk their lives for Meng Xin-how can this be called powerless? Alright, since Meng Xin doesn't seem to care too much about this, then I won't need to hold back in dealing with Ling Tian. By the way, Meng Xin, this Ling Tian's background is unknown, and seems to be a shady character-it's best if you're careful around him. This sort of person would never help someone else for free."

“I already know what his purpose is… it’s getting late, so if you don’t have anything to say, I’ll be leaving.” After speaking, she turned, preparing to leave.

Long Tian Yun sighed again, “I know that he’s helping you so that he can have you. If he can help you win your bet, you’ll marry him. And I know that you’ve already agreed…”

Yun Meng Xin stopped walking. A look of confusion appeared on her face, but it quickly disappeared. She replied, “With your intelligence gathering skills, there isn’t anything that can be hidden from you. Since you already know anything, why did you still come to ask?”

Long Tian Yun inhaled, then spoke in a hurt tone, “Ling Tian is indeed quite powerful. I know very well that powerful men tend to attract women. However, Meng Xin, in order to reject me, you actually agreed to such a request of someone whose background isn’t even known… do you really despise me that much?”

“I… don’t have any reason to despise you,” Yun Meng Xin shook her head, “What I want is the freedom to decide my own fate. If Ling Tian is able to help me escape from your chains, then I would agree to anything.”

Long Tian Yun raised his head, and slowly exhaled while looking at the sky, then lowered his head. He spoke as he gazed at Yun Meng Xin from behind, “Meng Xin, I’ve never forced you before… though I may have unintentionally given you some pressure.

However... one day, Meng Xin, you will understand how I feel towards you, and understand that in this world, I am the only one good enough for you. No one else has the qualifications to have you... including Ling Tian. Even if you're not happy about it, I will definitely prevent the 'deal' between you and Ling Tian."

After speaking, Long Tian Yun turned to leave.

Yun Meng Xin stood where she was, then suddenly turned around after a few seconds, saying, "Long Tian Yun, there's one thing that you're right about-powerful men attract women. This applies to me as well. The only men I like are those who are strong and powerful. In my eyes, at least right now, Ling Tian is much more powerful than you-after all, at least half of your 'power' comes from your family. In contrast, Ling Tian's power comes purely from himself. This is something that you cannot deny. If you want me to marry you, your own power needs to be at least greater than his. Using other people, or low-handed tricks will only make me look down on you."

Long Tian Yun stopped walking, and clenched his fists tightly.

The only girl he had ever had his eyes on had actually said that he was far inferior to another man. This caused Long Tian Yun, who had always arrogantly stood above everyone else to experience a sour feeling in his heart. His body tensed, and he didn't reply, continuing to walk into the distance. Yun Meng Xin had also disappeared. She wondered where Long Tian Yun had received this 'information' from...

.....

“Ling Tian, now that the Yan Huang Alliance has issue a kill-on-sight command for you, you have to stay hidden! The Yan Huang Alliance will definitely be keeping an eye on the Revival Centres of major towns and cities, so make sure you disguise yourself if you use Teleport Scrolls!”

As soon as Ling Chen logged on, he was bombarded with a series of warnings and reminders from Yun Feng. Ling Chen casually replied, “Isn’t that as expected? Don’t worry, it’s not that easy to find me. Even if they do, it’s no big deal-it’ll just result in a bunch of their people dying.”

Ling Chen was probably the only person who could be so arrogant towards a kill-on-sight order from the Yan Huang Alliance. Yun Feng continued to remind him, “Just remember to be careful.”

Ling Chen didn’t pay too much mind to Yun Feng’s warnings and reminders. After all, there wasn’t a need to, as he would now be heading towards the Vermillion Bird City in the south, in order to find hope for Xi Ling. From this day, he would head south.

Opening the map of the Forgotten Continent, Ling Chen quickly found where the Vermillion Bird City on the map was. He calculated the distance between the Azure Dragon City and the Vermillion Bird City, then his average speed and playing time per day. If everything went well, he would reach Vermillion Bird City in about a month. After all, the Forgotten Continent was extremely vast, and going from the Azure Dragon City to the Vermillion Bird City would cover a distance of over one third of the entire

Forgotten Continent.

Xi Ling could still hold on for a maximum of two months. Because it was very likely that his arrival at the Vermillion Bird City would be delayed by various factors, realistically, it would take him over a month to reach it. Moreover, he would also have to spend time looking for the Vermillion Bird itself.

Ling Chen closed the map, and started to take action. He first went to the Mayor's Residence, and returned the gold he had borrowed, taking back the Title Deed for the land. He also asked about whether other players had enquired about buying or leasing that piece of land, and he was very satisfied with the Mayor's answer. Afterwards, Ling Chen went to the Auction House to consign a few items, then walked out of Azure Dragon City, called out his Cloud Stepping Mare and rode towards the south.

Chapter 222 - Complete Annihilation

With the map from Qian Gun Gun, it wouldn't be too hard for Ling Chen to reach the Vermillion Bird City. He would avoid the dangerous locations where there were warnings on the map, and choose the fastest route. Because his level was still quite low, it would not be too wise to choose a path where he would encounter mobs of high levelled monsters. Although he couldn't kill them, avoiding them would still be possible.

Although he knew that Long Tian Yun completely and utterly hated him, he didn't know that Long Tian Yun's reasons had increased by one... the reason was because of Meng Xin. Although Xiao Qiu Feng's casual lie had helped him, it had also increased Long Tian Yun's resentment towards him.

The events of the Plains Region were still being discussed madly by the community. Naturally, Ling Tian became the focus of everyone's attention. There had also been a change on the Heaven Rankings-the Sword Emperor had been pushed to second place, whereas Ling Tian now hung at the top. Everyone now knew about the Yan Huang Alliance's kill-on-sight order targeting Ling Tian-wherever one went, they could always see Yan Huang Alliance players investigating Ling Tian's whereabouts. However, for a very long period of time, Ling Tian would be going to a place where ordinary players would not even think of going yet. Moreover, with his anti-espionage skills honed in 'Hell', as long as he didn't allow it, the Yan Huang Alliance would never be able to find him.

The words Shui Ruo had earlier said to him erased all internal conflict in his heart. However, he did not go to find the Sword Emperor to confirm if she was indeed Xuanyuan Dia Wu or not. In

contrast, he decided at least for this period of time, he would temporarily forget about this whole affair... it definitely wasn't because he no longer felt anything towards Dia Wu. Rather... 13 years had passed, and too many things had changed. First of all, he had to make sure that she really was Dia Wu, and know about her situation... if she wasn't Dia Wu, going to meet her would only expose himself. If she was Dia Wu... after 13 years, whether she was still the girl that he loved, as well as whether she still cared about things back then were unknown.

After Meng Xin and the other girls logged on, Ling Chen used his communication device to explain to them his plan about going to the Vermillion Bird City. Yun Meng Xin did not tell him about the things Long Tian Yun had said the previous night, but because of those things, when meeting him, her heartbeat seemed to be a bit different from usual. Ling Chen originally planned to go together with Shui Ruo, but Xiao Qi and the others adamantly refused. Shui Ruo was their only healer and support, so they were unwilling to let her go. In the end, Ling Chen could only give up and go by himself.

After leaving in the morning, Ling Chen continuously headed towards the south, except for a short break at lunchtime. He spent most of the time telling Leng'Er stories. He didn't actually know many stories suitable for children, so in the end, he had to make up quite a few.... Some of them didn't make sense at all, and yet Leng'Er was still very happy with them. Sitting on the Cloud Stepping Mare's head, with her arms around a doll, she stared at him unblinkingly as she listened. After a whole day of telling stories, Ling Chen's mouth was completely parched, and his voice was nearly gone. However, this effort was not in vain, as Leng'Er's favourability towards him had increased by +5.

Ling Chen found out that the greater Leng'Er's favourability towards him was, the harder it was to increase it any further. Who knew how many months or years it would take to reach 50. If he wanted to reach the 100 of the legends... never mind, that was much too far-fetched. Currently, he was seriously considering if he should buy a whole stack of children's books to read to Leng'Er.

When Ling Chen logged on at night, he appeared where he had previously logged off-the Fields Region, the territory of the Furious Scarecrows. He opened the Player Level Rankings, and found that the players below him were rapidly closing in on him. For the entire day, he had been travelling, and had not killed a single monster. This was fine for a day or two, but if he continued going like this, he would be left behind in the Player Level Rankings. Although levels were not too important, he, who had monopolised all of the top rankings, did not want to fall out of the top rankings.

"Looks like every day I'll have to squeeze out a few hours to farm monsters." Ling Chen said to himself.

He opened his stats page and saw that he had 6270 SP. All of this came from the Forest of Bones and the Moon God Ruins. He then looked at his skills, trying to decide what he should spend his SP on.

Before, he spent most of his SP on passive skills. Apart from the Four Corners Star Formation, he had not levelled up any active skills before.

After much deliberation, Ling Chen spent 2000 SP on the War God Technique. A light flashed, and the War God Technique was

levelled up to LV3.

[War God Technique]:

Current Level: LV3, Highest Level, LV10, SP required to upgrade to LV4 3000.

Powerful battle technique originating from War God's soul force, after practice it can greatly increase personal attack strength permanently.

Effect: Strength increases by 3*X points, physical attack strength increased by 7*X (X=Current level).

After levelling up the War God Technique, Ling Chen's base Physical Attack power immediately increased by almost 80 points. The War God Technique's level scaled very well with its power- even in the late stages of the game, it would still be an incredibly powerful passive skill.

With his remaining SP, Ling Chen levelled up three of his active skills. He levelled up Ling Tian Slash and Ling Tian Burst from LV2 to LV5, and the Four Corners Star Formation from LV3 to LV5. In the end, he still had 770SP remaining, so he decided to level up Ling Tian Slash to LV6.

[Ling Tian Slash]:

Current Level: LV6, Highest Level, LV10, SP required to upgrade to LV7: 1000.

Using the weapon in the hand to attack a single enemy, suddenly releasing the strength of the battle soul the instant you hit the enemy dealing devastating damage towards the opponent.

Effect: Single target attack, damage is equal to 260% of regular attacks, critical hit chance+10%, 5% chance of stunning for 3-5 seconds, very big chance of pushing back the target.

MP Consumption: 20

Cooldown Time: 0

[Ling Tian Burst]:

Current Level: LV5, Highest Level, LV10, SP required to upgrade to LV6: 700.

Pouring the battle soul power into the weapon, instantly releasing it when slashing forward creating a power explosion in a small area, attacking all targets in a 6 metre area in front, damage is equal to 150% of regular attacks,

MP Consumption: 30

Cooldown Time: 0

[Four Corners Star Formation]:

Current Level: LV5, Highest Level: LV10, SP required to upgrade to LV6: 1500.

Using the power of the battle soul to sweep the surroundings, instantly forming a formation of destruction in a 10 metre radius around yourself. The raging battle soul power will deal devastating damage towards all targets within the formation. Damage is equal to 500% of regular damage, Critical Hit Rate+10%, 100% chance to trigger knock back

MP Consumption: 100

Cooldown Time: 60 secs.

All three attacks had been significant improved after levelling up. This was especially so for Ling Tian Burst, with its AOE increasing from 5 metres to 6 metres. His skills all required large amounts of SP, but because of his massive gains in SP, it did not take long for him to level up his skills. After levelling up his skills, he only had a pitiful 70SP left. He equipped the Great Ravager and Zephyr Blade, and looked at his overall stats:

Player: Ling Tian

Level: LV18

Profession: Ling Tian Battle Soul

Affiliations: None

Fame Points: 14013

Money: 136,201,782

SP: 70

Primary Attributes:

Strength: 241

Constitution: 41

Agility: 25

Spirit: 35

Innate Attributes:

Luck: 11

Comprehension: 11

HP: 1177

MP: 710

Physical Attack Power: 1088

Magic Attack Power: 70

Physical Defence: 215

Hit: ????

Evasion: 35

Critical Chance: 31%

Pierce Chance: ????

Attack Speed: 100

Movement Speed: 143

Elemental Resistances:

Water: 0%

Fire: 0% (No bonus from Xi Ling)

Wind: 10%

Lightning: 0%

Earth: 5%

Light: 0%

Darkness: 18%.

Skills:

Personal Skills:

[Scan]- cannot be levelled up

[Soul Sacrifice]- LV3

[Heaven Wind Technique]- LV4

[Item Manipulation Technique]- LV4

Profession Skills (Ling Tian Battle Soul):

[War God Technique]- LV3

[Ling Tian Slash]- LV6

[Ling Tian Burst]- LV5

[Four Corners Star Formation]- LV5

[Battle Soul Possession]- LV2.

Equipment Skills:

[Zephyr] [Thousand Kilogram Rend]

Equipment:

Weapons: Right Hand: Great Ravager (Double Handed Blunt Weapon)

Left Hand: Zephyr Blade (Double Handed Sword)

Lunar Chain: Lunar Scourge (Gemini Orb, Sagittarius Orb, Cancer Orb, Heartless Orb, Elementary Defence Crystal, Elementary Speed Crystal, Wind Chasing Stone, Darkness Crystal, Intermediate Strength Crystal, Intermediate Speed Crystal)

Head: Wind Chaser Bandanna

Mask: Normal Mask

Necklace: White Bone Pendant

Earrings: None

Rings: Nimble Ring, Four Spirit Ring

Insignia: Proof of Courage, Consonance Insignia

Upper Body: Dark Chest Plate

Belt: None

Lower Body: Purple Crystal Amour (Lower)

Cloak: Ghost Cloak

Handguard: Skeleton Gloves

Shoes: Wind Riding Boots

Pets:

Xiao Hui (Holy Spirit Beast), Xi Ling (Crimson Spirit), Leng'Er (??)

Ling Tian Battle Soul was purely focused on attack. His Attack Power was now nearly as high as his HP-evidently, this wasn't very balanced. Ling Chen slowly walked into the LV30 Furious Scarecrow territory. A Scarecrow immediately appeared and jumped towards him. Ling Chen casually glanced at its stats, and did not dodge, rather sweeping a Ling Tian Slash towards it with the Great Ravager.

Bam!!

-3399.

The Scarecrow that had not even come close to Ling Tian was sent flying. With his absolute Hit and Pierce, as well as ignoring Defence, LV18 Ling Chen fighting normal LV30 monsters could be described with just two words... complete annihilation!

Chapter 223 - Danger From Above

Ling Chen and Shui Ruo walked hand in hand in the biggest shopping heaven in Beijing. Shui Ruo had ice cream in her hand and was lightly licking it. Ever since she was little, some of her favourite desserts had been chocolate, ice cream and fruit candies. The big shopping bag in Ling Chen's hand was currently filled with such desserts.

In the past, they rarely ever went to crowded places, let alone this place. One reason was because of Shui Ruo's weak body. The other was because they didn't want the Isrock disease to be transmitted to others.

Being the political centre and one of the busiest cities in China, naturally, there would be a variety of ladies in this city. However, there were few that could match Shui Ruo's beauty and everyone who saw her would immediately be stunned by her natural angel-likeness. Her smile was capable of melting any heart. Her pupils glistened like crystals and her tender face was beautiful beyond description. She was almost like an artwork come to life. Her purity and beauty did not belong to this world and the dirty air around her only tainted her.

Along the way, Shui Ruo caught the attention of many. They were all stunned and marvelled by her looks. This meant the jealousy of many girls, whereas Ling Chen received mostly envious looks from the guys. However, they were both very used to this as she had been more beautiful than others even as a child. Even her parents had joked about her beauty being disastrous.

“Brother, I think that’s all I want to buy. Let’s go for a walk, okay?”

“Sure,” he held onto her hand as they walked towards home.

In the distance, a fat guy picked up his phone and directed its camera towards Shui Ruo. A light snap could barely be heard coming from the camera. Ling Chen glared in that direction but continued walking. As the fatty was about to put his phone away, someone came along and knocked his phone out of his hand and onto the ground. He then continued walking and stepping on the phone as he went. Whether it was because of the quality of the phone, or just because the person had impressive leg strength, the phone shattered into pieces where he stood on it.

The fatty was about to act on his fury before the person stopped and turned around to look at him. It was such a hot day but he was wearing a black cap. The fatty was faced with a guy full of ferocious scars on his face. They were a pair of triangular eyes, not unlike that of a viper. With these eyes glaring at him, the fatty couldn’t help but break out in a cold sweat. Almost as if something was on his throat, breathing became uncomfortable.

“Sorry,” The mysterious man apologised with a sharp look, as if he were about stab into the fatty.

“It... it’s okay,” and without even picking up the pieces of his phone, the fatty turned and left as quickly as possible, almost tripping in his attempt to do so.

Watching him, the man let out a cold chuckle before he walked slowly back into the crowd.

Up ahead, a soft hustling sound could be heard. Soon enough, the source of the sound became visible. A wine-red maglev (magnetic levitation) sports car was moving with pretty fast speed. This was supposed to be one of the biggest pedestrians-only streets in Beijing, which meant that cars were not allowed in. A sports car coming in would therefore cause a disturbance. However, in this world, the rules were very flexible and as long as you had enough money and power, they pretty much didn't apply to you. Someone who had the guts to drive a car in here obviously had to be someone of great background. The maglev sports car only supported this. Already being quite advanced, a maglev sports car was considered a luxury item. Even in Beijing, there were only a couple of people rich enough to drive one of those.

The maglev car slowed down and stopped a few metres in front of Ling Chen, where the main entrance was located. Shui Ruo smiled, exclaiming, "Brother look, what a beautiful car!"

"Indeed it is beautiful," Ling Chen nodded and thought to himself if he should buy one for her. But he would have to teach her how to drive first.

Three more luxury business cars followed after the maglev sports car. They were escorting the sports car and covering up the busiest walkway in the city. Everyone started to chatter, wondering who it was that was able to hold such a spectacle.

The doors open and a long and beautiful leg came out of the car

door. It was a girl that appeared, taking off her sunglasses and throwing them back into the car as she stepped out. Most men thereafter diverted their attention away from the car and onto the women that.

She was merely a girl of 16 or 17 years, at the peak of her beauty. Face as tender as snow, bright red lips, a charming nose and a pair of starlight eyes underneath black eyelashes. The combination of all this created a look that could charm hundreds and thousands of men. She had smooth skin, a vibrant appearance, and uniquely lively, youthful aura. The fitting light-blue sleeveless T-shirt she wore revealed her snow-white shoulders, and complimented her S-shaped, curvy body. As for her legs, she wore long, bleached skinny jeans that served well to emphasise their length.

She was only so young, but appeared to have matured already. She possessed such an attractive body and was able to bring out the lust in many men without even thinking about it. A faint smile complimented her lively and youthful charm but couldn't hide her natural noble background.

Coincidentally bumping into Xiao Qi in the real world was a good thing. The Xiao Qi before his eyes was no longer the long robed elementalist he was used to.

Although they could tell that it was Xiao Qi, she may not recognise them as she had never seen them in real world. That being said, Ling Shui Ruo's appearance was just too hard to ignore. If she was to be noticed by this young mistress, it could bring trouble. So he directed Shui Ruo in a different direction and continued walking.

Being able to have the attention of everyone was a usual thing for Princess Xiao. She closed the door and walked towards the shopping entrance. Behind her were several men on full alert, dressed in black suits, black sunglasses and carrying invisible microphones. Their appearance screamed ‘body guard’. Their footsteps behind her made her turn around. With a fierce look that was unfortunately too cute to be threatening, she demanded, “Didn’t I say I only want three men? Why did so many come?!”

“It’s just, we’re worried!”

“Seriously! I am just here to buy some things. All I needed were two men to hold things and one to look after the car. Why did so many people follow me to go shopping? You, and you come with me, the rest of you look after the car and don’t follow me!”

“Yes ma’am,” they didn’t dare defy Princess Xiao’s commands because in the Battle Alliance, the person with the most power was not the guild leader, not the young master but this princess! It was ultimately because both guild master and young master adored this princess. Almost everything she said went, as they didn’t want to wrong her.

And so, the two men who were legendary figures went to be Princess Xiao’s personal movers while the others could only crowd around her beloved car. They guarded it closely, not even allowing a fly to get close.

As she was about to turn around, she caught a glimpse of two

people walking together hand in hand up ahead. Something about them felt familiar to her but she couldn't recall where the feeling came from. Quickly, the back of these two people disappeared into the distance. Not thinking any more about it, she began her shopping day. She did all the shopping for Heart's Dream.

After buying things, Ling Chen and Shui Ruo came straight to this place. This was their favourite and most visited spot. Every time they came here, their mood would become lightened. They looked afar, at the horizon of an endless green field. A place without the noises of the busy city.

Walking on the soft land, the feeling of a fresh breeze came upon them. They walked and walked until Shui Ruo became tired. Ling Chen then sat on the ground with Shui Ruo on his knees, so her clothes didn't become dirty.

"This time we walked for so long until we reached a place we've never been before," Shui Ruo smiled. She could still remember the last time. It was the first time she came here after she recovered. She didn't have to lean on her big brother and walked about 500 metres by herself. Although a bit tired, she was really happy. And this time, she walked much further than she ever did before. She really had fully recovered, even if she was still weaker than the others physically.

Ling Chen looked towards the distance, "In the future, if you'd like, we can walk to anywhere. When I finish the promise with Yun Feng, we can leave Beijing and go to anywhere you want."

He thought to himself at the same time, In the next 10 years we

will find the cure to the disease. As the medical world was becoming more and more advanced, 10 years would be more than enough time to find the cure.

"Wherever brother goes, I'll follow," Shui Ruo declared, sitting in his arms. She smiled lightly, asking, "Hehe, brother, do you think sister Qi Qi is really pretty? When you first saw her, you looked at her secretly for so long."

"Beautiful things always force people to take a couple of looks," Ling Chen smiled.

"So, brother likes sister Qi Qi then?" She blinked her eyes.

"Of course not! It was only admiration," Ling Chen shook his head.

"If brother has an interest, he should pursue it. Otherwise, Sister Qi Qi might get stolen by other boys. If that time comes you will regret it. I support brother 100 percent," Shui Ruo said seriously, again with a light smile.

"Ha, who pushes the person she likes onto other girls?"

As the conversation continued, Ling Chen felt something in the air. This was the feeling of danger around them!

Ling Chen scanned the area quickly. It was a broad field and other than the occasional birds and insects, no one else could be

seen. At last, Ling Chen looked upward and saw something extremely small. So small that it was almost invisible to the naked eye. It was a black dot that was gradually becoming bigger. Around him he could also hear a sound closing in on them.

“Brother? What’s wrong?” Shui Ruo sensed his uneasiness and asked nervously.

“Close your eyes, cover your ears!!” Ling Chen yelled without explanation. Then he picked her up and ran forward as fast as he could.

Chapter 224 - Is This Earth?

Meteor! That was the only thing that Ling Chen could think of. I just came out for a stroll and I managed to encounter such a rare sighting. What is happening?!

The meteor was falling at a high speed – a speed faster than the speed of sound. However, this meteor wasn't falling at a ridiculous rate, otherwise Ling Chen would not have had time to react. Anyway, the meteor itself did not have the explosive power; what was scary was the speed of it when it landed. It was able to create a powerful impact, big enough to affect a large area.

It was impossible to avoid the area of impact because when Ling Chen noticed the meteor, it was positioned directly above him! His sense of danger allowed him a short period of time to escape. During this time, every millisecond was the difference between life and death. In this time frame, he clenched his teeth, held onto Shui Ruo and ran forward with all his might.

The sound from the meteor falling above grew louder and louder until it was almost deafening to the ear. As Ling Chen ran with all his might, the air behind him became scorching. At this moment, Ling Chen jumped and lunged forward onto the ground. He held Shui Ruo and covered her body with his.

This is definitely a meteor, Ling Chen thought to himself.

Boom!!!!!

The huge sound was as terrifying as a landslide or tsunami. Because Ling Chen was protecting Shui Ruo with his arms, he was not able to cover his ears. The sound caused him temporary deafness, where the whole world seemed to be roaring. The ground also shook aggressively and the heat behind him was almost burning him alive. At least the impact didn't affect their bodies, which meant that they were outside of the meteor's range of impact. The temperature of the air was initially unbearable but it quickly cooled down and Ling Chen was relieved that they were lucky to make it out alive. However, he stayed down and continued to protect Shuo Ruo because the high density and energy matter in the meteor could create a second explosion stimulated by the high heat as it hit the ground.

A noise came from the sky. It must have been the sound of the meteor pieces flying around. After such a big impact, it was normal for meteor pieces to be flying around. A few landed on Ling Chen's back, but while none were big enough to cause damage, they were still hot enough to cause pain to him. After a while, everything calmed down and Ling Chen regained his hearing. 'Ruo Ruo, are you ok?" He asked.

"I'm... fine. What just happened brother?" Shui Ruo said. She remained covering her ears but was otherwise perfectly fine due to being under Ling Chen's protection.

"It was a meteor. The gods were probably jealous of you and I and so they threw a giant rock down to play with us," Ling Chen said, chuckling. He picked himself up, his back covered with sweat. Although the danger had passed, he was still fearful. This attack from mother nature... no, mere humans were not capable of detecting and dealing with a meteor. If he hadn't discovered it

early, both Shui Ruo and himself would have died right there. That would have been too tragic.

He picked up Shui Ruo as well as the bag she held on to before. This bag contained the things they had bought from shopping. Shui Ruo cleared the dust on her and said, surprised, “Meteor...? Look, brother!”

Shui Ruo pointed toward the meteor behind Ling Chen. He turned around and the sight was as expected. An endless hole had appeared on the land in front, with heavy white smoke everywhere. Around were pieces of big and small meteor fragments and each piece had smoke coming from them.

He walked towards the big hole. It was 10 to 20 metres in diameter and 5 to 6 metres deep. To Ling Chen’s surprise, there was no meteor in the big hole but rather only a couple pieces of fragments.
Did the meteor explode before crashing into the ground? He looked around and saw a lot of fragments, confirming his theory.

“That was terrifying,” Shui Ruo said, patting her chest for comfort. Before she was confused, but now she felt terrified. If it weren’t for Ling Chen’s extraordinary reaction skills, the results would be unthinkable.

“These things only happen in legends and stories. This is something we would normally never encounter. I’m not sure if we’re lucky or unlucky,” Ling Chen said and held onto Shui Ruo’s hands. “The sound from the big explosion must have travelled for a long distance. There will probably be people here in a short

while. We should go back first and try on our new clothes."

Now that their clothes were dirty, there was no choice but to change. It probably wouldn't take long before the meteor got on the news.

They walked for a short while until Ling Chen stepped on a small meteor fragment and heard it emit a weird sound. Ling Chen stopped in his tracks and picked it up because of his curiosity. It was still hot but not unbearably so. It was rare to find a meteor from the universe on earth and he had only intended to have a look at it but the feel of the rock took him by surprise.

Metal?

If this was metal, then why did it explode when it landed?

He turned it around and saw that the other side of the fragment was glass.

Glass?

Or... Some kind of transparent natural substance?

This glassy material was clearly a residue left from the fragment. But upon closer observation, apart from the side that was shattered, the top was perfectly flat and parallel, just like refined glass in everyday life. Ling Chen flicked the glass hard, which caused his fingers to hurt slightly, but the glass was perfectly fine.

If it was normal glass from earth, or even tempered glass, he was confident that he would have been able to shatter it easily.

“Brother, did you find something?” Shui Ruo asked curiously as she saw him puzzled and intrigued by the piece of meteor.

“Things from outer space cannot be interpreted by common sense. Whatever, let’s just leave it for them scientists to examine it,” Ling Chen said, throwing the piece away. These things from outer space might be elements that are not found on earth, but it didn’t spark his interest enough for him to take a few pieces for keeps. He felt the need to look at the Chinese calendar when he returned home. [TLN: Probably to see if today was an auspicious day or something]

Meteor pieces were everywhere on the ground, some big some small. There were less and less pieces as they walked, clearly a result of the meteor explosion. After walking for a while, they stopped in their tracks because of something.

“Brother look, there’s a person there… I think it’s a girl.”

In front of them was a person lying on their back. She was small in stature, dressed fully in black with white laces on the side of her skirt. Under the skirt were thin legs, almost like tender bamboo shoots in spring. She had a small body, small neck, small arms, small waist and short hair. Looking at her closely… she was obviously still a little girl.

In front of the girl was a decent sized piece of meteor.

Ling Chen was surprised as he remembered scanning the area and seeing no one. How was it possible for a little girl to be here? Maybe she appeared when Ling Chen ducked down to avoid the meteor and was hit by a meteor fragment. She seemed to be unconscious.

“I think she was hit by the meteor. Brother, lets go have a look,” Shui Ruo said worriedly upon seeing the unconscious girl. She dragged Ling Chen with her.

“Little girl, little girl, wake up,” Shui Ruo said, gently shaking the girl. Looking closer at her, she seemed to be around 10 years old and was really cute. She had a tender and perfect face, without any hint of imperfection. Ling Chen crouched next to her, confused. Theoretically, if she was unconscious from being hit by the meteor fragment, it was only reasonable that it had hit her head. However, there was not a scratch on the little girl’s forehead.

Maybe the back of her head? But if that was so, she should be lying face-first on the ground and not like how she was now.

More importantly however, was that the girl was breathing normally, so her injury was probably not life threatening. Ling Chen was relieved, and he said comfortingly to Shui Ruo, “Don’t worry, she should be fine, probably just slightly traumatised from the scare.”

“Ok, maybe we should send her to the hospital. Or should we find her parents first? Is there a phone on her?” Shui Ruo asked calmly.

Shui Ruo searched her pockets but couldn't find anything. She looked at the girl for a short while and said, "Brother, look at this little girl, she's so cute. If only I had a cute little sister like her."

"Ruo Ruo was much cuter when you were little," Ling Chen chuckled.

"Brother look, she's awake!" Shui Ruo exclaimed happily.

Normally, when you wake up from being unconscious, there was a short period of confusion and haziness. But the little girl just stood up as soon as she was awake. A pair of glistening eyes stared directly at them. The way she was looking at them was very weird and Ling Chen did not understand what it meant.

"Little girl, you're awake! You were unconscious before, do you feel any discomfort?" Shui Ruo asked her.

The little girl ignored her and looked at the area around them. She looked slightly confused and worried but also excited. Ling Chen could not figure her out. Then the girl said to them, "So this is earth?"

Shui Ruo "....."

Ling Chen "....."

This was such a good question!

Chapter 225 - Call Me Your Demon Queen Highness

Could it be that this little girl obtained mental injuries from being hit by the meteor pieces?

Ling Chen tapped his jaws, said co-operatively, “Yes, this is the beautiful Earth here, which planet did you come from, little girl?”

“Pu chi…” Shui Ruo could not hold her chuckles.

[TLN: The sound here was supposed to be the small sound of when someone could not hold their laugh, the moment the laugh broke out.]

“Ha!” the little girl who got the answer she wanted immediately became excited. She jumped back a step, proudly place her hands at her hips, looked at the two ‘earthlings’, Ling Chen and Shui Ruo, with her big eyes lit up.

“Oh yay! I finally reached the legendary Earth. Then you must be earthlings? Ha, listen carefully to me, the queen. I, the Demon Queen, am a scary Demon Queen from another planet. I have come to rule over the Earth! All you earthlings must obey me from now onwards, no exceptions, otherwise serious punishment will be given, got that?”

Shui Ruo: “…”

“Big brother…” Ling Shui Ruo turned to Ling Chen quietly for

help, this time, she also started to think this little girl must have obtained mental injuries from the meteor.

"It looks like she's not faking it, this is some serious problem." Ling Chen was speechless. It was such a tragedy that a girl this cute had been rendered such an idiot by the meteor, such a pity... he hoped it was just temporary.

"Hey you! What are you two mumbling about, didn't you hear my words!" Seeing that these earthlings did not react at all to her words, let alone cower in fear, the little girl stomped her little foot, dissatisfied.

"Okay," Ling Chen sighed and twitched his lips, leant forward, said with smile, "So, little girl, how are you going to start ruling the Earth?"

"What little girl!" the little girl was furious with the way he called her, her slim eyebrows even uplifted, "I'm the great Demon Queen, you have to call me Your Demon Queen Highness!! Got it? Your Demon Queen Highness!"

This time, not only Shui Ruo, but Ling Chen was also just a step away from bursting out in laughter.

Becoming the legendary great Demon King, and ruling this world, being respected by all people as the Demon King ...ah ah ah, Ling Chen remembered having this dream when he was still little- rather, most kids all had some sort of dream like this. Could it be that a vicious meteor piece knocked the girl's head into some

fantasy world?

"Big brother, we should ask where her house is." After the laugh that she could not hold in, Shui Ruo started worrying again. She was too kind and could not stand to see people suffer...even if it was a stranger.

Ling Chen nodded, and said friendly, "Then, little girl, you..."

"Call me Your Demon Queen Highness!" the little girl was furious, her small teeth shone, ready to leap onto Ling Chen and bite him.

Ling Chen was defeated, twitched his mouth, and called out with extreme exhaustion, "Then, Your Demon Queen Highness, can you please tell us where your house is located at?"

The little girl who had been called 'Your Demon Queen Highness was finally satisfied. She blinked with her charming eyes, her mouth lifting upwards, said with pride, "Looks like you are still obedient after all. You are the first people I, the Demon Queen, met after arriving to Earth. I, the Demon Queen, shall reward you to be my servants. You have to obey me, otherwise I, the Demon Queen, will punish you...now, go find me a lot of food for me quickly."

Rumble...

Right after the little girl finished, her stomach started to groan.

Shui Ruo: …

The little girl immediately blushed and turned as red as an apple. She stomped awkwardly, “I…I, the Demon Queen, haven’t eaten in days! Didn’t you hear that I am hungry! And you’re still here, not looking for food!”

Seeing the condition of the girl, Shui Ruo was even more worried. It was such a pity that a child this cute had gone nuts; her family must be very worried about her. Shui Ruo took out a chocolate from the bag, opened up the wrapper, and held it in front of the little girl, “Little girl…”

“Call me Your Demon Queen Highness!” the little girl said angrily.

Shui Ruo couldn’t help but smile, said softly, “Okay okay, Your Demon Queen Highness, you seem to be hungry, this is for you to eat.”

The little girl’s round eyes stayed on the chocolate in Shui Ruo’s hand, was confused for a long time, murmured, “It looks weird, black, bizarre, not edible-looking…but it smells so nice…”

The little girl took over the chocolate and took a small bite. The sweetness melted and flowed in her mouth, and the little girl’s eyes brightened in no time. She simply couldn’t wait to stuff the rest into her mouth, her cheeks filled as she chewed with greed. She gobbled ravenously, and her saliva ran like a waterfall from the side of her lips, wetting her collar.

Her devouring of the chocolate made Ling Chen and Shui Ruo shudder. Shui Ruo had to say, “Don’t rush when eating, be careful not to choke.”

The chocolate did not last very long. The little girl swallowed all in just a few bites, and savoured the sweetness in her mouth with her eyes half closed. When she opened her glimmering eyes, there seemed to be stars twinkling in them, “So…this is the food on Earth? It’s too delicious, too, too delicious! Oh my god…it is truly really delicious! Even more delicious then what mummy said!”

A river of saliva leaked out from her mouth when she talked, and she did her best to keep it all in her mouth. However, this was simply impossible-no matter how hard she tried, the saliva wouldn’t stop flowing.

Had she never eaten before in her whole life? This Demon Queen’s saliva was even more terrifying than a flood.

“I still wanna have I still wanna have I still wanna have still wanna have still wanna have wanna have…” the little girl called out impatiently. Ling Chen trembled with fear looking at the speed of her saliva flowing. Shui Ruo quickly got out another bigger piece of chocolate, but it was snatched by the little girl out of her hands before she even had the chance to open the wrapper. The girl did not unwrap the wrapper and popped the entire chocolate into her mouth.

“Ah? Little girl…”

The wrapper was torn apart by the girl's teeth immediately. The little girl did not care about that wrapper that got into her way, but looked at Ling Chen and Shui Ruo alertly at the same time, scared her food would be taken away by them.

"What do we do, big brother?" Shui Ruo asked warily, the little girl's mental injury was apparently quite severe.

Shui Ruo definitely would not abandon this little girl because of her personality. Ling Chen thought for a while, then gave in, "We can only ask her where she lives now...if she's going insist on she's from another planet, then we can only bring her to the police, and let the police help her way home then."

"Mmm." Shui Ruo thought for a while, and agreed it was the only thing they could do.

The second piece was finished quickly, and the little girl spat out the bits of the wrapper bit by bit, spraying saliva all over Ling Chen. Her gaze fell onto the shopping bag Ling Chen held in his hands. She licked her lips with her little pink tongue, her saliva dripping as she pointed to the bag, "Wanna have wanna have... hand over all the food in that bag."

"Eating too much chocolate isn't good for your teeth." Ling Chen said smilingly as he hid the bag behind him.

Seeing that the earthling did not obey her commands, and didn't give her the delicious food, the 'great Demon Queen' was furious.

She clawed at him, as if she wanted to rip him apart, “How could you disobey me! Hand over the yummy food quickly, otherwise I, the Demon Queen, will punish you!”

Ling Chen grinned, not changing his smile, said with patience, “Little girl, it’s okay if you want to eat chocolate, but you have to answer a few questions first...now, tell me first, where do you live?”

“What little girl! Call me Your Demon Queen Highness!!” the little girl’s cheeks welled with anger, and she stomped her little foot hard, “You are my, the Demon Queen’s servant, you have no right to question your queen! Hand over the yummy food quickly, otherwise, otherwise...I, the Demon Queen, will be angry!”

“I’m not giving you any if you don’t answer my question-not even if you get angry.” Ling Chen raised the bag over his head. This way, even if the little girl really jumped on him, she wouldn’t be able to reach it.

Shui Ruo covered her mouth with one hand and couldn’t hold in her giggles anymore.

“Ah ah ah ah ah! I, the Demon Queen, am really angry!” the little girl was so angry that she waved her hands around, and widened her eyes, “Mummy was right, the earthlings will obey only if the most scary punishment is given...hmm, I didn’t want to punish you before because I, the Demon Queen, am very kind, but now you’ve made me angry...”

The little girl straightened herself, lifted her right hand so that her palm faced Ling Chen, then said with anger, “This is the punishment for not obeying me, the Demon Queen...watch how mighty I am, transform into a little gray bunny!”

Shui Ruo: “...”

One second...two seconds...three seconds...

A gush of wind swept past, then...nothing happened.

“Eeeeeeeeeeee??” the little girl’s mouth was wide open, astonished, she stared at Ling Chen, who did not turn into a bunny.

“You-you-you-you why didn’t you turn into a little gray bunny?”

Ling Chen felt that he was going to have a breakdown. Was the little girl’s brain injured when she was hit by the meteor pieces? Or was she already crazy with some sort of disease before then?

“No, no, I must have made a mistake with my magic. That’s why.” The little girl comforted herself, then took a small step back, lifted her arm again, palm towards Ling Chen, “Watch how mighty I am...transform into a little gray bunny!!”

Another gust of wind blew past, but still, nothing happened...it would be strange if something really happened.

The little girl completely froze, and panicked, not knowing what to do, “Why did this happen...ahahahah, why did my magic disappear? Disappeared, disappeared...it really disappeared...what do I do what do I do, how can I rule Earth without magic? I can’t, and maybe...maybe I’ll have to be bullied by the earthlings, wuuu.. what do I do what do I do...”

As she mumbled, her eyes became misty, as if tears would burst out at any second.

Chapter 226 - Taking The Demon Queen Home

Hearing the young girl's shouting, Ling Chen and Shui Ruo were both speechless. This little girl seemed to be lost in her delusions. Ling Chen continuously tried to find if there were any fragments of the meteor embedded in her head, or if there were any wounds on her head. However, it didn't seem like she was hurt at all; she was just covered in dirt and dust.

"I don't believe it I don't believe it. My magic is so powerful, so how can it suddenly disappear. It must be because I'm too hungry so I can't use my magic... ah..."

"Turn into a hedgehog!"

"Turn into a little pig!"

"Turn into a cat!"

"Turn into a kangaroo..."

"Turn into... wuu..."

After continuously trying so many times, Ling Chen was still standing there, completely fine. The magicless Demon Queen sat on the ground, crying and wailing in fear and self-pity. Without her magic, how could she conquer the earth... maybe she would

even be bullied by the earthlings... without her magic, no one would obey her commands, and no one would give her anything to eat. She would forever be hungry, without anywhere to sleep or shower... every day, she would be by herself, sleeping on the cold and dirty ground... maybe even mummy wouldn't want her anymore...

The more she thought, the more scared the little girl felt, and the louder she cried. Shui Ruo quickly went to comfort her, "Little sister, don't cry. Here, have some chocolate."

The little girl took the chocolate, and put it in her mouth, eating it while crying. In just a while, she finished eating it, and carried on crying. Soon, her entire face was covered with her tears. Shui Ruo didn't know how to comfort her, and looked to Ling Chen for support. In response, Ling Chen could only shrug his shoulders...

After crying for a long time without being comforted, the little girl stopped crying. She looked up, with a few tears still in her eyes, while wiping snot from her nose, and said in a pitiful little voice, "Can... can I please have another block of chocolate..."

After finding out that she had lost her magic, the Demon Queen was no longer as domineering, instead appealing to Ling Chen and Shui Ruo's pity.

The little girl currently could not look any more pitiful. Her cheeks were bright red from crying, and her eyes were still teary. She continuously sniffled, as if she had suffered some sort of injustice.

Ling Chen deeply sighed in his heart... even if someone with a stone heart saw this sight, they probably wouldn't be able to resist hugging her and comforting her.

Ling Shui Ruo was taken down in one hit by this tactic. She quickly took out another block of chocolate, and placed it in the little girl's hands, "Look, here's another block of chocolate. Little sister, please don't cry anymore. Where is your home? Do you want us to take you home?"

The little girl quickly took the block of chocolate, hurriedly taking the wrapping off and stuffing it into her mouth. As she ate, she looked up, and weakly said, "You have to address me as Demon Queen Highness."

Ruo Ruo shook her head and laughed, "Alright, alright, your Demon Queen Highness, where is your home? Do you want us to take you home?"

"No way, no way!" The little girl furiously shook her head, "It wasn't easy for me to escape from home, I don't want to go back... I want to conquer the earth, and then take many earthlings to save my..... before conquering the earth, I don't want to go back!"

My goodness... Ling Chen knocked on his head, then held Shui Ruo's hand, "Ruo Ruo, let's go home now. After a while, there should be many people coming here. If we stay here, then we'll be questioned for a long time about this meteor."

After hearing that they were going to leave, the little girl stood up with a “woosh”, and grabbed onto Shui Ruo’s clothes, “N…No, you can’t go! You’re my servants… you can’t just leave me by myself!”

“Little sister, stop playing around and quickly go home.” Ling Chen said as he patted her head.

After being patted on the head by him, the little jumped far away, as if struck by lightning, her expression furious, “Y-y-y-you… you patted my head… mummy said that before I become an adult, I can’t let any man touch me, but you… you… patted my head…. Evil evil evil evil! I… I’m definitely going to punish you…”

“Alright then!” Ling Chen evilly smiled, “Let’s see you try to punish me!”

The little girl furiously stretched out her hand, then started crying again, “You… you’re bullying me! Bullying me… you’re one of those evil… evil humans that mummy told me about… a super evil baddy!!”

The super evil baddy grinned and stretched out his hands, shaking them around as he said, “That’s right! I’m a super super evil baddy. Now that this little Demon Queen has fallen into my hands… hahaha… heheheheh…”

“Waaa!” Seeing Ling Chen act in such a sinister way, the little girl yelled out, and hid behind Shui Ruo like a frightened little rabbit. After losing her magic, the little Demon Queen seemed to have lost

all of her dignity as well, being frightened so much by a puny little human.

Shui Ruo giggled, and held the little girl's hand, "Don't be afraid, big brother's just playing around. He's actually a very good person."

"He... He's a baddy!" Perhaps it was because of the aura Shui Ruo gave off, but the little girl did not object at all to her hand being hand by Shui Ruo. She tearfully looked at Shui Ruo saying, "He's... he's a bad person, and he doesn't obey my commands. You'll definitely obey my commands, right? I... This Demon Queen promises you that once I conquer the earth, I will reward you, and give you lots and lots and lots of yummy things to eat, alright?"

Shui Ruo smiled, and nodded, "Alright."

Hearing this, the little girl cheered up, "Then... take me home, and give me food, and a place to sleep and wash, alright? This Demon Queen doesn't have any magic anymore, and is so, so hungry..."

"Rumble..." The little girl's stomach let out a large rumble, and her cheeks reddened. This Demon Queen's stomach had let out such a pitiful sound in front of the humans she was supposed to conquer... this was incredibly embarrassing.

"Alright, so tell me, where is your home? Where are your parents?" Shui Ruo gently asked.

“Wuu… Can I not say? Mummy said that these are all secrets, and I can’t tell them to humans, especially not bad ones.” The little girl spoke as she wiped away her tears and sniffled. To her, this beautiful and gentle older sister in front of her was her last hope.

“It’s okay, I’m not a bad person, so you can tell me.” Shui Ruo calmly smiled.

“If I tell you, will you give me lots of yummy things to eat, as well as a place to sleep and take baths?” The little girl anxiously asked, forgetting to call herself ‘This Demon Queen’.

Shui Ruo thought for a while, then nodded, “Mhmm!”

As such, the little girl started to answer their question “I come from a star called the Xiya Star. When our star was attacked, my daddy died and mummy sent me to earth. She told me to conquer earth and to become the overlord of earth. Then, I can bring many earthlings to save Xiya Star.”

Ling Chen: “……”

Shui Ruo: “……”

Ai, this little kid’s imagination is quite extraordinary. Ling Chen was completely speechless.

“Alright, alright, got it.” Shui Ruo was probably feeling the same way as Ling Chen. However, seeing the teary-eyed little girl, Shui

Ruo could not help but feel compassionate for her. She was probably confused because of the physical and mental trauma she just went through. In this sort of situation, unless she recovered, it would be impossible to find her family. Sending her off with the police would also cause Shui Ruo to feel worried about her, so she turned to Ling Chen and asked, “Big brother, can we take her home for now? She seems really hungry... and her clothes are completely dirty.”

Ling Chen smiled. This reminded him of that year, when he was ‘found’ by Shui Ruo, and taken home with her. As such, he didn’t have any reason to reject this strange girl, “Alright, let’s take her home for now then. As for finding her parents, leave that to me. I’ll have the information by sunset.”

With the information-gathering skills of his subordinates, it would be incredibly easy to find the parents of a lost child.

Thus, Ling Chen and Shui Ruo took this ‘Demon Queen from a distant star’ back to their home.

.....

“Another bowl!”

“I want more!”

“I still want more!”

I still want some more…”

Ding ding clang clang clang…

Ling Chen and Shui Ruo stared in awe at the little girl who was single-handedly devouring all of the food on the table. The little girl was holding a bowl that was as big as her face in front of her own face, and the chopsticks in her other hand moved at lightning speed. All that could be heard was the sound of the chopsticks ringing out against the bowl, as well as food being rapidly chewed and swallowed. In front of her, there were three big, empty bowls… indeed, they were completely empty-they were cleaned out so thoroughly that it was as if they had been washed. Nothing was left.

Dong! The little girl placed the big bowl on the table. Like all the other bowls, this bowl had been completely picked clean by the little girl. She licked her lips, and yelled out, “Another bowl!”

Clack… the chopsticks in Ling Chen’s hand fell to the table.

Chapter 227 - Tian Tian

The so-called ‘Demon Queen from a distant star’ ate a whole six-person meal as her first meal in this house. Ling Chen was shocked. She finally put down the bowl after finishing Ling Chen’s and Shui Ruo’s share, wiped her mouth and then satisfyingly patted her stomach. She called out comfortably, “Wow, I’m finally full, so full…the food on Earth is surprisingly delicious. It is indeed even more delicious than what mummy said.”

Staring at the plates and bowls scattered before the little girl, Ling Chen and Shui Ruo were speechless.

Shui Ruo stood up, walked to the girl and asked hesitantly, “You…Does your belly feel bloated or uncomfortable anywhere?”

Ling Chen’s gaze settled on the girl’s stomach and he did not see any signs of bulging even though the girl had just eaten an unbelievable amount of food. His gaze travelled downward until he was looking under the table and yet he still had not found any trace of food waste. Ling Chen scratched his head… What was happening? Could it be that this girl’s stomach was a bottomless pit? Where did all that food go?

“No no, it’s very comfy, so comfy that I want to sleep. You gave me such yummy food, and made me very full. Great rewards will be given to you when I, the demon king, rule the Earth. As for that big bad guy…humph, this Demon Queen can consider not punishing him.”

Ling Chen's lips twitched and his ear suddenly moved. An extremely soft sound of glass shattering was heard. Ling Chen immediately stood up and walked to the balcony. Shui Ruo smiled lightly and watched as he walked to the balcony but did not follow. She smiled at the girl and said softly, "Little girl, you still haven't told me your name. What is your name?"

The little girl puffed out her cheeks. The great demon king that was full showed her domineering side again, "I said don't call me little girl but 'Your Demon Queen Highness'! Mummy said all of the humans on Earth should call me Your Demon Queen Highness."

"Alright, alright you are the most powerful Demon Queen. But isn't your magic gone now? You are not the Demon Queen if it has disappeared, which means you can't be called Your Demon Queen Highness then," Shui Ruo said with a smile.

The little girl's small face dropped. She had tried to do magic after she was full earlier but nothing happened. This nearly made her tears come out again.

"But...But..."

"Don't worry. When your magic comes back someday, you can be 'Your Demon Queen Highness' again but until then, big sister will only call you by your name when you are not the Demon Queen. So tell big sister, what is your name?"

Not many could resist Shui Ruo's gentleness. She was the type of

girl that could easily make anyone want to be her friend. Even Ling Chen, who had killed many people back then, had been enchanted by her. The little girl before Shui Ruo would naturally want to rely on and befriend her. So after hearing her words, she curled her lips and gave her name, “My name, is Tian Tian.”

“Tian Tian. That’s a very cute name,” Shui Ruo chuckled but she was uncertain. Was that her real name, or the name in her fantasy world?

“But only you can call me this name. That big bad guy cannot! He has to call me Your Demon Queen Highness!” The vengeful demon king majesty said seriously.

“Okay okay. Come, Tian Tian, big sister will take you to get changed. The clothes you’re wearing are all dirty.”

“But mummy said I can’t change out of my clothes because they can protect me…”

“It doesn’t matter, your mummy is not with you right now so you have to listen to big sister, okay?”

“Big sister?” Tian Tian was a bit confused with this form of calling. It seemed that she had not called anyone ‘big sister’ before.

“Yes, because I’m older than Tian Tian, so Tian Tian has to call me big sister. You have to be an obedient, good child and then big sister and your mummy will like you even better,” Shui Ruo said

while caressing her hair. Her hair was short but it was smooth. Although she may have gotten mentally confused because of her head injury, she was still a very cute girl.

"Big sis? Big sis…un!"

On the balcony.

"Found it yet?" Ling Chen softly asked the black shadow kneeling before him.

The black shadow answered quickly and softly, "No, not even similar ones. Every registered lost child in the nearby area was also searched. There was nothing of the girl on the photo that you gave us."

"Nothing?" Ling Chen frowned. The mentally confused little girl was not too cute that to find another similar one would be impossible, so the search job should not have been too hard. Why was there nothing?

"Expand the area to the whole of Beijing, including the nearby suburbs. Answers are to be given to me tomorrow morning," Ling Chen said.

The black shadow nodded, swayed a bit and disappeared into the night like a ghost.

That the little girl's information could not be found with their set

of skills was unexpected and odd. Could it be that this child just arrived from other places?

Ling Chen was wondering this as Shui Ruo happened to walk out of the room. She got close to him and in a whisper, “Found her parents? Oh, and she told me just then, her name’s Tian Tian.”

“Tian Tian? That’s more like a girl’s name,” Ling Chen laughed then shook his head, “It appears that we have to let her stay tonight. We can do nothing but wait until information about where she lives is found.”

Shui Ruo was not even a little bit disappointed at the news. In fact, she was slightly joyful as she said, “It’s okay. I actually wanted to stay with this cute little girl for a bit longer. Hehe, I even let her change into new clothes. They’re the ones I wore when I was little. Tian Tian, quick, come out.”

Ling Chen could understand Shui Ruo’s feelings completely. Everyone was scared of her and rejected her during those years when she was with the disease. No one except for Ling Chen had dared to approach her. This meant she had no friends or companions apart from Ling Chen. She must be enjoying herself now that there was a little girl for her to take care of.

Responding to Shui Ruo’s call, a small, snow-white figure hesitated, her steps sheepish as she walked out of the room.

Tian Tian had gotten rid of her black dress with soil and dirt all over and was now wearing a dress. It was a very cute, white,

princess dress and she held the skirt carefully in her hands when she walked out that it seemed like she was scared to stain her new dress anywhere. She didn't have any shoes on and her two smooth, small feet tapped the floor, every toe like little pearls.

"Wow! Tian Tian is so pretty! Brother look, Tian Tian really is pretty!" Shui Ruo was happily surprised as she said this. The clothes that she had let Tian Tian changed into provided a stark contrast to the depressing black outfit she had on before. White seemed to suit Tian Tian, showcasing a purer side of her. Her appearance was definitely improved now that she had changed and her disorderly hair was groomed as well. Every inch of skin shown was so fair and smooth that it shone.

Fine-waxing-moon-like eyebrows, meticulous eyelashes, starry-bright-like eyes, finely carved nose, cherry-like small lips...these phases used to describe the beauty of women could all be applied to little Tian Tian who was supposedly only ten or so years old. Her starry eyes with filled with tension as she held the brim of her skirt. All previous signs of the 'Demon Queen' before were gone. Ling Chen could not stop looking and he felt a sudden unwillingness to send the little girl away. Everyone liked pretty things and it would be such a joy to keep a cute girl like this around everyday.

Of course, this thought only appeared for a moment before he then quelled it. He did not forget that this girl was still mentally confused, insisting on calling herself a Demon Queen. This was just an illusion caused by a change of clothes and the tension in her eyes showed no promise that she wouldn't do anything if he kept her in the house.

“Yeah, she’s very pretty,” Ling Chen nodded, stating the fact.

“Tian Tian, do you like the clothes now?” Shui Ruo bent down, asked the little beauty gently.

“Yeah, I like it, it’s a really pretty dress,” The little Tian Tian, who didn’t want to change her clothes because of her mother’s words before was filled with joy now. Even her steps were full of caution, scared that she was of dirtying her new, beautiful dress. Looking at the pretty little Tian Tian, Shui Ruo was filled within with a sense of achievement.

“That’s good then. Tian Tian, let’s go take a shower now, okay?”

“En, yes yes.” Tian Tian’s eyes had lit up upon hearing the word ‘shower’. It appeared she liked showering very much.

This little girl had become so obedient in such a short time, even calling Shui Ruo ‘big sister’. She was actually quite a cute and obedient girl. Ling Chen quickly put a gentle smile on his face, ready to praise Tian Tian, “Little Tian Tian…”

“What ‘little Tian Tian’! Call me ‘Your Highness’! It’s Your Highness!” The little girl stared at him, her lips curled and her expression furious.

“…Why can your ‘big sister’ call you Tian Tian, but I can’t?” Ling Chen asked gloomily.

“Because big sister is a good person. You are the big bad guy! You are my servant and if you disobey me, or even bully me, I…I…wait until I get my magic back, I will surely punish you, humph!”

Ling Chen: ⊙﹏⊙b…

Shui Ruo giggled and took Tian Tian’s small hands, “Okay, big brother really isn’t a bad guy. Let’s go take a shower first.”

The two beauties walked to the bathroom hand in hand. Usually, it was often Ling Chen that carried Shui Ruo into the bathroom. Ling Chen couldn’t help but think that the having Tian Tian here now had affected his and Shui Ruo’s close relationship. It was better to send her off tomorrow.

“By the way, big brother, the clothes that Tian Tian changed out of are still in the room. Can you help me to bring it to the balcony?” Shui Ruo turned and shouted.

Ling Chen walked into the room and picked up the dress that Tian Tian was wearing before. He was surprised when he touched it because it was at least three times thicker than normal dresses. The thickness of it seemed unsuitable for this heat. Ling Chenq quickly dismissed his confusion but it came back again when he picked the dress up. He had expected a dress this thick to have significantly more weight than this, but as it were, it was as if he was just holding a thin-layered veil.

This kind of thickness with only this kind of weight… Just what kind of material was this made of? In confusion, Ling Chen

brought the dress to his eyes for a closer observation. On the surface, it just appeared to be some kind of delicate cloth, but he had never heard of a cloth that was this light.

Wanting to know what it was made of, he pulled experimentally at a corner, trying to tear the material.

His strength was far beyond ordinary people so force he applied to rip the fabric was not small, but the cloth in his hands didn't show a single sign of deformity, let alone a single tear. Ling Chen frowned, gripped two sides of the cloth, and used his full strength to tear again.

Seeing that the dress was still in good condition, Ling Chen was completely in shock.

Even steel wouldn't hold under his full strength and yet this dress did not tear apart! Not even a trace of damage!

Chapter 228 - Black Night, Su Er (1)

This kind of thickness and weight, with an extraordinarily scary durability...what material was used to make this dress?

Come to think of it, he had never heard of clothing made of this kind of material in the world before-could it really be that this girl came from a distant star?

Ling Chen shook his head and threw the ridiculous thought away. However, the material of the dress really was strange-could it be some high tech secret product? If that was what it was, the girl must have an incredibly special background to be wearing such clothing.

He walked into the living room after he placed the dress and shoes onto the balcony. The splashing sound of water and the quiet voices of the two girls could be heard from the living room. Ling Chen sat onto the sofa, turned the television on, and his attention was immediately drawn to the news...

The image on the TV was the place that he and Shui Ruo went to that afternoon, with the same huge pit and the rocks all over the ground. The only thing that was different was that a lot of people wearing biohazard clothing appeared on the screen.

The news of a meteor falling from the sky was sure to be on the news in no time. Ling Chen thought quietly, then kept watching... although he wasn’t really interested.

“At five forty-five in the afternoon a meteor suddenly crashed into the fields at the east suburbs of Beijing. A huge sound was heard when it landed, resulting in the scene behind me. Let us interview Professor Wang from the University of Beijing about the source of this meteor… Professor Wang, what do we know about this meteor?”

“From this meteor pit’s size and depth, this meteor’s falling speed was much slower than that of a normal meteor’s. The speed at which it entered the earth’s atmosphere was also much slower than that of a normal meteor’s. This point itself is enough to prove that this was actually not a ‘meteor’”

“Not a ‘meteor’? Then what is it exactly?”

“We have yet to identify what it is made of, but we have found a large amount of glassy substance within it that is not found in normal meteors. Moreover, we found a fragment to support this theory. You see, this fragment must have been inside the inner parts of the meteor, which is why it was not damaged. It seems to be metallic, but is much lighter than most metals, and there are two words carved into it.”

Ling Chen’s body subconsciously leant forward, his eyes glued to the screen.

Xi…Ya…

“I come from a star called the Xiya Star. When our star was attacked, my daddy died and mummy sent me to earth…”

Ling Chen: “…”

The scenes from the afternoon replayed themselves in his mind… the meteor fell and exploded. Then, the earth gained a girl who called herself the “Demon Queen”. Then…

Then…

Ling Chen turned and looked towards the bathroom, from which the sound of splashing could be heard. He went silent for a while, then stood up, walked to the balcony. He took Tian Tian’s dress back into the room, found a pair of scissors, and cut with all his strength.

The dress seemed so light that it would be easily damaged by anything. And yet, the result of Ling Chen trying to cut it with a pair of scissors resulted in the blades of the scissors bending and curling…

I don’t believe this…

Ling Chen took a lighter, and tried to set fire to the dress. However, no matter what he tried, the dress simply would not catch fire. He threw the lighter away, and carefully inspected the dress. Surprisingly, the dress had not been damaged in the slightest.

He thought of the girl who wore the dress, completely unharmed,

in the midst of all the fragments of the meteor from the explosion. Ling Chen was completely silent.

It seemed that he had run into something incredible.

After her shower, the little Tian Tian was like a delicate doll, looking incredibly cute and reinvigorated. The scene of Shui Ruo leading the little Tian Tian out made them look like two fairies walking out of a painting, completely stunning Ling Chen.

The little Tian Tian who just arrived at their home was curious about everything...but didn't seem to be too amazed by anything. She could even name every single piece of technology.

"So this is a television on Earth? It's so small, the one in my house is thisss big."

"The lights are beautiful! Do all lights on earth look like that?"

"Big sis, big sis! Do you have video games, I wanna play! Mummy said that there must be a lot of video games on earth that we don't have."

The Demon Queen toured around every corner of the house in no time, as if looking at her new home. Shui Ruo accompanied her through every room with patience, leaving Ling Chen silent as he watched these two beauties walking past him countless times. At last, the little Tian Tian finally quietened down. Holding a gaming controller while blinking furiously, she began to excitedly play

video games... however gradually, her voice rose up again, becoming even louder than the video game itself.

Could it be that this little girl has decided to keep staying here even if I don't let her!?

Unfortunately, Ling Chen was proven to be correct. This Demon Queen who lost her magic held onto Ling Shui Ruo and had decided to stay here no matter what...the plan to rule Earth could wait until the day that her magic came back.

"Ruo Ruo, just a question...did Tian Tian ever tell you anything about her dress?" Seeing that the little Tian Tian was completely absorbed in playing the video game while shouting, Ling Chen pulled Shui Ruo over and asked her quietly.

"Dress? Big brother, why do you ask? Hmm, when I helped Tian Tian change her clothes, she said...her mummy told her to never take off her dress, because that dress can protect her." Shui Ruo thought, then answered.

Ling Chen: "..."

"Big brother, is there anything wrong with her dress?" Shui Ruo asked. She wondered why Ling Chen had suddenly brought up the dress.

Ling Chen nodded, then immediately shook his head, "There is indeed something wrong with her dress-it's very thick, but

unexpectedly light, and...let's put that aside, we'll see if we can find her family tomorrow."

If they couldn't find them tomorrow, then it really would be a big problem.

"I noticed that too, her dress really is strange, it might be made from a very special material. Big brother, if we can't find Tian Tian's family, what do we do?" Shui Ruo was a bit worried, but was still hopeful that they could quickly reunite Tian Tian with her family.

Shui Ruo's gaze told Ling Chen what she thought in her heart. Ling Chen smiled, "If we can find them that would be good; but even if we can't, she can stay with us, and Ruo Ruo will have a little sister."

"En!" Shui Ruo nodded vigorously. She looked toward Tian Tian and said quietly, "Big brother, although we've only known each other for a short time, but I realize that I have come to like Tian Tian more and more. It's like hugging an incredibly adorable doll when hugging her."

"Don't forget, she's the Demon Queen who's going to rule the Earth." Ling Chen laughed.

"Hehe..." Shui Ruo started giggling too.

As night fell, little Tian Tian became tired from playing, and

decided that it was time to sleep. So…

“Wow! So this is a bed on earth! It’s so soft, so comfortable; it’s like lying on top of many many petals!” Tian Tian threw herself onto the bed, comfortably enjoying the softness she had never enjoyed before. She changed her position non-stop, lying face up, face down, lying on her side, rolling back and forth…it was as if she wanted to become part of the bed.

Soon, a problem appeared.

“I don’t wanna sleep alone! Big sis, big sis, sleep with me. If I sleep alone, I’ll…I’ll be really scared. Big sis will you sleep with me, please?”

Shui Ruo and Ling Chen had been sleeping on the same bed every day for all these years, and Shui Ruo could only fall asleep by Ling Chen’s side. Shui Ruo certainly wouldn’t agree to be separated from Ling Chen. She tidied up the room for little Tian Tian, told her to sleep in this room, and Shui Ruo would sleep with Ling Chen in the room next door. The Demon Queen who was going to rule the earth started panicking all of a sudden and held onto Shui Ruo’s arms tightly, not letting her leave.

“Tian Tian is old enough now, you have to be brave and sleep alone, okay?” Shui Ruo comforted her softly.

“No no NO!” little Tian Tian shook her head with all her might, her two little hands refusing to let go of Shui Ruo, “Mummy always stayed with me before, and it was always dark on the way to

earth, I am really really scared…big sis, you treat Tian Tian the best, sleep with me pleaaseee? I…I'll still call you big sis after I rule the Earth in the future, okay?"

The little Tian Tian's eyes already turned misty while she was still talking. If Shui Ruo didn't agree, she definitely would start crying. Soft-hearted as she was, Shui Ruo couldn't resist little Tian Tian's pitiful attack and quickly promised her, "Okay okay, big sis will sleep with Tian Tian tonight…but big sis usually sleeps with big brother, so us three will sleep together, okay?"

Three people, sleeping on the same bed…in the room next door, Ling Chen, who had great hearing, found himself imagining something unacceptable, then squashed the thought immediately. He had no qualms with Shui Ruo's arrangement, but little Tian Tian was concerned, "But…But mummy said, my body cannot be touched by men before I grow up. I can't sleep on the same bed as men, so big sis, only you sleep with me, not the big bad guy, okay?"

Shui Ruo smiled, comforted, "It's okay, Tian Tian's mummy said those things she was afraid Tian Tian will meet some bad people, but big brother really isn't a bad person. The dinner that Tian Tian had tonight was all made by big brother. Tian Tian really liked it, didn't you? Big brother will keep making yummy food for Tian Tian in the future, so he can't be a bad person. When big sis is sleeping, big sis needs to be with big brother. If Tian Tian doesn't want to be with big brother, then big sis cannot be with Tian Tian. Us three together, big brother and I, we will protect Tian Tian together."

It was always hard for people to reject Shui Ruo's words, and

little Tian Tian could not help but forget her mummy's warning. The more she thought about Shui Ruo's words, the more they made sense to her, so she nodded with tears still in her eyes, "Then…it's a promise, big sis has to protect me."

Chapter 229 - Black Night, Su Er (2)

Ling Chen lay on the bed, staring at the ceiling. He had not been able to fall asleep for quite some time. He looked beside him, and saw a pair of bright eyes flickering in the darkness with alertness... little Tian Tian was still completely awake, completely on her guard against Ling Chen. It was as if she believed that he would eat her during the night.

Ling Chen was on the outside, Shui Ruo was in the middle, and Tian Tian was protected within Shui Ruo's embrace. Tian Tian grasped onto Shui Ruo, hiding within her arms. She would occasionally peek at Ling Chen warily, as if he was a big grey wolf that was going to eat her. Shui Ruo hugged Tian Tian with one arm and rested her back against Ling Chen's chest. Shui Ruo was the first one to fall asleep, and it was the first time in many, many years that she had fallen asleep with her back towards her big brother. Ling Chen was feeling quite down... the addition of this extra little beauty should have been something that made him happy, but because she was here, he couldn't hug Shui Ruo like normal, he couldn't whisper into her ear, let alone continue on with the 'business' from yesterday.

Plus, he had to endure being stared at by this little girl, who was staring with all her might.

If they couldn't find her parents, could it be that she would keep staying with them, and this sort of situation would happen every night...? Ling Chen started to have a headache.

Since he couldn't fall asleep, Ling Chen decided to spend his time

within the world of Mystic Moon.

"Ding...welcome to the world of Mystic Moon."

Ling Chen appeared in the scarecrow territory. He took out his weapons and charged towards a mob of scarecrows. This was a great place to gain EXP, and although there were many scarecrows, he didn't feel much pressure as their attack pattern was the same every time, and neither were they very mobile. The entire mob was decimated by Ling Chen with one swing from each weapon. It wouldn't take him very long to reach LV19-after all, a LV18 player killing LV30 monsters was sure to gain much EXP in a short period of time. He looked at his EXP bar, and decided to spend a few hours farming until he reached LV19, then head south.

"Master, tell me a story."

When he logged on, Leng'Er also came out from the Pet Dimension. She looked at him fighting the monsters, and still made the request regardless. However, she didn't seem like she was going to help him fight at all.

If he knew that Leng'Er would become addicted to listening to stories, Ling Chen under no circumstances would have agreed to tell her stories from the beginning, even if he was threatened with death. Seeing Leng'Er's gaze, he sighed, and reluctantly started to tell her a story while farming the scarecrows.

"Far, far away, there was a star called the Xiya star. The ancestors of that star came from a place on earth called China.

Because they possessed special magic, they moved to the Xiya planet, and brought a lot of technology from earth with them. One day, the Xiya star was attacked, and many people died. In order to protect her daughter, the queen of Xiya star sent her daughter to earth inside a spaceship. She also told her daughter to protect herself with magic, and to make the earthlings obey her, protect her, give her food to eat, give her a place to shower, etc. She told her daughter to conquer earth, then lead the earthlings to save Xiya star…"

Leng'Er held a doll in one hand, and supported her head with the other, listening with a look of concentration on her face.

The first half was Ling Chen's guess as to the truth.

The second half was completely from Ling Chen's imagination:

"…In the end, Ling Chen and Ruo Ruo arrived at the Xiya star and used their god-like powers to defeat all of the bad people. The residents of Xiya star, including little Tian Tian cheered loudly and knelt before them, vowing to devote themselves to Ling Chen and Shui Ruo. From then onwards, Ling Chen and Ruo Ruo became the King and Queen of the Xiya star and lived happily ever after. The end."

Leng Er seemed satisfied from listening, but Ling Chen was exhausted.

"I like that story…" Leng'Er softly said as she squeezed her hands together.

Ling Chen laughed with pride.

“I want to listen to another one…”

Ling Chen felt as if he was going to cry. He quickly took out a new doll for Leng’Er, “Leng’Er, master has something to do now, so I can’t tell you another story right now. You can play with this doll first.”

Receiving a new doll, Leng’Er chuckled happily, then floated aside and started to play with her new doll. Ling Chen felt relieved, and continued to torture the scarecrows. The scarecrows were of the Wind element so the crystals created by Xiao Hui were Elementary Wind Resistance Crystals. Although they were one of the worse types of crystals, they could still be sold at a decent price. Selling a large quantity of them would still bring considerable wealth to Ling Chen.

After nearly an hour of farming scarecrows non-stop, his EXP had risen significantly, and he was not too far away from LV19. Suddenly, his communication device started to ring, and Mu Bing Yao’s voice sounded out, “Master, Su’Er is in trouble.”

Ling Chen was startled, and stopped farming to retreat to somewhere safe. Frowning, he asked, “What happened to Su’Er?”

He realized that it was midnight, and everyone was offline, except Mu Bing Yao who had just logged on. Mu Bing Yao replied in a clear voice, “Su’Er was with Meng Xin, Xiao Qi and I for most

of the day. In the afternoon, Su'Er was picked up by someone sent by her parents to take her to a party, saying that she wouldn't be back until late at night. Yun Meng Xin received a call 10 minutes ago saying that Su'Er had been attacked by an unknown person on the way back home. The driver and her two bodyguards were knocked out, and Su'Er was kidnapped."

"What?" Ling Chen had a deep frown on his face. Su'Er's father was the mayor of Beijing, and her uncle was China's third highest official. With such status, their family was sure to make many enemies. In fact, their family being ambushed or assassinated wasn't anything surprising. He quickly calmed down, asked, "Found any clues yet?"

"Not yet, the Su family is searching the whole city right now. It won't be long until there's a result." Hearing Ling Chen's concern in his voice, Mu Bing Yao asked, "Do you want us to make a move?"

"No." Ling Chen refused flatly, "Beijing is the Su family's territory; it is shameful enough for them for Su'Er to be kidnapped. They definitely won't let the people holding Su'Er leave Beijing. Unless those people kidnapped her out of revenge, and would sacrifice their lives for hers, she should be safe for now. She'll be found within the hour."

"Roger that."

Su'Er wasn't a very talkative girl, and would blush when people looked at her. She was as fragile as a little kitten, and was not even a little bit as domineering as princesses from rich families usually

were. After spending so much time together, he really came to like this girl who liked to peek at him secretly. He couldn't help but worry when he heard that she was missing after being kidnapped... he hoped that the Su family could find her quickly and not let this delicate girl come to any harm.

Ling Chen continued with his farming, throwing the entire scarecrow territory into chaos. Even without Xi Ling, he was able to gain EXP very quickly. Not only did he have ridiculously high attack power, but the range of his skills, as well as the fact that he could dual-wield meant that his farming speed was simply incredible. Xiao Hui didn't want to lose out to Ling Chen in terms of speed, so he would gobble up the corpses and spit out crystals just as quickly as Ling Chen killed the scarecrows.

Another half an hour went by, and Ling Chen's LV18 EXP bar was 70% full. He was about to ask Mu Bing Yao about Su'Er's status when a system announcement rang out in his ears.

"Ding...someone is calling from the outside world, would you like to log off?"

Ruo Ruo's calling me? Ling Chen unhesitatingly logged off.

Just as he left the Mystic Moon world, he heard Tian Tian's pitiful voice...

"Wuuu... but, but I really want to eat chocolate. Big sis, please let me have some, okay? Okay...?"

It was completely dark in the room, but little Tian Tian's eyes twinkled in the darkness... there was probably a stream of tears running down her face. She pulled on Shui Ruo's clothes and begged her for more chocolate. Ling Chen was simply astounded. This girl had eaten a dinner that could feed six people, and yet here she was, in the middle of the night, asking for chocolate?!

"Be a good girl, Tian Tian, big sis really doesn't have any more chocolate. Plus, it's not good to eat chocolate in the middle of the night... ah, big brother, you're awake." Seeing that Ling Chen had woken up, Shui Ruo exhaled in relief, "Big brother, Tian Tian wants to eat chocolate, otherwise she can't fall asleep. She already finished all of the chocolate we bought in the afternoon, so..."

"Okay, I'll go buy some more." Ling Chen said resignedly. He knew that if it wasn't completely necessary, Shui Ruo wouldn't have interrupted him when he was in the game.

"En!" Shui Ruo nodded, "I remember that they sell chocolate in the vending machine nearby... little Tian Tian, don't cry, big brother is going to buy you some chocolate. Quickly thank him."

"Heh!" The little Tian Tian curled her lips, "He was already This Demon Queen's servant, so it's his duty to buy me chocolate. There's no need to thank him!"

Shui Ruo smiled sweetly, "Okay, okay, then please lie down Your Demon Queen Highness. You need to get a lot of rest at this age."

After settling Tian Tian in bed, Shui Ruo took Ling Chen's jacket

and put it on him, “Sorry big brother, she’s just a kid after all... please come back soon.”

Ling Chen sighed as he walked out of the house into the cool evening breeze... and this was just the first day! If she stayed here forever, how was he going to survive?!

This child that he and Shui Ruo brought back seemed to be even scarier than a real Demon King or Demon Queen!

However, he decided to go along with it. After all, Ruo Ruo really liked this little girl.

“Protect them.” Before walking out, he gave out an order in a low voice.

Ling Chen strolled in melancholy, and before he knew it, he had already walked past two streets. It was nearly one, and cars only passed by occasionally under the dim street lights. Soon, he arrived at his destination. It was a pedestrian street not too wide, and every shop was closed already. There were only vending machines on the street sides.

With both of his hands tucked in his pockets, Ling Chen wandered forwards. Suddenly, his ears twitched, and he stopped.

Skreeee!!!

The sound of a car braking suddenly screeched out from the

intersection in front of him. Leading after that, two blinding car lights shone onto Ling Chen. The car shot towards Ling Chen, and it was right in front of him in no time...however, there was no sign of it slowing down.

Vehicles were prohibited on pedestrian streets, but this car kept accelerating after it turned into the pedestrian street, and exceeded 120 kilometers per hour when it reached Ling Chen. The lights in the pedestrian street was bright enough, and Ling Chen was walking in the middle of the road. The driver could definitely see Ling Chen, but did not slow down at all or swerve to avoid him. In just moments the car would crash into him.

“This person’s looking to die!!” Ling Chen face dropped. If it was an ordinary person, they would surely die from being hit by a car at such a speed. At midnight, someone who dared to drive in such a manner on a pedestrian street, not caring if they hit and killed anyone, was definitely either a madman or a criminal.

Chapter 230 - Black Night, Su Er (3)

Ling Chen's face darkened, but he did not move from where he was standing. He stared the car down as it sped towards him. From anyone else's perspective, it would seem like that he was so petrified that he couldn't move.

"Bang!!!!"

The car smashed into Ling Chen, and the ground below him cracked. Ling Chen's body leaned back, but his feet did not move back even a single step, much less go flying. Instead, the car was sent flying. It was as if the car had smashed into a solid metal wall; the windscreen glass was completely smashed, and with the engine still roaring, the car flipped. Terrified screams could be heard coming from within the car.

Seeing Ling Chen without a scratch on his body after being hit by the car, anyone's jaws would have dropped to the ground. Moreover, he had not even moved back a single step! This was the monstrous body that had been forged in 'Heaven' and 'Hell'. Ling Chen clearly knew that if he was a normal person, he would have died instantly, so he did not care at all if those in the car died.

Amongst the voices screaming in the car, one sounded particularly familiar.

Wait, this voice...

With his incredibly strong mental power, Ling Chen could

remember any voice after hearing it just once. Of the screams coming from the car, two belonged to men and two belonged to women. One of the women's voices... although it was just a scream, but a girl appeared in his mind.

Su'Er!!

Bang!!

At this moment, the doors on the left side of the car were flung open, and a small figure fell out from the car. Ling Chen instantly charged forwards, fast as lightning, and caught the person. He held on to her tightly, and flipped in the air, then rolled a few times after hitting the ground to decrease the chances of the person getting hurt.

The girl he was holding, who he had instantly recognized, was obviously Su'Er. Her arms were tied behind her back, and her eyes wide open in horror, her face pale. Although she was in shock, that couldn't cover her beauty,

"Su..." Ling Chen was about to call out her name, but caught himself before he let it slip. He untied the rope which bound her arms together, and gently shook her, "Are you okay?"

Although Su'Er was definitely in shock, there was no blood on her and she was still conscious. Ling Chen felt as if a weight had been taken off his heart. Although she had been flung out when the car door opened, he made it in time, and prevented her from suffering any serious injuries. He just hoped that she did not

receive any internal injuries.

Bam!!

The car crashed onto the ground, and flipped a few times. It finally smashed through a jewelry shop, resulting in a deafening alarm ringing.

Fate was simply too unpredictable. He had actually somehow bumped into the kidnapped Su'Er on his way to buying the little Demon Queen some chocolate. Ling Chen patted Su'Er's back to calm her down. His gaze rested on the car, which now had smoke coming out of it. So the people inside were the kidnappers of Su'Er? No wonder they were driving like madmen-it seemed that they had been discovered and they were trying to escape.

At that moment, a few figures clad in black appeared. Ling Chen looked towards them and made a simple gesture with his fingers. The other people in the car were not as lucky as Su'Er. They, who were stuck in the car, could not be more dead than dead. There was no need for Ling Chen or his subordinates to finish them off.

Looking down, Ling Chen saw that Su'Er was staring at his face. Her face was still pale, but her eyes were focused, though her body was as weak and soft as cotton. Ling Chen smiled at her, "Don't be afraid, it's okay now."

Tears started flowing out of Su'Er's eyes. She sniffled, then started crying as she buried her head into Ling Chen's chest. After all, Su'Er was still a fifteen-year-old girl. After what had just

happened, she was probably on the brink of having a mental collapse. She couldn't have cared more who had just saved her-she simply hugged onto him tightly and cried her heart out.

The figures clad in black stayed around the car for a while, then left quickly. By now, the car had started to burn, and there was no chance that anyone was still alive inside. The sound of sirens rang out, and soon, the police, as well as the Su family, would be there. Ling Chen knew that he could not stay any longer. He gently took Su'Er's arms off him, and put her against a wall. He patted her back, saying, "Okay, it's okay now, don't cry."

Su'Er continued to cry. It was the only thing she could do after suffering such a fright.

"The police and your family will be here soon, and you'll be home before you know it. I need to leave first; you'll only have to wait a little while before they get here." Su'Er's hands held onto his arms tightly, and Ling Chen was forced to gently pry them off.

Hearing that he was going to leave, Su'Er's crying died down, and while still holding on to Ling Chen's arm, she looked at him with her misty eyes, "Don't... don't go... I'm so scared..."

Ling Chen shook his head with a smile, "Don't be scared, it's alright now. Those bad people all died in the car, so no one will harm you anymore, and your family will be here soon. Also, me saving you is a secret, so please don't tell anyone, including your family, okay?"

Ling Chen forced himself to once again move away Su'Er's small hands. Su'Er's tears were still flowing, but she came from a prominent family, and knew how to conduct herself properly. She did not try to stop him from leaving again, but trembled, and wrapped her arms around herself. She gazed at him through her watery eyes, as if she wanted to carve his looks into her memory.

Ling Chen smiled at her, then looked over at vending machines that had been knocked over by the car. He cursed inside... he had expected a few vending machines to be knocked over and broken by the car, but did it really have to be the two that sold chocolates?!

"I'm going."

"We... can we meet again?" Su'Er's eyes quivered as she looked at him. Although she was still young, and had just gone through a frightful event, she was still incredibly beautiful. Adding on to her natural gentleness and fragility, no one could resist falling in love with such a girl.

Ling Chen stopped, and secretly smiled, "En, we will meet again."

"My... my name is Su'Er, may I know what your name is?"

Ling Chen's impression of Su'Er was a shy girl who rarely talked, especially in front of him. She seemed not to have had much interaction with boys since she was little, which was why she tended to be very shy around boys. However, she had asked him,

who had saved her, if they would meet again, as well as his name-this would have taken an incredible amount of courage from her.

Although he could not bear to reject Su'Er's question, Ling Chen could not answer. He simply couldn't risk exposing himself. He looked at the girl who was hugging herself with her arms, and was trembling-was it from fear, or from the coolness of the night breeze? He took off the jacket he was wearing, and put it on Su'Er. He smiled at her, then left.

Although she greatly desired to, Su'Er did not chase after him or call him. She held on to the jacket that he had given her, her eyes stuck on this mysterious man as he walked away, as if she was intoxicated...

Ten seconds after Ling Chen left, he heard a large number of cars approaching. On a roof far away, Ling Chen relaxed, and spoke to himself, "It seems that there's nothing I can do now. I really hope Su'Er didn't suffer any internal injuries."

A black shadow appeared behind him and whispered, "The surveillance cameras in all streets within a three-street radius have all been disabled. The recordings from the past hour have all been wiped."

Ling Chen nodded in satisfaction, and looked to where Su'Er was. Ten or so cars sped through, and stopped in front of Su'Er. A large group of people surrounded Su'Er, protecting her, and another group of people held guns and fire extinguishers and ran towards the burning car. A middle-aged couple walked down from the last car and called out Su'Er's name. Su'Er quickly ran into the

woman's embrace and started crying again...

Fate was simply incredible-Ling Chen had coincidentally met Su'Er in reality just when she needed him the most, and had inadvertently saved her. Ling Chen looked to the figure in black behind him, and his face became serious. He spoke in a very severe tone, "I have a very important task for you to do; it must be completed within fifteen minutes."

Faced with Ling Chen's serious face and tone, the figure in black tensed, and nodded quickly.

Ling Chen held out a red note, and said seriously, "Immediately buy ten chocolates. I want you back as soon as possible!"

Though it was dark, Ling Chen could see the figure in black's facial muscles twitching.

Chapter 231 - Tian Tian's New Home

Ling Chen was finally able to bring the chocolate back... the person in black was afraid that 10 pieces wouldn't be enough, so they bought two big boxes, containing more than 20 pieces of chocolate. When he got home, Ling Chen secretly hid one of the boxes away-if this sort of situation happened again, he didn't want to have to go all the way out just to get another box of chocolates. He had been gone for quite some time, and Tian Tian had been waiting expectantly the entire time. Not only was she still wide awake, but also rambling to Shui Ruo about something. As soon as she saw Ling Chen... more accurately, as soon as she saw the box of chocolates, she leapt towards him, and immediately snatched the box away. Ripping open the box, she began to devour the chocolates.

Shui Ruo was already completely drained from looking after Tian Tian, and looked incredibly relieved when Ling Chen came back. Ling Chen looked at Tian Tian, who was furiously devouring the chocolates, then said to Shui Ruo quietly, "Something happened to Su'Er."

"Ah?" Shui Ruo worriedly cried out.

Ling Chen told Shui Ruo what had happened when he went out. While listening, Shui Ruo could not help but exclaim in shock now and then. After Ling Chen told her that he had confirmed that Su'Er was taken home by her parents, she let out a breath that she had been holding the whole time. She anxiously asked, "Big brother, is Su'Er really okay? To be thrown out from the car, do you think she... do you think she would be hurt badly?"

Ling Chen couldn't confirm, but he comforted her, "I'm sure she should be fine. Let's ask Meng Xin and the others when we see them tomorrow."

The entire box of chocolates was finished by Tian Tian in just a short while. After she finished her meal of chocolates, she licked her lips and exclaimed in a satisfied manner, "I'm full!". She threw the box on the ground, and collapsed onto the bed.

"Tian Tian, brush your teeth before you sleep. Otherwise, your teeth are going to have cavities."

Shui Ruo called out to Tian Tian many times, but Tian Tian did not react at all. Soon after, she found that Tian Tian was already fast asleep with a smile on her face.

Ling Chen was completely speechless... she had devoured a meal for six people for dinner, then eaten a whole box of chocolate in the middle of the night, and had finally dropped onto the bed and immediately fell asleep.

Goddamn, was this little girl a pig in her past life?!

Shui Ruo did not continue to try to wake her up. Instead, she gently moved Tian Tian's body so that she could sleep in a more comfortable position, and put a pillow under her head. No matter if it was her expression or actions, they were all incredibly gentle and nurturing, as if the little girl was her own daughter... although Shui Ruo herself was not much more than a child.

Shui Ruo also lay down, and lovingly looked at the sleeping Tian Tian. Shui Ruo continued to silently gaze at Tian Tian, and started to giggle after a while.

“Big brother, look, Tian Tian’s so cute when she’s sleeping.” Shui Ruo softly said as she lay against Ling Chen.

The sleeping Tian Tian not only looked extremely cute, but was also quite beautiful as well, though she was still very young. To look like this when she was only 10 or so, she would definitely become as beautiful and alluring as Shui Ruo when she grew up.

“If we can have such a cute daughter, that’d be so wonderful.” Shui Ruo murmured.

“If we do our best, we’ll have one in not too long, and she’ll definitely be cuter than Tian Tian.” Ling Chen gently replied to Shui Ruo, as he reached out with his hands and squeezed Shui Ruo’s breasts. He smiled evilly, “In order to achieve our goal, let’s both work hard.”

Shui Ruo immediately went red, and shyly replied, “But won’t Tian Tian hear us? We should wait until Tian Tian’s not here… okay…?”

With the little Demon Queen next to them, as well as how late it was getting, Shui Ruo was bound to be tired so Ling Chen did not continue. He put his arms around Shui Ruo’s waist, and gently kissed her, “Before we have a kid, we need to get some rest. Let’s

get some sleep, and we can continue ‘investigating’ this topic tomorrow.”

Shui Ruo sweetly smiled, and pressed herself against Ling Chen’s chest. Very quickly, she fell asleep in his embrace. Ling Chen did not enter the game again, but went to sleep as well.

Early in the morning….

“I’m so hungry!! I want to eat!!!”

The high pitched yelling almost caused Ling Chen to fall off the bed. To be able to yell with such a voice, and to be screaming about food so early in the morning-that could only be Tian Tian. Ling Chen opened his eyes, and looked at the clock on the wall… it was only 5am.

Beside him, Shui Ruo had also been woken up. She half-opened her eyes, evidently still not fully awake. Normally, they would still be asleep at this time-the earliest they would even think about getting up would be around 7am.

Looking over, he saw that little Tian Tian was energetically standing up on the bed. In total, she had slept for about 6 hours last night, and yet, she had woken up so early and was so boisterous as soon as she woke up. “It must feel good to be so young” Ling Chen thought to himself, followed by “If she’s going to be like this every morning, our lives are over.”

Although it was still early, Shui Ruo got up, and rubbed her eyes. She stretched, and gently smiled, patting Tian Tian's cheeks, "Tian Tian, you woke up so early."

"En!" Tian Tian nodded her head, and pointed towards her stomach, "Big sis, I'm hungry, I want to eat something."

After feeling Tian Tian's stomach, Shui Ruo confirmed that it was completely empty. Tian Tian's metabolism was simply astonishing. Shui Ruo lovingly tidied up Tian Tian's disorderly hair and clothes, and smilingly said, "Let's go to wash our faces and brush our teeth first then have breakfast. What does Tian Tian want to eat?"

"I'll come as well." Ling Chen also got up. Seeing how energetic Tian Tian was already, it would be pretty much impossible for Ling Chen to continue sleeping.

As such, Tian Tian excitedly played video games while Ling Chen and Shui Ruo busily rushed around cooking breakfast. Although they had not acknowledged Tian Tian to be some sort of "Demon Queen Highness", but they revolved around her as if they were her servants.

During breakfast, Tian Tian ate a meal that could feed five people. Despite seeing her performance at dinner the previous day, Ling Chen and Shui Ruo were still completely amazed by this little girl. After eating until she was full, Tian Tian rushed back to her video games, completely ignoring Ling Chen and Shui Ruo's existence. At least she wasn't completely clinging on to them, not giving them any private time together.

After an hour, Ling Chen received some information... in the end, his subordinates were unable to find out who Tian Tian's parents were, and could not even find any information regarding Tian Tian.

"Master, do you want us to expand the search perimeter? Perhaps she came with relatives from overseas, then got lost."

After considering person in black's proposal, Ling Chen thought for a while, then helplessly shook his head, "Forget it, you can stop investigating this matter for now."

The person in black nodded, and vanished.

When Ling Chen told Shui Ruo the information, she did not seem disappointed at all, but instead smiled happily, "If we can't find her parents, let's just let her stay here for now. Look, she's so happy staying with us, and it doesn't seem like she wants to leave at all."

Having a place to sleep, eat and play, as well as a pretty older sister who complies with her every wish, even I wouldn't want to leave... Ling Chen despondently thought. Tian Tian's cuteness could conquer most people, especially a kind and gentle girl like Shui Ruo. However, her temperament was not nearly as cute as her appearance. Regardless, since Shui Ruo liked her, Ling Chen wouldn't object.

As such, he could only allow this to become Tian Tian's new

home.

With Tian Tian present, Shui Ruo was not able to enter the game, otherwise Tian Tian would create a ruckus. Ling Chen went back to the bedroom, and lay on the bed. He prayed that Tian Tian would not disturb him while he was playing, and logged into the game.

It was already late in the morning, and apart from Mu Bing Yao, none of the girls from Heart's Dream, or Yun Feng, were online. Ling Chen took out his map and looked at it, then headed south. After an hour or so, he entered a small town. He found the Item Shop, and bought a teleport scroll for that town. Afterwards, he changed his equipment, and returned to Azure Dragon City. At this time, he saw a notification that Yun Meng Xin and Xiao Qi had logged on. Thus, he directly headed towards the Heart's Dream building.

When Yun Meng Xin and Xiao Qi saw him, they didn't even have time to greet him before hurriedly saying, "Big brother Ling Tian, did you know something happened to Su'Er last night?"

"En, I already heard about it. Mu Bing Yao told me just then. How is she now?" Ling Chen asked.

"Luckily we were able to bring her back. She's in the hospital right now, and the preliminary analysis showed that there's nothing too serious, only a sprained ankle. The doctors are worried that she might have some internal injuries, so they're going to keep her at the hospital for a few days until they can confirm she's completely fine." Yun Meng Xin calmly said. Knowing that Su'Er

was safe and sound with her family in the hospital put their minds at ease.

"Did they find out who were the perpetrators?" Ling Chen inquired.

"Not yet, but there should be results soon. Big brother Ling Tian, did you know, a very mysterious hero saved Su Su last night! Su Su said that person was like… was like superman! He caused the car to go flying, and rescued Su Su who had been thrown out from the car. Afterwards, he gave his jacket to Su Su, but he didn't even tell her who he was. In the hospital, Su Su kept holding on to the jacket, and wouldn't let anyone take it away from her. Sometimes she just holds the jacket and looks deep in thought, although no one knows what she's thinking about…" As she spoke, Xiao Qi became more and more excited. She clasped her hands in front of her chest, and looked at the ceiling with twinkling eyes, imagining a wonderful scene, "I wish that someday, if I'm in danger, there would be a man who descends from the sky, defeats all the bad guys, then puts his jacket on me and coolly leaves without even leaving his name… Wah! What a scenario! If I was Su Su, I would definitely run up and hug him…"

Ling Chen: "……"

Yun Meng Xin gently smiled, "Su Su never lies, so what she told us was probably the truth. In that case, the person who saved her was probably an esper who specialises in strength, and is very powerful. However, Su Su is not willing to say what that person looked like nor his age. What's even more strange is that all the security cameras stopped working for that period of time, and it's

impossible to find the footage from the attack."

"All in all, it's good that Su'Er's safe." Ling Chen said as he smiled.

Chapter 232 - Hello there, Lucky Cat!

Just as Ling Chen finished speaking, there was a flash beside him, and a familiar, slim figure appeared.

“Su Su! Why are you here? Shouldn’t you be resting in the hospital?!” Xiao Qi anxiously asked as she ran over to Su’Er.

Su’Er’s appearance also caused Ling Chen to feel surprised. Su’Er didn’t not have a very strong personality, so after going through such an ordeal, it would be normal for her to take up to half a month to recover. He asked, “Su’Er, I heard something happened last night-are you alright?”

“Indeed, Su’Er, why have you come? Are you sure you shouldn’t be getting more rest?” Yun Meng Xin caringly asked.

Su’Er gently shook her head, and smiled, “It’s alright, I wasn’t really hurt or anything. Besides, entering the game won’t affect me getting rest.”

While speaking, her gaze rested on Ling Chen... before, she had never dared to directly look at Ling Chen. She would only secretly peek at him for a short while when he wasn’t looking. If he turned to face her, she would hurriedly avert her gaze like a frightened little rabbit. And yet, she was looking at Ling Chen directly, as if she wanted to look through his mask and see what he really looked like.

“It’s good that you’re fine; make sure that you take care of

yourself and watch out when you go out... eh, Su Su, is there anything on my face?" Seeing that Su'Er was looking at him so strangely, Ling Chen put his hand on his mask as he asked.

Su'Er quickly looked away, and shook her head, "No... it's nothing..."

Ling Chen smiled, "Are you still thinking about your ordeal from last night? Those things are already in the past, and they won't happen again, so it's best not to think of them anymore. I'm sure that Su Su's family and friends will definitely protect Su Su well in future."

"Yep, yep!" Xiao Qi vigorously nodded, "We'll definitely protect Su Su well in future."

Ling Chen took out a scroll covered with a green glow, "Su Su, this is for you."

Seeing the scroll, all the girls stared at it. Su'Er paused in shock, then carefully received the scroll with her hands. When they looked at the attributes of the scroll, they all started to let out cries of surprise.

"Hidden Profession Scroll!"

This scroll was the scroll that Ling Chen had found on the Zephyr Bird-the Wind Spirit Marksman.

Everyone knew how rare and valuable Hidden Profession Scrolls were. A single Hidden Profession Scroll was not worth any less than the first Guild Creation Token. To be able to have a special profession was every player's dream. Without going through any trials or risks, simply crushing the scroll would put them far above any other player. This was something irresistible to every single player. Su'Er was an Archer, and this scroll just happened to be suitable for Archers. Su'Er's mouth opened in shock, and stood completely still for a while. She pressed it against her chest, and her cute face became slightly pink, "Thank you, big brother Ling Tian... I... I really like it... I'm really happy..."

"Haha, I'm glad that you like it. I hope that this will help you forget about the unpleasant things from last night." Ling Chen said as he smiled. At the same time, he inwardly frowned... he felt that Su'Er was looking at him very strangely today. Hold on, could she have figured out that it was him last night? She had never met him before in real life, and he had spoken to her with a fake voice. How could she have realised that it was him?

He was probably overthinking.

"I want one as well!!!"

Xiao Qi let go of Su'Er, and jumped in front of Ling Chen, almost crashing into him, "Big brother Ling Tian, I also want a Hidden Profession Scroll! Big sister Meng Xin has one, little sister Ruo Ruo has one, big sister Mu Bing Yao doesn't even need one, and now Su Su has one as well. It's just me who doesn't have one... Big brother Ling Tian, can you give me one as well?"

Xiao Qi's hands were clinging on to Ling Chen's arm, shaking it non-stop. In front of Ling Tian, this domineering princess of the Battle Alliance was acting like a cute little girl, making it hard for him to reject her request. Ling Chen's head hurt, but he could only helplessly shake his head, "Qi Qi, right now I really don't have any more Hidden Profession Scrolls. Next time I find one, I'll immediately give it to you, alright?"

"Really? Yay! Then it's a deal, don't you dare take it back!" Of course, Xiao Qi knew how rare Hidden Profession Scrolls were. In reality, she didn't expect Ling Chen to just hand one over immediately. To be able to get such a promise from him, she was satisfied.

"Of course I'll keep my word! I'll give this to you for now, so do your best to get to LV20."

Ling Chen took out the LV20 Spectre Staff that he had picked up from the Warring Palace Skeleton, and gave it to Xiao Qi. As soon as she saw it, she began yelling out, "Long live big brother Ling Tian!" then began to lovingly inspect it.

"Where's Ruo Ruo? It's rare to not see you together." Yun Meng Xin asked as she walked over.

"Ruo Ruo she... she has to take care of some things today, so she wasn't able to come." Ling Chen replied. When they thought of their little Demon Queen at home, his head started to hurt again.

After chatting with the girls for quite a while, Ling Chen left the

Heart's Dream building. As he was leaving, he could feel there was someone staring at him from behind. Evidently, that gaze belonged to Su'Er.

What was going on? Did she really know that it was him? Ling Chen simply couldn't fathom how she could possibly know that it was him, so he put it in the back of his mind. He used the teleport scroll bought from before to go back to the town he was at previously, stocked up on his potions then continued to head south.

The journey was an extremely boring one. There was not much to the south of the Azure Dragon City. Although he had travelled for quite a long time, he had not encountered any challenging or difficult areas. However, there was Leng'Er to keep him company, so it wasn't too bad.

After travelling for about two hours, he passed by less and less people, until he reached an area completely devoid of life. After passing through the Fields Region, he had arrived at a Deserted Region. Ling Chen opened his map, and looked at the information about this region. About a hundred years ago, there had been a great war here, and many people had died. Their bones had been buried under the ground, causing this place to become an 'unlucky' place. As such, not many people were willing to enter here, although there wasn't much danger, nor any strong monsters.

With his worries put aside, Ling Chen entered the 'Deserted Region'. There were many weeds and grasses growing here, and stones were scattered all over the place. However, it was much more peaceful than most other places. Ling Chen pressed on with

full speed, and as he told Leng'Er stories, he found that he had reached the centre of the Deserted Region. At this moment, Xiao Hui, who had been napping all this time, suddenly opened his eyes and his ears shot up. Without even waiting for Ling Chen, he jumped down from the Cloud Stepping Mare, and charged towards the right.

Did Xiao Hui find some kind of treasure? Ling Chen did not hesitate at all, and chased after Xiao Hui.

Xiao Hui ran for a while, then finally stopped in front of a withered tree. He ran around in circles for a while, then jumped up, and started using his claws to dig the ground beneath him.

"Eh? Could there be some sort of ore buried under the ground?" Ling Chen took out a shovel, "Xiao Hui, I'll do it."

After that time with the Mysterious Red Sun Gold, Ling Chen decided to invest in a shovel. Because his profession was not that of a miner, he could only use a low-grade shovel. If someone was to explore a mine with this shovel, they would only be able to find a few ores after an entire day. However, because Ling Chen knew exactly where he should be digging, it was enough to get the job done. Normally, it would be impossible to know exactly where ores and crystals were buried, but Xiao Hui was the perfect solution to this problem.

Of course, shovels had their limits. They could only dig very shallowly in most terrains, and the ground would be restored after a while. This meant that it would be almost impossible to cover a large area with a shovel. Moreover, the best mining spots always

had powerful monsters-it would be very dangerous for a player with a mining profession to go mining by himself or herself. The rarest and most valuable treasures were not usually found in conventional mines, but rather in the wilderness-such treasures were things that could only be found by luck.

After digging for a long time, the ground did not show any sign of being restored. Ling Chen put all of his strength into digging, and soon, the hole was 30 centimetres deep. All of a sudden, a “ding” rang out.

Ling Chen had found something after digging about 30 centimetres, which was a lot shallower than he had expected.

Ling Chen brushed the dirt covering the object aside, and saw an ordinary, crude stone. Ling Chen looked at Xiao Hui, and immediately, the information regarded the stone was transmitted to him.

[Spatial Stone]: A stone that contains mysterious spatial energy. It is usually naturally created in regions in which the seven elements are perfectly balanced, making it very rare. It tends to irregularly move around after being formed, and can move anywhere. Using special methods, one can extract the spatial energy from within the Spatial Stone and create special items. However, the forging requirements are extremely high, requiring the forging technique to be at least that of the Heaven’s End grade. People who can use the Spatial Stone to forge items are incredibly rare.

Spatial Stone. Although it had a very ordinary appearance, it turned out that this stone had important qualities.

“It’s a Spatial Stone… little master, quickly grab it! Don’t let it get away no matter what!” Within his mind, Qi Yue’s voice sounded out.

The description of the Spatial Stone said it could move around, so Ling Chen did not hesitate, and took out one of the spatulas he had bought from Qian Gun Gun. He put it against the Spatial Stone, and immediately, the entire Spatial Stone was separated from the ground. Ling Chen put his hand over it and easily picked it up.

The Spatial Stone was only about as big as his fist, and didn’t look at all different to normal stones. However, to be able to cause Qi Yue to cry out in shock meant that this stone was definitely very valuable. Holding the stone in his hand, he asked, “Qi Yue, what can this stone be used for?”

“Shh!” Qi Yue did not answer, but whispered back, “Little master, stay quiet and quickly hide… your ‘old friend’ is here.”

Old friend?

Ling Chen looked up and saw that in the distance, a golden, round, fat cat was swaggering towards where he was. Although it was still quite far away, he could still hear the jingling of the bell around its neck.

Ling Chen’s eyes widened-that was…

Lucky cat!!

Chapter 233 - Skill Copy: Lucky Hand!

Old friend, Lucky Cat... Indeed, they were old friends by now. This was the third time that Ling Chen had encountered the Lucky Cat in the Forgotten Continent.

“Normally people won’t be able to see a Lucky Cat even once in their lives, and yet little master has run into them three times in this past month. Even god would be jealous of your luck.” Qi Yue grumbled. Deep down, she was very, very shocked. The first time he met the Lucky Cat, it was a very fortuitous encounter. The second time was a fortuitous encounter of fortuitous encounters. And now, after a few days... Ling Chen had bumped into one again. The chances of this were astronomically small!

This luck of his was simply ridiculous.

Ling Chen’s Luck stat was indeed much higher than that of most other players’. Although he had 11 points in Luck, that shouldn’t cause him to meet a Lucky Cat three times in such a short period of time.

Moreover, in the same short period of time, he had found three of the God Orbs of the Lunar Scourge, met many godly, mythical creatures that normal players wouldn’t even dream of meeting, received the legacy of the Shura, met Qian Gun Gun, as well as found Mystical Red Sun Gold and a Spatial Stone.....

Could it be that this was all because of ‘it’?

“Lucky cat…” Seeing the Lucky Cat that was swaggering nearer and nearer, Ling Chen gritted his teeth so hard that it was audible. He wasn’t thinking about how rare it was to meet a Lucky Cat again, but rather, his mind was filled with rage-rage from remembering when this big, fat cat had stolen all of his gold.

This damn cat-I’ll definitely catch you and roast you this time!!!

He decided that he would hide behind this tree, completely silent and suppressing his aura, and strike out when the time was right.

At this moment, the information regarding the Lucky Cat was transmitted into Ling Chen’s mind… this information evidently came from Xiao Hui’s “Eye of the Holy Spirit”. Although the Lucky Cat was still quite far away, it seemed that it was still within the range of Xiao Hui’s skill. Ling Chen was just about to tell Xiao Hui to also hide behind the tree, but he suddenly saw the Lucky Cat’s skills.

[Money Shield], [Money Attack], [Money Escape], [Treasure Monster Summon] [Lucky Hand]: When close to the target it stretches its paw, stealing all the gold of the target in a moment without the target noticing.

[True Lucky Hand]: When close to the target it stretches its paw, stealing all the gold and items of the target in a moment without the target noticing.

All of the Lucky Cat's skills were very unique and incredibly powerful. The Money Shield was a ridiculously powerful defensive skill. As long as it had enough money, even a Saint Destroyer Beast had no chance of killing it. The Money Attack was a ridiculously powerful offensive skill. As long as it had enough money, it could even insta-kill a Saint Destroyer Beast. The Money Escape was a ridiculously convenient way of escaping-throwing some money away would cause it to teleport far, far away. Even gods would not be able to catch it if it wanted to run.

In comparison to these overpowered skills, [Lucky Hand] and [True Lucky Hand] were even more broken. These skills could cause as much pain as the target dying a thousand times.

To be able to steal all of the target's items and gold in a single moment... even Ling Chen was scared stiff by these skills. He subconsciously put his hand over his bag. Even in the early stages of the game, becoming the victim of this skill could cause one to rage-quit. This was even more so in the middle and late stages of the game, when all of one's efforts in collecting items and gold would go to waste in a single second. This was enough to cause anyone to weep bitterly for many, many days.

If he could have such a terrifying skill...

Ling Chen's heart started to thump hard. He grinned, and slowly took out a scroll from his bag.

The reward from the Moon God Ruins Quest-Skill Copy Scroll!!

[Skill Copy Scroll]: A mysterious scroll that allows the user to copy a target's skills. When used, the user can choose one skill to copy from the target. The target must be within the user's field of vision. Cannot copy limited use skills, passive skills or evolved skills. The copied skill will start from LV1. Disappears after use.

As long as the target is within the user's field of vision...

Ling Chen carefully poked his head out from behind the tree and looked towards the Lucky Cat. The Lucky Cat was swaggering along quite slowly, and was still about 100 metres away. Although he could see it clearly, he wasn't within range for it to detect him.

He didn't know if this scroll could copy a skill from the Lucky Cat, but if it could... heheheh!

Ling Chen slowly breathed in, and opened the scroll as he stared at the Lucky Cat... immediately a dim flash of light appeared, and six skills appeared on the scroll:

[Money Shield], [Money Attack], [Money Escape], [Treasure Monster Summon], [Lucky Hand], [True Lucky Hand]

Ling Chen stretched out his finger and selected [True Lucky Hand]. Inside, he was screaming "Please work!!"

However, he didn’t expect that it would work, because if it did, he would have the most overpowered and broken skill known to gaming history! Normally, the designer of a game would definitely not allow such a skill to fall into the hands of a player. Moreover, the Lucky Cat was not just some ordinary creature. It, as well as its skills, were all unique and special, so how could its skills be so easily copied?

Despite this, Ling Chen still had to try.

The words [True Lucky Hand] on the scroll flashed a few times. At the same time, the Lucky Cat’s body in the distance also flashed a few times, but it didn’t seem to notice. It kept swaggering and sauntering towards Ling Chen’s position in a very relaxed manner.

Ling Chen concluded that this Lucky Cat must have a very high sense of danger, but very poor eyesight.

‘Ding… [True Lucky Hand] is the evolved version of [Lucky Hand], so it cannot be copied.”

A system announcement rang out, telling him that his attempt had failed.

From the name, it seemed that [True Lucky Hand] was indeed the evolved version of [Lucky Hand], and the scroll did say that evolved skills could not be copied. Ling Chen once again breathed in. In that case… let’s try [Lucky Hand]. Please don’t fail!

Ling Chen tapped on [Lucky Hand] on the scroll. Once again, the skill name flashed a few times, as did the Lucky Cat's body.

"Ding... you have successfully copied [Lucky Cat]'s active skill [Lucky Hand], Current level: LV1."

"Ding... "Holy Spirit's Gift" has caused your skill [Lucky Hand] to rise to LV2."

The scroll shattered in his hand, and dissipated quickly. Hearing the announcement, Ling Chen was instantly overjoyed!

Success... it had actually succeeded! Succeeded!!

He almost did not dare to believe what had just happened... because from the bottom of his heart, he didn't think that the system would allow a player to copy such a broken skill. He quickly opened his stats page, and looked at his skills. His gaze locked on to the [Lucky Hand] skill...

Lucky Hand: Current level: LV2, Highest level: LV5, SP to upgrade to LV3: 180,000, After reaching LV5, the skill will automatically evolve into [True Lucky Hand]. A godly skill that comes from the treasure creature Lucky Cat, this skill allows the user to use an unseen hand to steal away the target's money without the target noticing. Within range, the user can steal 20%-40% of the target's money. The success rate is affected by the target's level, grade and luck. Base success rate for stealing

is (Luck x 4)%. Being able to steal without being detected is also affected by the target's level, grade and luck. Base success rate for not being detected is (Luck x 4)%. Consumes 10 MP, cooldown time: 10 seconds.

Ling Chen: "……"

This savage skill had been weakened by quite a bit after being acquired by him, but it still allowed him to steal a whopping 20%-40% of the target's money. Moreover, Lucky Hand only costed 10MP and had a 10 second cooldown time, so even if he couldn't steal all of the target's money in one go, he could continue to steal from them after 10 seconds. Currently, Ling Chen's Luck was 11, so merely the base chance of him successfully stealing, as well as not being detected was 44%! Moreover, because his level and Luck were much higher than that of other players', the total success rate would be much, much higher!

However, what pained him to see was that the SP required to level up Lucky Hand to LV3 was a tremendous 180,000!!

This was almost double as much as that which was necessary to fully level up Soul Sacrifice!

Despite this, Ling Chen wasn't too disheartened. For such a powerful skill to be acquired by a player, it would only be fair for there to be some limitations. Even to him, levelling up this skill would be incredibly difficult. However, he had Xiao Hui! With Xiao Hui's "Holy Spirit's Gift", he could still level up the skill.

Xiao Hui was truly a blessing.

Within his mind flashed many scenarios of him using this devastating skill on his targets. Ling Chen quickly calmed down his mind, called back Xiao Hui and held his breath behind the tree... the next step for him was to catch this big, fat cat!

Chapter 234 - Spanking

Out of the two times Ling Chen had met the Lucky Cat, it had escaped twice, and had even stolen all of his gold the second time.

This time, the third time, Ling Chen was determined to catch it. Ling Chen was fairly confident this time-he would not make the same mistake as last time, and would use the Lunar Scourge as soon as he had the chance to.

Ling Chen stuck closely to the tree and held his breath. His right harm was prepared-as soon as the Lucky Cat came within 18 metres, he would immediately use Moon Shadow, and catch it.

Qi Yue had previously said that the Lucky Cat definitely would not allow anything dangerous come within 50 metres of it. That was to say, its sense of danger within 50 metres was incredibly high. However, Ling Chen was a master of both espionage and counter-espionage. He was completely immobile, and not breathing in the slightest. Anyone who saw him would believe that he was dead. All of his focus was gathered on his sense of hearing, which he used to gauge how far away the Lucky Cat was.

“Little master, are you still trying to catch it?” Qi Yue asked in a surprised voice.

“Of course.” Ling Chen replied with a look of concentration on his face.

“The Lucky Cat has an extraordinary sense of danger. The range

of little master's Moon Shadow is still not enough. Catching the Lucky Cat this time will be almost impossible."

"That's not for sure!" Ling Chen quickly replied. He stopped talking as he heard the Lucky Cat coming closer and closer to his position.

The Lucky Cat was very close now, and at this moment, Qi Yue let out an "Oh?" of surprise. The Lucky Cat was within 50 metres of Ling Chen, but it continued to walk forwards. Evidently, it had not sensed Ling Chen.

Qi Yue was incredibly shocked. The Lucky Cat had one of the strongest sense of danger out of all creatures. Even if it was just a feather landing on the ground, or even a heart thumping, it would be able to sense it within the 50 metres. However, it had not detected Ling Chen for some reason.

Qi Yue looked over at Ling Chen-although his eyes were open, they were not moving in the slightest and he had not blinked for some time. He looked exactly like a statue. This level of control over one's body was simply astounding. If even the Lucky Cat couldn't detect him, then who could possibly find him when he wanted to hide? It seemed that with the help of the Lunar Scourge, perhaps Ling Chen really would be able to catch this Lucky Cat.

One second... two seconds... three seconds...

Qi Yue stopped speaking, so as to not disturb Ling Chen. Ling Chen heard the Lucky Cat coming closer and closer and forced

himself to be calm. He estimated that the Lucky Cat was about forty metres away... then thirty metres... then...

"Ding...someone is calling from the outside world, would you like to log off or listen now?"

In his state of extreme focus, this loud system announcement caused him to involuntarily gasp...although this would not be audible to anyone more than one metre away, he heard the Lucky Cat suddenly stop walking, and after a "woosh"...

"Aiya, the fat cat ran away." Qi Yue said lightheartedly.

Ling Chen: "~!#$%....."

After waiting patiently for such a long time, it had all been ruined by a system announcement. Ling Chen chose to listen to what the person from outside was saying.

"I want to eat chocolate!! Hurry up and buy me chocolate!!!!!"

Tian Tian's yelling voice was at least at 90 decibels, causing Ling Chen's ears to hurt. If it was Shui Ruo calling him, he would have been fine with it. However, it was Tian Tian... he immediately became completely enraged.

Ling Chen logged off, and opened his eyes. He sat up, and saw Tian Tian was standing in front of him with her hands on her hips.

Seeing that Ling Chen had woken up, the little Tian Tian pointed at him and yelled, “Big bad guy, This Demon Queen wants to eat chocolate, hurry up and buy me some!”

“If you want to eat chocolate, buy it yourself!” Ling Chen retorted.

“You’re my servant, so you have to buy for me!”

“I’m not going to! I’ll see what you can do to make me.” Ling Chen stared at her with flames in his eyes. He was completely, utterly, furious.

The little Tian Tian had no idea. She sniffled, and angrily said, “Y-y-y-you big bad guy! You’re disobeying this Demon Queen yet again! Once This Demon Queen recovers her magic, I’ll…”

This little brat had been kindly picked up by him and Shui Ruo and brought back to their home. He had even gone out to buy her chocolate in the middle of the night, and she did not even thank him. And now, she was acting so arrogantly in front of him, and had caused him to miss out on catching the Lucky Cat. He really wanted to spank her badly…

And so, that’s what he did.

Before the little Tian Tian finished talking, he grabbed her and put her over his knee, and talked to her in a furious voice, “Little

Tian Tian! I'm just not going to obey you; what can you do about it? This is my home, so you have to listen to me. Got it?"

The little Tian Tian began to desperately struggle, "You big bad guy! Hurry up and let me go!! I, the Demon Queen, will not listen to you!! Let me go!!!"

Still so arrogant? Ling Chen raised his right hand, and smacked downwards.

Smack!

Ling Chen was angry, but still held himself back. Despite this, the smack was still enough for Tian Tian's bottom to flare into pain. The little Tian Tian had grown up being spoiled, and everyone had always been completely subservient to her. No one had ever hurt a single hair on her head before. Immediately, she started to bawl, "Wuaaa! You big bad guy.. you... you hit me... you dared to hit me..."

"So what if I hit you! Are you going to be disobedient any more??"

"You big bad guy! You super bad guy! As soon as I get my magic back, I... I'll definitely punish you every day. I'll turn you into the ugliest rabbit in the world, and make you do silly things... wuaa!!" Before she could finish speaking, another smack landed on her bottom, causing her to cry even louder, "It hurts so much!! Big sis... big sis save me!!"

Little Tian Tian's crying could probably be heard from a kilometre away. Shui Ruo hurriedly ran in, and saw that she was laid across Ling Chen's legs, with a waterfall of tears running down her face. As soon as she saw Shui Ruo, she began to cry even harder, "Big sis... save me big sis... big bad guy is hitting me... wuu... it hurts so much... wuu... big sis save me..."

Shui Ruo had no idea what had happened, and sympathetically came over, "Big brother, Tian Tian she... she can be a bit cheeky sometimes, but she's still a child..."

"If she's a child then she should be obedient!" Shui Ruo's attempt to calm him down had not worked, and another smack landed on Tian Tian's bottom.

"Waaah! It hurts... it really hurts... wuuu wuuuu...." Tian Tian's tears continued to flow, creating a large wet patch on the bed. However, Ling Chen showed no mercy, and his hand flew down again. He was careful to control his strength so that she would learn a lesson, but would not suffer any injuries.

"Big bad guy... I definitely won't forgive you..."

"Wuu... wuuu... I definitely won't listen to you... I'm going to turn you into a grasshopper, a mouse... wuua!"

"Big sis save me... save me... my bottom hurts..."

.....

Although it really hurt, the little brat was very strong-willed. Every time she retaliated, Ling Chen would give her another smack without mercy. Every time, Tian Tian would cry louder and louder. Her only saviour, Shui Ruo could do nothing but stand by and watch, occasionally pleading with Ling Chen to stop. Although her heart was breaking, she knew that this was for Tian Tian's own good, so she could only watch.

"Wuu... wuuuuu... it hurts... don't smack me anymore... don't smack my bottom... wuu..." After being hit ten or so times, Tian Tian finally gave in and begged Ling Chen to stop.

Ling Chen temporarily stopped, and asked, "So you know you're in the wrong?"

"Wuu... I was in the wrong... I was being bad... I won't be like this anymore, so don't smack me anymore..." Although the little Tian Tian didn't know what she did wrong, she didn't dare to retaliate anymore, instead giving in.

"Big brother..." Shui Ruo's heart hurt so much that she felt as if she was going to start crying as well. She grabbed Ling Chen's shoulder, asking him to stop.

"Then what did you do wrong?" Ling Chen ominously asked.

The little Tian Tian wiped her tears and sniffled, "I... I shouldn't have called you big bad guy... shouldn't have told you to buy me chocolate... shouldn't have cried so loudly... shouldn't...

shouldn't..."

Tian Tian looked and sounded so pitiful that even Ling Chen's heart softened. His anger immediately subsided... although Tian Tian could be quite a brat at times, she was indeed still a child. She had not caused him to lose the Lucky Cat on purpose, and now Ling Chen almost felt a bit guilty about spanking her just then.

Ling Chen flipped her over and put her into a more comfortable position. Tian Tian cowered, not daring to move. Even Ling Chen could not help but feel sorry for her, and feel bad about spanking her, "Tian Tian, did you know, on earth, kids need to listen to adults. Adults will only like kids who are good and obedient. Otherwise, kids who are bad will be spanked."

Tian Tian continued to sniffle, and did not dare to retort.

"Now, although Tian Tian is a Demon Queen, Tian Tian isn't able to use any of her magic, so Tian Tian's not a Demon Queen right now. That means Tian Tian's just a normal kid. If Tian Tian is good and obedient, everyone will like Tian Tian and protect Tian Tian. However, if Tian Tian is bad, not only will Tian Tian be spanked, but maybe your big sis and I will even leave you."

Tian Tian stopped crying. What Ling Chen had just said was what had been worrying her this entire time. She peeked at Ling Chen, and said in a small voice, "If... If I always listen to you and big sis, will you all like me and protect me, and not spank me and not leave me?"

Chapter 235 - Peter Pan!

Seeing that Ling Chen had calmed down, Shui Ruo let out a breath in relief. She sat beside the bed, and gently comforted Tian Tian, “Of course. If Tian Tian is good and obedient, big brother and I will like Tian Tian and protect Tian Tian well. We definitely wouldn’t leave Tian Tian. And if Tian Tian is angry, Tian Tian can wait until she recovers her magic to teach big brother a lesson. But until then, you have to listen to big brother, okay?”

Tian Tian pitifully sniffled, “But... but I’ve lost my magic... no one will be willing to obey me... If... If I listen to you guys, and there are bad guys in future... will you protect me even then?”

Tian Tian’s words caused Ling Chen to look over in shock, as if he had remembered something. He inwardly sighed, and smiled. Ling Chen picked up a screwdriver beside the bed, and said, “Tian Tian, look.”

Using his fingers on one hand, Ling Chen snapped the screwdriver in half...

Clang!!

The screwdriver that was more than half as thick as a finger broke cleanly in half.

Shui Ruo’s lips slightly parted, and Tian Tian forgot all about her crying. Her little mouth also hung wide open. The sound that the screwdriver made when it was snapped in half told her that it was

indeed made out of metal. She was clearly very impressed by Ling Chen being able to easily snap a metal screwdriver in half with just his fingers.

Tian Tian's gaze moved from Ling Chen's hand to his face. Her look of fear disappeared, and was instead replaced with admiration and awe, "So… so strong! I never knew earthlings were so strong!"

Tian Tian was not the only one who was shocked. Although Shui Ruo knew that Ling Chen was very strong, but she had never seen him use his strength before. However, she quickly recovered, and said to Tian Tian, "Look, big brother is really strong, right! No matter what sort of bad guys there are, big brother can easily beat them. With big brother protecting Tian Tian, no one will dare to bully Tian Tian."

"En… en!" Tian Tian meekly nodded.

Tian Tian was just a little girl, and had come to earth all by herself. After she found out that she had 'lost her magic', she felt very scared and insecure. As such, after meeting Shui Ruo, she decided to cling on to this kind and gentle big sister. What she lacked most, so far away from home, was a sense of security. If they really could protect her, she would be willing to listen to them.

She raised her head, and tearily looked at Shui Ruo, "I… I'm still recovering my magic, so I'll… I'll be good and listen to you guys. I'll do… do anything you tell me to…"

Ling Chen and Shui Ruo both smiled. Seeing her behaving so well, Ling Chen almost regretted putting her through that. However, it turned out that spanking had turned out for the better.

“Then... can I eat chocolate... just... just one piece...” Tian Tian slowly extended one finger, her eyes gazing at Shui Ruo and Ling Chen. She was almost like a little kitten begging for food, causing Ling Chen and Shui Ruo’s hearts to melt.

There was no way for Ling Chen to refuse her this time. Adding on his sense of guilt for punishing her just then, he immediately went into the living room and took out the box of chocolates that he had hidden. He didn’t immediately give them to Tian Tian, but instead said, “Tian Tian, you can have some if you call me ‘big bro’.”

If it was before the spanking, little Tian Tian would have immediately started cursing at him. However, Tian Tian didn’t refuse, and meekly called, “Big bro.”

It wasn’t too bad having another little sister. Ling Chen smiled, and put the box in her hand, “Little Tian Tian is very good, so you can have some chocolate now.”

After finally getting the chocolate, Tian Tian swallowed her saliva as she opened the box. She reached out, and picked up the smallest piece. She once again forcefully swallowed her saliva, closed the box, and put it in front of Ling Chen. After all, she said that she would only have one piece.

Although she wasn't crying anymore, but most Tian Tian's tears still had not dried, and her eyes were still red from crying. Anyone would feel sympathetic looking at such a sight. Ling Chen opened the box, and put it on Tian Tian's lap, "Since Tian Tian has become so well-mannered and behaved, Tian Tian can have all of this. After you finish eating it, big brother can buy you some more."

"Really?" Tian Tian hugged the box of chocolates tightly and yelled out with joy. Her teary face already had a smile on it... indeed, she was just a simple child who would cry and smile easily. Just a box of chocolates could cause her to be so happy.

To see so much chocolate all of a sudden, Tian Tian immediately forgot about her hurting bottom. While devouring the chocolates, she peeked at Ling Chen and mumbled, "Big bad guy... to be honest, you're not that bad..."

"Haha!" Ling Chen laughed.

"Big brother," Shui Ruo pulled Ling Chen's hand, "Tian Tian said that she wants to play Mystic Moon with us. Should we buy her gear this afternoon?"

Ling Chen immediately nodded, "Let's go in the afternoon. This way, Tian Tian won't be lonely when we're playing. She'll definitely enjoy playing Mystic Moon."

After finishing lunch, Ling Chen and Shui Ruo took Tian Tian out. They walked on either side of Tian Tian, holding her hands.

Tian Tian was like a little bird, chirping out question after question. She was filled with curiosity towards everything she saw. This sort of experience caused Ling Chen to feel warm in his heart, and he savoured this feeling. He was sure that Shui Ruo was feeling the same way as well. Although a third person appeared in their world, it wasn't too bad.

Sixty years ago, the entire world had abolished the restriction preventing people under 18 years of age entering the gaming world. Fifty years ago, the restriction on the playing time of people under 18 was also abolished. As such, they could bring Tian Tian with them into Mystic Moon with no worries.

The process for Tian Tian getting her gaming gear went smoothly. Like them, Tian Tian also chose a bracelet. It was a cute, pink bracelet, which suited Tian Tian very much. After receiving her bracelet, Tian Tian pulled Shui Ruo and Ling Chen as she ran home, evidently very eager to enter the game.

Upon reaching home, little Tian Tian immediately ran into the bedroom, without even waiting for Ling Chen to explain Mystic Moon. Shui Ruo smiled and said, "I'm going to go into Mystic Moon with Tian Tian. I'll tell her my name and how to contact us. I'm also going to see how Su'Er's doing."

Soon, Shui Ruo also entered Mystic Moon. Ling Chen stood silently in the living room for a while, then walked to the balcony, and made a special gesture.

Very soon, a person appeared in front of him. Ling Chen calmly said, "Create an identity called 'Ling Tian Tian', 10 years old. You

know what else to do.”

The black shadow nodded, and immediately left. Ling Chen suddenly asked, “When will we start to deal with the Yan Huang Alliance?”

“Immediately!”

“Good.”

Ling Chen turned and returned to the living room. He lay on the sofa, and entered Mystic Moon.

He appeared in the “Deserted Region” where he was previously. Of course, not even any fur from the Lucky Cat was there, let alone the Lucky Cat itself. Opening his stats page, Ling Chen looked at his “Lucky Hand” skill and grinned... he almost started to maniacally laugh.

With the Lucky Hand, his only problem with money would be being unable to spend it all!!
If... If he could evolve Lucky Hand into True Lucky Hand someday, he would be able to take everything from someone in a single moment. He felt excited just thinking about it.

“Hahahaha!”

Although he had not been able to catch the Lucky Cat, this sort of outcome still made him delirious with joy. He called out the Cloud

Stepping Mare, and continued to head south.

Twenty minutes later…

“Young master, good news!” Flame Shadow charged into the meeting hall, jubilant as he reported to Long Tian Yun.

“Speak!”

“The Dark Night already completed their mission and found Peter Pan, and brought him over. He’s outside right now!” Flame Shadow quickly said.

Long Tian Yun immediately stood up, and his face darkened, “Bring him in!”

The meeting hall’s doors opened, and a person in black, radiating killing intent, brought in a small figure with a face full of fright. Above the small figure’s head were two bright words:

Peter Pan!!

“You’re that… Peter Pan!!” Long Tian Yun’s words were squeezed out from between his teeth. The amount of hatred he felt for this person in front of him was unfathomable. It was because of this person that he, as well as the entire Yan Huang Alliance, had lost a significant amount of money and had become the laughingstocks

of the world!

Peter Pan's entire body started shaking, his face was as white as a piece of paper. Under Long Tian Yun's vengeful gaze, he collapsed onto the floor. He tried to get up, as he despairingly yelled out, "Don't... Don't kill me!!! It has nothing to do with me, nothing to do with me... don't kill me!!"

Flame Shadow walked beside Long Tian Yun and said in a low voice, "The Dark Night has found out this Peter Pan's real life identity. They're beside him right now, and forced him to enter the virtual world."

Long Tian Yun's face became darker and darker. Peter Pan's fear was written all over his face, actions and speech... this cowardly person had caused his Yan Huang Alliance to suffer such humiliation?!

Chapter 236 - The Wrath Of Long Tian Yun

The one who brought “Peter Pan” was dressed completely in black, with only his eyes exposed. This was the simple attire of the Dark Night. There had never been a person who had seen the face of someone from the Dark Night and no one knew the origins or hideout of the Dark Night either. But Long Tian Yun’s interest was currently not on him, it was completely on Peter Pan

“Talk. Who made you this daring, that you did this?!” Long Tian Yun said, gnashing his teeth. He had had some doubt before, but now that he had seen Peter Pan for himself, he could say with 100% certainty that Peter Pan was only a pawn. The fear that this small fry displayed was not fake. His pupils were dilated, limbs were trembling and his complexion was pale… How could such a timid person have the guts to shame the Yan Huang Alliance, let alone be capable of attaining 2 Guild Creation Tokens?

“I’ll talk… I’ll talk… I’ll tell you everything… please… please Alliance Master Long don’t kill me… I don’t want to die,” Peter Pan was lying on the ground, unable to stop shaking. He didn’t have any strength to stand and even the words he spoke were not very clear.

Flame Shadow spoke in a low voice to Long Tian Yun, “The ways of the Dark Night are truly extraordinary. They found his real person immediately. Only with the threat of death would he speak the truth. It would have been entirely useless if they had only found his game character.” After speaking, he stared straight at Peter Pan and said in a neutral tone, “Peter Pan, we have known from the beginning that you were forced to do this and that it was not your fault. You only need to honestly tell us who made you do

this and we will let you go. If telling us this information puts you at risk of death, then we can even protect you, we can take you in. Haha, my Yan Huang Alliance always follows through with what has been said, so do not be afraid, just tell us what we want to know."

Upon hearing words like this, Peter Pan's complexion was slightly restored and he nodded repeatedly, "I'll talk, I'll talk... I'll tell you everything. Don't kill me... please don't kill me..."

The cold sweat on Peter Pan's forehead was rushing down like a waterfall. He raised his hand to wipe off the sweat and cowered as he spoke, "The one who made me do this is my boss. It really wasn't me... even if I had that much courage..."

"Your boss? Who is your boss?" Long Tian Yun interrupted with a gloomy face.

Long Tian Yun's approach made Peter Pan shirk away and he exclaimed with fear, "Gu Tian Nan! My boss is called Gu Tian Nan. It was him who gave me 2 Guild Creation Tokens on that day, the day of the Auction, at the Guild Registration location, and told me to wait for his signal. When he signaled, I would immediately create... create the guild that he told me to... I really was forced!!"

Gu Tian Nan...

Gu Tian Nan...

Skyfall!!

Long Tian Yun and Flame Shadow's faces dropped at the same time. Flame Shadow leaned over and said in a low voice, "Young master..."

Up till today, they had been greatly suspicious of the Skyfall Dynasty, because of the ones capable of attaining two Guild Creation Tokens, only few of them had the guts to insult the Yan Huang Alliance. However, whilst the Skyfall Dynasty have had unceasing secret conflicts with the Yan Huang Alliance, clear outward conflicts were rare. Moreover Skyfall also had great respect for Long Tian Yun and did not have a reason to do this kind of thing. Furthermore, they were fighting to be the first Guild so if they got the Guild Creation Token, why would they not have just immediately used it to create their Guild?

Internally furious, Long Tian Yun tried hard to maintain his calm demeanor before suddenly sneering, "Bullshit!! Haha, facing imminent death and you still dare to mess with me. Gu Tian Nan and I were fighting tooth and nail for that Guild Creation Token. Everyone saw it. He was dreaming of being the first Guild to be created and if two Guild Creation Tokens were his, he would have created his Guild the first moment he could! Moreover Gu Tian Nan was a very calm person, he would not do something rash like this. You want to frame the leader of the Skyfall Dynasty and cause conflicts and suspicions between us! Haha, it really is a good plan... but do you take me as a fool! I think you aren't afraid unless you actually see your coffin!!"

"No!! No... I'm not lying! Everything I've said is true!!" Peter Pan

shook his head furiously, “It was really my boss that made me do this…”

“You dare continue playing!!”

“I’m really not lying, you have to believe me!!” Peter Pan’s pupils dilated and seeing his panicked state, it really was very hard to believe that he was lying. Long Tian Yun had already believed him and he felt like he was going to explode in annoyance, but he was careful in nature and would not easily trust before drawing conclusions. At this time, Peter Pan thought of something and stretched out his left hand, “Yes… evidence… I have evidence!! Alliance Master Long, I have proof to prove I am not lying!!”

“What kind of proof?” Long Tian Yun’s eyes narrowed.

Peter Pan breathed heavily and fumbled with his bracelet. After some time and some shuffling, some voices came out of the bracelet.

“Hahahaha! Refreshing… It’s been so long since I’ve felt this refreshed. Long Tian Yun’s expression seeing Peter Pan’s work… It looks like he had eaten a shit, hahahaha!”

“Hey, big brother, your acting is really good. You have the same head of sweat that Long Tian Yun had when contending for the Guild Creation Token, even I almost think that you wanted to get the Guild Creation Token, hahahaha!”

“Tch, what kind of person is big brother, playing Long Tian Yun like he was playing his own son, hahahaha!”

Long Tian Yun’s expression changed, turning green, because these 3 voices.... They clearly belonged to the 3 Kings of Skyfall Dynasty—Skyfall, Against the Sky and Judging Sky!!

“Before, it was also the Yan Huang Alliance causing problems. This is really a fresh breath of air... Peter Pan, this is a great thing you have done. Relax, it couldn’t have been done without you. But remember this. Only the 4 of us will know of this affair. Even if your dear mother were to return from the grave, you cannot tell her! Otherwise...”

“Bo... boss please relax... Even if I die... I will protect this secret...” This was the voice of Peter Pan, trembling.

“Haha, good! Of course I believe in you, otherwise I would not have entrusted you with such a task. Come, sit and drink some tea. Today you will be rewarded well.”

“Thank... thank you my three bosses...”

“Big brother, I gotta say you really had amazing foresight this time. When you and Long Tian Yun were up to 900 million gold, even I was sweating... how did you know 900 million gold would not beat Long Tian Yun?”

“Long Tian Yun regards prestige and honour more highly than

life itself, so he would not have allowed the reputation of the first Guild to fall into someone else's hand. Therefore, unless it reached 1 billion, he would absolutely never let go. If we got the Guild Creation Token and became the first Guild, who knows what he would resort to for it. Overall our strength is inferior to that of the Yan Huang Alliance, so I didn't want to fight them to the bitter end. So after getting the Guild Creation Token, I was hesitant to use it, and it was only until I got the second one that I thought of a way to dump on Long Tian Yun and the whole of the Yan Huang Alliance. And after the Token had been auctioned away, no matter how much Long Tian Yun deliberated, he would never suspect it was us."

No only did we get 1 billion gold, they weren't even able to get the first Guild status after everyone had watched them get the Guild Creation Token... haha, a truly refreshing feeling!"

"This was only the beginning. Tomorrow, when Ling Tian takes back Long Tian Yun's Guild Creation Token during the fight, making Long Tian Yun's scolding be in vain, even his fame would be thoroughly discredited. We will then cancel that Guild and use the Guild Creation Token to set up the first Guild... Hehe, when the time comes, the Yan Huang Alliance will be badly hit, with all the blame falling on Peter Pan and Ling Tian. Perhaps they'll even think everything was Ling Tian's doing, so they wont have the time to contest us for being the first Guild. After we've settled down, they will then look to us, but it wouldn't be so easy by then and at that time, in Mystic Moon, our Skyfall Dynasty name will forever step on the head of the Yan Huang Alliance. Hahahaha."

"But big brother, will Ling Tian actually beat the Sword Emperor?"

“Relax, its certain. I never do things I don’t have confidence in. Moreover, I have already paid him a large sum of money. That money can’t just be spent on anything! Right now, lets just wait for tomorrow afternoon.”

The end was just three people in maniacal laughter...

The forehead of Flame Shadow was sweating, Long Tian Yun’s complexion was black as coal, his shaking fists revealed his anger. He stretched out a finger, pointing at Peter Pan, “Bring me your bracelet!!”

Flame Shadow quickly moved forward, taking the bracelet from Peter Pan, looking for the recording... the time of recording was exactly the day that the auction had occurred!!

“Young Master, there is something else. The news that was just obtained...” Looking at how furious Long Tian Yun was, Flame Shadow chose his words carefully, “That day, when Ling Tian escaped from the plains... Although they have hidden him well, it can be determined that he is among the ranks of the Skyfall Dynasty.”

Bang!!!

Long Tian Yun angrily threw the bracelet onto the ground. It cracked completely as he stood, breathing heavily, both hands stretched out.

“Skyfall… Skyfall Dynasty… this time, either you die or I die!!”

In the real world, sound recordings could be synthesized, everything could be tampered with. But in Mystic Moon, under the rules, regardless of whether it be time, length or content, players did not have a way to tamper with recordings, let alone manufacture them. The sounds that were heard were indeed Skyfall, Against the Sky and Judging Sky. This could not be wrong!!

So this recording was completely solid proof!

From the auction to the fight with the Sword Emperor… it turned out everything was completely orchestrated!

And he, Long Tian Yun, was like a puppet controlled by strings. He had been played like a dog!

“Alliance… Alliance Master Long, I have said everything… let me go… let my one cheap life go… the big boss has already decided to cancel the guild I created in 2 days time He’ll then create the first Guild, and at that time, I will definitely be killed. So now, I have tried to run away, I…I definitely will not tell anyone about what happened today… I beg you to let me go,” Peter Pan fell down cowering on the ground.

Flame Shadow glanced at Peter Pan and said in a low voice, “Young master, this person, what do I do with him?”

Long Tian Yun stared at him, the anger that he was releasing in this moment could make anybody fearful and apprehensive. He took a long breath, his vision focused on the black figure behind Peter Pan. Then, constraining his anger, he calmly said, “The ability of the Dark Night does not disappoint. The remaining fees will be paid within the hour. Moreover, I would like to see this fellow in front of us in person… Or, you could tell me where he is, and we can get him ourselves.”

“The price will increase by 50 million,” The dark figured person said coolly.

“A price increase?” Long Tian Yun wrinkled his brow.

“The Dark Night never does anything for free,” The dark figure’s tone was still icy and it was unpleasant to hear its hoarseness. Obviously, this was not his real voice. The caution of the Dark Night could be seen here.

“50 million, that’s ruthless,” Long Tian Yun said in a low voice. 50 million and only to ask for a location? It wasn’t just any kind of ruthless.

“Your Yan Huang Alliance can afford it.”

“You…”

“Young Master,” Flame Shadow hurriedly opened his mouth,

then using a softer voice so that only Long Tian Yun could hear him, “This Peter Pan is but a pawn and does not have any value. We have no reason to spend so much on him. For now, let him cancel that guild... then, let the a member of the Dark Night eliminate him...”

Chapter 237 - The First Guild

“Ding... you are about to cancel the guild ‘Below is the Yan Huang Alliance created by a dog’, are you sure?”

“Definitely... confirmed,” Peter Pan’s small voice was trembling in response. To establish a guild, one needed to be at the guild creation office, but disbanding one was very simple. The leader of the guild could disband it at any time and at any place.

“Ding... your guild ‘Below is the Yan Huang Alliance created by a dog’ has been disbanded successfully. As it was the first Guild that was established, you can announce this to the whole Chinese server. Do you wish to do so?”

“...”

“Ding... announcing to Chinese server. The guild that was first created under the name ‘Below is the Yan Huang Alliance created by a dog’ has been disbanded, the Guild Rankings are once again vacant and will be temporarily closed. The next guild that is created will be ranked as the first. May every player continue to work hard.”

“Ding... announcement to Chinese server ...”

‘The first guild’ that had let Yan Huang Alliance be completely humiliated and caused discussions among the players a few days

ago had suddenly been disbanded. The Guild Rankings were once again empty. Immediately, all kinds of discussions started once again, making the peaceful place feel chaotic.

"It must be the Yan Huang Alliance. They found Peter Pan and forced him to disband it."

"Whatever consequence Peter Pan must have faced is probably pitiful. But if he dared to humiliate the Yan Huang Alliance like this, he must have known what he was getting himself into."

"Who do you think, the next 'first guild' will be? The Guild Creation Token that was won by the Yan Huang Alliance has been taken by Ling Tian. Do you think he will use it himself or sell it to the highest bidder? Now that the Guild Rankings are vacant, the Guild Creation Token Ling Tian has can once again be sold at a high auction price!"

"He's definitely going to sell it. Ling Tian will always work alone. If he dares to establish a Guild, then the Yan Huang Alliance will be the first to destroy it"

"Haha, its already over, I was really hoping that that name would stay on that list for at least a few more days," Skyfall said disappointingly, casually lying on the ground unaware that he had been set up, "But this is also good, this kind of cheap trick can't last very long. However, I do really want to get to know this Peter Pan person, or whoever it was behind him. To know what they hold as sacred, what was giving them so much courage to do this."

“Now there is a vacancy in the Guild Rankings, so attaining a Guild Creation Token is a matter of urgency. But the only Guild Creation that is known to exist is on Ling Chen. Big brother, we are already looking very hard for him,” Against the Sky said.

“Who knows, Ling Tian might auction off the Guild Creation Token. Otherwise, if he dares establish a guild, he will encounter the Yan Huang Alliance who will ultimately destroy it,” Judging Sky noted as he nodded.

The three Kings of the Guild spoke with confidence, not knowing the evil reputation that had now been put on their heads.

“Alliance Master Long, I have… already disbanded the Guild. You said before… as long as I honestly told you everything, you will… will let me go,” Peter Pan didn’t have the guts to even stand up and he spoke carefully and meticulously thinking of his words.

“Young Master?” Flame Shadow inquired as he looked at Long Tian Yun.

Long Tian Yun shot the person behind Peter Pan a look, and said, “This person has been delivered as per our prior agreement. Moreover, I have another task I will hand over to you. I hope you can help me with it…”

“I refuse,” Not even waiting for Long Tian Yun to finish speaking. The black figure said in his ice cold voice.

“Why?” Long Tian Yun’s facial expression sank.

“I, as, part of the Dark Night, will never continually engage in someone’s business over such a short time period. Goodbye.”

The black figure didn’t waste time with useless words. He didn’t give Long Tian Yun a second glance as he pulled Peter Pan, who had been slumped onto the ground, to his feet and started dragging him out towards the door.

“Young master, do you want me to…”

“No!” Long Tian Yun raised his hand, staring at the black figure as he left, and finally let out a snicker, “Although the Dark Night is crazy, we have no need to engage in conflict with them. But in regards to the Skyfall Dynasty, ha…”

Standing near Long Tian Yun, Flame Shadow could feel the anger emanating from Long Tian Yun. After so many years, it was the first time he had been this angry. Before, he had hated Ling Tian. But now, his hatred for the Skyfall Dynasty had surpassed what he felt toward Ling Tian. Because of this situation, his relationship with Skyfall Dynasty was now long dead.

Flame Shadow’s innermost feelings were similarly furious. This Skyfall Dynasty not only played Long Tian Yun, but the entire Yan Huang Alliance. If not for the Dark Night, they would be unable to find who actually did this. “Young master, we already know that the current Guild Creation Token is with Ling Tian and given the current situation, the possibility of it falling into the hands of the

Skyfall Dynasty is very real. The previous guild has been disbanded and if Skyfall Dynasty immediately uses the Guild Creation Token, they will become the new… first guild!”

Long Tian Yun’s expression was clouded and he pondered for a while, before saying in a low voice, “No! If they made Peter Pan disband the guild then eliminated the potential informant, they can confidently use the Guild Creation Token, without worrying that we suspect them. But now, Peter Pan had disbanded the guild under conditions that they did not know about, so they will definitely feel there is some kind of problem, worrying that everything has been exposed. In this kind of state, they would not have the guts to use the Guild Creation Token. Who knows, perhaps they might even give it to Ling Tian as a big favour because he needs it to create Yun Meng Xin’s ‘Heart’s Dream’!”

Flame Shadow thought about it for a while, and quickly said, “Young Master is wise.”

In the north residents’ area of Azure Dragon City is the Heart’s Dream hut.

“Huh? Big brother Ling Tian still hasn’t arrived? He told us to gather here, what’s the matter?”

Under the summons of Ling Chen, Yun Meng Xin, Xiao Qi, Su Er, Mu Bing Yao… all the girls of Heart’s Dream had gathered, but Ling Chen was no where to be seen. Yun Meng Xin’s hands were holding onto a giant amount of funds. This was enough for buy a

bigger house for Heart's Dream but she had not done this yet. The girls also had no intention of changing the place. Although this place was small, it was convenient.

"Big brother says that he will be here immediately and he wants to give everyone a big surprise… it could be a shock," Shui Ruo said mysteriously, at the same time giving clear instructions to Little Tian Tian who newly entered the Novice Village. From Little Tian Tian's reactions, she could hear that she was very excited when playing, and very happy.

When Shui Ruo finished speaking, the pleasant surprise and shock immediately came.

"Ding… Chinese Server Announcement. Player 'Ling Tian' in Azure Dragon City has registered to establish a guild, "Heart's Dream". The Guild Rankings have opened; 'Heart's Dream' is ranked first in the Guild rankings. Because 'Heart's Dream' is not the first guild, no further rewards have been awarded."

"Ding… Chinese Server Announcement…"

"Ding… Chinese Server Announcement…"

The Chinese Guild rankings: (Order according to time the Guild was established)

First: Heart's Dream, Founder: Ling Tian

There were 3 prompting sounds, signaling a new name and a lone appearance in the Guild Rankings. At this time, the disbanding of the first guild was only 30 minutes ago. The previous guild was clearly for the sake of humiliation, but this 'Heart's Dream' was the first guild in a true sense. This guild did not even belong to the Yan Huang Alliance or Skyfall Dynasty, but instead to the most prosperous of the area, Ling Tian!!
So as a result, the guild's appearance brought about immediate controversy.

"First ranking guild turned out to be created by Ling Tian... could it be that Ling Tian is going to destroy the status quo in the Chinese Server?"

"The highest level, the highest Fame, the first in terms of equipment, the top ranking pets... now he has the first guild... My God, he has the entire first list! He must be from the heavens!"

"There's no one who does not know of Ling Tian's fame. If he creates the first guild, as long as he makes a rallying call, innumerable players will rush to join him. In future, it might even be on the same footing as the Yan Huang Alliance... Perhaps even surpassing them!"

"The first guild of the past was always the Yan Huang Alliance, but this time its actually been robbed by Ling Tian. Now the Yan Huang Alliance has issued a kill on sight order for Ling Tian... and Ling Tian only entered the world not too long ago. He doesn't have that much influence and now he unexpectedly steps before the Yan Huang Alliance. The Yan Huang Alliance will surely wipe out 'Heart's Dream' before it can develop."

“Why did Ling Tian create a guild called ‘Heart’s Dream’? Seems like it would be a guild more suitable for a girl’s guild?”

The name ’Heart’s Dream’ came into the conversation of the players and entered the sight of all the players. The first guild was founded by the infamous Ling Tian and the popularity reached an incomparable height in an instant. Innumerable players were discussing and looking for it. Some of the other players were also worrying about ‘Heart’s Dream’s’ destiny. After all, firstly, the Yan Huang Alliance would never allow another to dominate it, and secondly, Ling Tian and Yan Huang Alliance have had a big falling out.

Azure Dragon City, Heart’s Dream House.

The sound ringing out startled all the girls sitting there except for Mu Bing Yao. They sat by the table, unable to help but confirm repeatedly that what just happened was real.

“He... really used that Guild Creation Token,” Yun Meng Xin spoke in shock. Being the first guild was indeed awe-inspiring. In addition, with Ling Tian’s name, there wasn’t a single person in all of the Chinese Server who didn’t know the ‘Heart’s Dream’ name now. This fame was completely unimaginable.

But behind this “first Guild” honour was also a great danger, one of which was the Yan Huang Alliance. Everyone knew that the Guild Creation Token used to create Heart’s Dream was taken directly from Long Tian Yun’s hand, so there were innumerable

reasons why the Yan Huang Alliance could not permit the existence of Heart's Dream. Even Long Tian Yun knew that this guild actually belonged to Yun Meng Xin.

"Good Heavens... the first guild, the first guild! Su'Er, big sister Meng Xin, our Heart's Dream has officially become the first guild!!" Xiao Qi was not aware of the imminent danger like Yun Meng Xin. Her mouth was wide open and her pupils dilated. There was only excitement.

Chapter 238 - Believe Me

“Ling Tian... what is he trying to pull?” Yun Feng who was training outside was shocked when he heard of Heart’s Dream’s establishment. These few days, Ling Chen had brought many shocks and scares, but this time was definitely the biggest one. He of all people should know the actual size of Heart’s Dream... including Ling Tian there were only 6 people. With only 6 people, creating it at such an inappropriate time was an incredibly rash decision-even a fool knew that Yan Huang Alliance would relentlessly try to destroy it. No matter how powerful Ling Tian was, even if he could protect himself, could he protect the entire Heart’s Dream?

“I am more and more confused about this person. With such strange thought processes, he must be completely different from us normal people.” Xiao Qiu Feng, who was with Yun Feng, said in a low voice.

“After a new guild is created, there is a 1 month protection period; during this period the guild can be attacked, but not destroyed. But after the 1 month period ends what can he do? After a month, won’t it just...” Yun Feng scratched his head. He had realized that what Ling Chen was doing was more and more outrageous... it was almost a ridiculous level of outrageousness, and, with each action, he simultaneously gathered more and more hatred from the Yan Huang Alliance.

“Guess we’ll just wait and see... this Ling Tian, always seems to be full of surprises. If I only just met this person, I would think he is an idiot. But the one who managed to defeat Long Tian Yun over and over again, would he do things with no regard for

consequence? I'm sure Long Tian Yun has also considered these things, so he won't be too hasty to make a move on Heart's Dream. Instead, he'll…"

Xiao Qiu Feng was midway through his sentence, when a piece of news reached his ears, he then laughed coldly: "I see…"

Heart's Dream's small house.

Ling Chen came in seemingly high spirited. Once he entered, the 5 girls immediately surrounded him, and with a grin he gloated: "Did you get my big surprise? Haha, today is the big creation day for Heart's Dream. All you beautiful ladies can now cheer heartily, and celebrate this day which will never be forgotten. How about we go to Azure Dragon City's best restaurant to get a big meal?"

After he finished speaking, he was met with silence. Xiao Qi was going to cheer, but upon seeing Yun Meng Xin's expression, she kept it in, not speaking a word.

Ling Chen's brow immediately dropped, and weakly said: "No way… today Heart's Dream was created, and it's the top ranked guild in the entire Chinese server, and this is your response…?"

"Ai." Yun Meng Xin sighed, she raised her head and said: "You're right in saying that we should celebrate the establishment of Heart's Dream. We did not dare to even dream of becoming the first guild, but…"

“There are no ‘buts’.” Ling Chen stretched out his hand about 10 cm from Yun Meng Xin’s lips, causing her eyes to quiver. He then smiled, and said slowly without a care in the world: “You only need to believe in me.”

Yun Meng Xin: “…”

Xiao Qi: “…”

Su’Er: “…”

Mu Bing Yao: “…”

Shui Ruo: “…”

After Ling Chen said that, the whole room lapsed into complete silence.

The girls all knew what Yun Meng Xin was worried about, and also knew that behind the honour of being the first guild, there is also a huge crisis that would be faced. They also thought that after Ling Chen returned, he would explain everything. But he didn’t, and only said this one line…

You only need to believe in me…

This one sentence, mysteriously, burrowed into their hearts.

“Meng Xin,” Ling Chen said softly, “The first time I met Yun Feng, he told me that your personality is your strength, but your older brother wishes that you did not have this strength. He hopes that you will learn to depend on others, and not just try to chase all your goals on your own, taking all burdens with your own shoulders. You are a girl, and girls should learn to rely on the boys around them-they could be family, they could be friends, or even colleagues, or perhaps even your Mr. Right. Do you not know that a man’s existence is for a woman to depend on? You are so intelligent, so you wouldn’t neglect this point, would you? Right now, I am your colleague, and your friend, so if you believe in me, why not choose to give me the burden that you are shouldering? That way, you can go and fulfill your other dreams, or do things that a girl is supposed to do. Don’t think or worry too much. Your big brother Yun Feng’s biggest hope is that you can live happily, and I also hope that this hope of his can be fulfilled. Meng Xin, this is your guild, which is also the carrier of your dreams, and by your big brother’s request, I am to help you carry out this dream. This is also my biggest purpose for entering the virtual world. So, Meng Xin, don’t be too anxious, just believe in me.”

He didn’t explain why he established “Heart’s dream” in that moment, but what he did say dissolved their worries and anxieties, warming their hearts.

“Big brother Ling Tian, thank you so much for what you just said.” Xiao Qi’s eyes glittered, from the first day meeting him, she always had that look of adoration in her eyes. Today, this gaze also contained many other things...

Su’Er bit her lips gently. Since Ling Tian’s entrance, she had been

quietly watching him, her gaze never leaving his body. When facing him, she was not as shy as before. At this time, she felt her heart beat faster, and quietly, her heart was saying: “How… can you be so good… I… what do I do…”

Shui Ruo’s eyes twinkled, and stood by Ling Chen’s side, holding his hand: “I support what my brother says, big sister Meng Xin, you are so kind and warmhearted; your dream will definitely be realized. Wait… right now, it is our dream!”

Mu Bing Yao looked away from Ling Chen, with a complicated look in her eyes, then said, “Meng Xin, we are your partners.”

Meng Xin’s eyes were moist and she was unable to speak. All of her heart’s worries and anxieties all vanished without a trace because of all these words of encouragement, and her eyes were occupied with this male figure before her…

He was ranked first, had incomparable strength, killed the Flame Emperor, was able to defeat the Sword Emperor as well as kill the Alliance Master of the Yan Huang Alliance twice despite being surrounded by thousands of people. He, a single person, could put the Yan Huang Alliance to shame, and could still live free and unrestrained despite being hunted by the Yan Huang Alliance. This kind of person only appeared in legends, but in the world of Mystic Moon, he was always near her. It was like he entered this world for her sake. Without him, she would never be able to make Heart’s Dream the number 1 guild, and definitely would not be able to gain a fortune that a normal person could never amass in their entire lives.

This man was one who was strong and filled everyone with hope.

It was him who made her want to rely on a man for the first time. Growing up in the Yun family, from young, her life was never in her own hands. She was just a weak, young girl of small stature, and with so little strength, she could only rely on herself. Hearing Ling Chen's words, her mind spun, and something seemed to well up inside her heart.

After so long, she finally let out a weak sound: "Ling Tian, thank you, why would I ever... not believe you."

"So, the only thing that matters is that we are Heart's Dream, the number guild, and the only guild! No matter how big the other guilds are, they will always be under our foot. You don't need to worry about anything else. Even if the sky falls down, Heart's Dream has a man who can hold it up." Ling Chen patted his own chest, feeling that what he said was sensational, but in his heart, he truly wanted to carry the entire Heart's Dream by himself. This was what he had promised Yun Feng, and he definitely wouldn't go back on his word.

"Yes, yes! Our Heart's Dream is China's first guild, what an honour! After so many years, this is truly unique... ha, it's the second time the first guild has been snatched from the Yan Huang Alliance. Perhaps, even after a long time, people will still remember the name of Heart's Dream." Xiao Qi beamed, her face like a flower, "To be able to join Heart's Dream already makes me happy... and, to be able to meet big brother Ling Tian, also makes me so happy, hehe."

Shui Ruo saw the way Xiao Qi was gazing at Ling Chen and secretly smiled … the way I look at big brother should be something similar to that. And Su Su, her gaze is particularly special… Big brother, do you not know, the aura you have right now, and after doing so many things, how much danger you are to the females around you…

“Well then, everyone should join.” Ling Chen pulled up the guild panel, and sent invitations to everyone.

“Ding… player ‘Meng Yu You Xin’ has joined.”

“Ding… player ‘Cute Qi Qi has joined.”

“Ding… player ‘Su Su’ has joined.”

“Ding… player ‘Mu Bing Yao’ has joined.”

“Ding… player ‘Ruo Ruo Lian Chen’ has joined.”

Heart’s Dream immediately reached 6 people, the girls broke out in joyous laughter. Today was a day to remember. Because today was the true beginning of “Heart’s Dream” – an incredibly prestigious beginning.

Chapter 239 - The Unpredictable Future

“Ling Tian, although this is not really good news, but I’m sure you won’t mind me telling you.” Yun Meng Xin looked up towards Ling Chen’s face, “Just then, big brother told me that Long Tian Yun has already ordered that anyone who joins “Heart’s Dream” will be repeatedly chased down and killed.”

“Ah?!” The girls all simultaneously cried out in shock. However, their shock immediately turned into anger, “This low-life Long Tian Yun is simply too evil. He’s relying on such under-handed tactics!”

Once this information had been spread, even with Ling Tian’s fame, the number of people who were brave enough to join Heart’s Dream could be counted on a single hand. After all, the Yan Huang Alliance, at its peak, had tens of millions of players. Heart’s Dream had just been established, and had not even ‘grown its wings’ yet, much less become a powerhouse. Who would dare to risk being chased down by the Yan Huang Alliance just to join a guild like this?

“Hahahaha!” Ling Chen started laughing loudly, “This isn’t strange at all. I would feel strange if Long Tian Yun didn’t give this order. However, this won’t have much of an effect on us.”

“But, because of this, no one will be willing to join our Heart’s Dream. This means we won’t be able to develop.” Xiao Qi anxiously said.

“Why do we need other people to join?” Ling Chen asked.

“Ah?” All of the girls were shocked by this question, and stood there in silence. Didn’t guilds need more people in order to become stronger? Moreover, wasn’t the whole point of having the first Guild Creation Token to attract players to join?

“We are enough for Heart’s Dream. Our goal is to help Meng Xin. If strangers joined, would their goal be the same as ours? Additionally, if too many people join, Heart’s Dream may not even totally belong to us anymore...” Ling Chen looked at them earnestly, “Also, none of us have any experience in creating and managing a large-scale guild. If Heart’s Dream was suddenly inundated with a large wave of players, would any of you know how to manage all of them? What if some of them were spies sent in from other guilds?”

All of the girls fell silent.

“In all honesty, the six of us are enough.” Ling Chen said as he smiled. From the beginning, it was never his intention to develop Heart’s Dream into a large guild. This was completely unnecessary. To him, it wouldn’t be very difficult to fulfil Yun Meng Xin’s dream, so there was no point making things so complicated.

“But, in that case...” Xiao Qi was still worried, but after some thought, she smiled, “Never mind! I believe that big brother Ling Tian knows what he’s talking about. Although it’s only six of us, but it’s also nice and cosy like this!”

“En!” Su’Er nodded, “To be honest, I like it like this. I believe… everything that big brother Ling Tian said.”

Of course, Mu Bing Yao and Shui Ruo did not have any objections. They all looked towards Yun Meng Xin. After all, the whole point for the existence of Heart’s Dream was for her. Seeing the looks in their eyes, Yun Meng Xin laughed, “Today is the first day our Heart’s Dream was officially established. We should go out and have a big meal! Let’s go.”

“Yay! Let’s go, let’s go! I want to eat all the yummy things I’ve been waiting to eat. We’re in a game anyways, so we won’t get fat… Su Su? Su Su? Are you alright? You looked so lost in thought.”

“Ah? No-nothing…”

“Were you still thinking about that incident? Don’t worry, don’t worry, my dad already ordered security to be doubled, so everything will be fine. Let’s go, let’s go… Big brother Ling Tian, we’re all girls, so as the only man you have to treat us!”

Ling Chen: “……”

……

Today was the first day that Heart’s Dream had been officially established. The six people put down all of the worries, and had an incredibly relaxed and happy afternoon together.

No one knew what would come in future. Right now, they just purely wanted to use “Heart’s Dream” to fulfil Meng Xin’s wish so that she could have true freedom. None of them knew what this beginning signified; none of them knew what sort of cruel joke fate would play on them; none of them knew how tumultuous Heart’s Dream’s future would be; none of them knew how much joy and sorrow Heart’s Dream would bring; none of them knew that this man that all of these girls were relying on would one day create such a miracle…

This was a beginning that none of them would ever forget.

Although Heart’s Dream was a tiny guild, it was still not easy to fully establish it. For example, territory was a very important matter. They only had six people… seven, when Tian Tian joined. With such low numbers, it would be impossible to obtain and hold a large territory. As such, their small building was enough for now. It was just that the small building’s defence was very, very poor. After the one month protection period elapsed, it would not be able to protect the guild members from attacks. As such, the all-important Guild Sign had to be kept somewhere safe. Ling Chen left all of this for Yun Meng Xin to organise as she wished.

The Heart’s Dream guild members enjoyed their time together until night-time. When Ling Chen and Shui Ruo logged off, it was already 7pm. They did not feel hungry at all within the game, but as soon as they woke up in the real world, the hunger hit them immediately. Ling Chen got up from the sofa, and walked into the bedroom. Shui Ruo got up from the bed, while Tian Tian remained lying on the bed, still in the game.

“Shh...” Shui Ruo motioned for Ling Chen to be quiet, “Big brother, let’s go make dinner, then wake her up when it’s ready. She looks so happy right now, so I don’t want to pull her away just yet. Also, when we logged off, Tian Tian told me she’s nearly LV2.”

“Oh, that’s not too slow,” Ling Chen said, “At this rate, she should be able to leave Novice Village in about ten or so days.”

Presently, the Novice Village was not as crowded as it had first been when the game had opened. As such, levelling up did not take as long due to there being more resources for everyone.

“Yeah, so soon our Heart’s Dream will have a new little member. By the way, big brother, how are you going to develop Heart’s Dream?” Shui Ruo curiously asked.

Ling Chen shook his head, “To be honest, Heart’s Dream doesn’t need developing or expanding. What we have is already enough.”

Shui Ruo blinked, waiting for Ling Chen to explain.

“The bet between Meng Xin and her dad was that she would gather wealth and reputation to match that of the entire Yun family’s within two years. Heart’s Dream’s fame has now already surpassed the Yun family’s. Of course, reputation doesn’t just take into account being known, but also status and acknowledgement from the community. Now that Heart’s Dream has its official establishment as its foundation, its reputation will definitely skyrocket over time. As for fortune... this is even less of a

problem.” Ling Chen casually said. To him, money was something that could be easily gained now.

Shui Ruo smiled as she nodded, “Mhmm! I believe you, big brother. Then, big brother, let’s go make dinner. When Tian Tian logs off later, she’ll definitely say she’s starving.”

“Alrighty.” Ling Chen held Shui Ruo’s small hands. Her hands were so small and soft that he couldn’t resist picking her up and hugging her.

“Ah, big brother…” Taken off guard, Shui Ruo put her arms around Ling Chen’s neck.

Ling Chen carried Shui Ruo out of the bedroom, and put her on the sofa. He gently pressed himself against her, with an evil smile on his face, “Before making dinner, I want to first taste my Ruo Ruo.”

After Shui Ruo’s body had recovered, Ling Chen didn’t need to hold himself back anymore. However, with Tian Tian around, he was unable to make a move most of the time. Now that Tian Tian was in the game, he couldn’t resist, and began to pry off Shui Ruo’s clothes.

“But… but Tian Tian’s in the other room, if she suddenly…” Shui Ruo didn’t resist, her voice becoming more and more flustered.

“It’s okay, she likes playing so much, so if we don’t call her… she

won't come out for a while." Ling Chen flung Shui Ruo's clothes aside, then took her bra off. Immediately two round 'snow rabbits' jumped out.

A sweet fragrance filled the air as Ling Chen's hands travelled downwards to Shui Ruo's skirt. He pulled them down, revealing a pair of beautiful, white legs. Ling Chen's hands grasped Shui Ruo's breasts and started to feel them gently. Shui Ruo gasped, and embarrassedly closed her eyes. After a short while, her body started writhing in ecstasy from Ling Chen's hands.

Ling Chen's breathing became heavier and heavier. He kissed Shui Ruo's tender lips, and their tongues intertwined. He began to alternate between feeling Shui Ruo's breasts and taking both of their clothes off.

Shui Ruo's moans became louder and louder, as her face became redder and redder. Ling Chen held her hips as he gently eased himself into her, becoming one with Shui Ruo. At this moment, Shui Ruo let out a cry of pure pleasure...

After a while, it had become completely dark outside. Inside the living room, the sounds from Ling Chen and Shui Ruo had not ceased. They were both panting and moaning heavily. Shui Ruo gazed at Ling Chen with deep longing in her eyes as she wrapped her legs around his waist.

Shui Ruo's body shook as Ling Chen thrust into her again and again. Her red lips parted, letting out gentle moans, making her

sound like a little kitten. Her entire body felt as if it was aflame, and her skin all over her body had a healthy red glow to it.

Chapter 240 - A Decision That Would Affect The Rest Of Tian Tian's Life

Suddenly, Ling Chen heard there were footsteps coming from behind him. By the time he had noticed, the footsteps were already very close. All of his attention was focused on making love to Shui Ruo, so he had not noticed until it was too late. Ling Chen looked over, and his eyes met a pair of shocked, widened eyes...

Tian Tian was standing behind him, her mouth wide open as she stared at their 'union'.

Ling Chen: "!@#$%&..."

Seeing Tian Tian standing behind them, Ling Chen felt as if a massive lightning bolt had hit him in the head. He froze, and stared back at Tian Tian.

Beneath him, Shui Ruo had no idea that Tian Tian was standing right there. She breathed raggedly, and licked her lips with her tongue. After feeling that Ling Chen had stopped moving, she gasped, "Big brother... don't stop, hurry up and do me."

Ling Chen: "....."

A stream of cold sweat tricked down from Ling Chen's forehead as he debated whether or not he should continue moving. Seeing Tian Tian's reaction, he could tell that she would not be forgetting about this anytime soon. This reaction told him that her mother

had already told him about ‘interactions’ between men and women, but evidently she had never seen it so up close before.

“Ah!—“

“Ah!!————————-“

The first cry of shock and surprise came from Tian Tian. Seeing this sort of thing for the first time, Tian Tian covered her eyes, turned around and ran away while screaming. She ran into the bedroom and slammed the door shut. The second cry came from Shui Ruo. Tian Tian’s scream caused her to yell out in shock even louder. She quickly grabbed her clothes and put them over herself. She unwrapped her legs from around Ling Chen’s waist, and tried to move Ling Chen off herself. However, Ling Chen did not budge, keeping them connected.

Goddamit, when did that little brat come out from the game? And she had been so silent when she woke up! What the hell!

“Big brother… what to do… what to do… Tian Tian saw us… what to do…” Shui Ruo’s face became even redder, and was so embarrassed that she almost started crying. She had actually been seen like this by Tian Tian-she didn’t know how to act in front of the little Tian Tian anymore.

Ling Chen exhaled slowly, then started to laugh, “If she saw, she saw. Never mind, let’s keep going!”

“But, but… ah… ahhh…”

Ling Chen once again began to thrust, and Shui Ruo started to moan again. Although she was incredibly embarrassed by what had just happened, she simply couldn’t resist Ling Chen. Not too long after, Shui Ruo reached the peak of her pleasure, and let out a long cry. Her body softened, and the fluids leaking out soaked a large patch on the sofa.

……

Ling Chen quietly opened the door to the bedroom. Inside, it was completely dark. Tian Tian had completely covered herself with the blanket, and hearing the door open, she wrapped herself within the blanket even tighter.

Ling Chen helplessly look at Shui Ruo, whose face was still flushed red. Shui Ruo walked over, and gently patted the blanket, softly saying, “Tian Tian, you must be very hungry right?” Dinner’s ready, so come out and eat… if you keep hiding in the blanket you’ll feel sick.”

Tian Tian did not respond at all.

Shui Ruo bit her lips, and tried again, “Tian Tian, quickly eat dinner and we can go out to the night markets together. It’s very beautiful in Beijing at night. Oh, and look, we bought a lot of sweets for Tian Tian to eat-they’re even yummier than chocolate.”

There was still no reaction from Tian Tian. Even with such offers, she was still unwilling to come out. It seemed that the shock she had just experienced was not small.

“Let me try.” Ling Chen walked over, and gently laughed. He reached out, and directly picked up the blanket with Tian Tian inside. A cry of shock came out from within the blanket. Ling Chen moved part of the blanket aside, and Tian Tian’s little head appeared. Seeing Tian Tian like this made Ling Chen laugh loudly.

Tian Tian quickly covered her eyes with her small hands. She exclaimed, “I don’t want to see, I don’t want to see.”

Ling Chen pulled her two small hands away, and casually said, “If you saw it, you saw it. We can’t change the past, and it’s not that bad.”

With her hands pulled away, Tian Tian tightly closed her eyes. All of a sudden, she began to cry, “But… but mummy said that only adults can do those things, and that I can’t look at that sort of thing, otherwise I won’t be pure anymore and I’ll become a bad child. Mummy also said that my body can’t be touched by men, otherwise I’ll turn into a bad child… but you touched my hamd… wuuuu…. I’m not pure anymore, and I’m a bad child now… mummy won’t like me anymore and won’t want me anymore, wuu wuuuu…”

Ling Chen: “……”

Shui Ruo: “……”

Hearing Tian Tian say this, Shui Ruo sighed in relief. She stroked Tian Tian's face, and gently said, "Tian Tian, your mummy's right, and little kids must obey their mummy. But Tian Tian isn't a little kid anymore, right?"

Hearing Shui Ruo say this, Tian Tian stopped crying as loudly. She sniffled, and vigorously nodded her head, "I... I'm not a little kid anymore. I'm a big Demon Queen. After my magic recovers I'm going to conquer the earth and go to save mummy... I'm not a little kid."

"That's right, that's right." Shui Ruo smiled, "Since Tian Tian's not a little kid anymore, Tian Tian can look at things that little kids can't look at. Us girls can't let men touch our bodies, because once they touch us, we'll have to be with them forever, and only they can look at and touch our bodies. Did your mummy tell you these things?"

Ling Chen: "....." (Come to think of it, what Shui Ruo's saying doesn't sound quite right... oh, is she doing this on purpose)

Shui Ruo seemed to know what he was thinking, and she turned to him and winked.

Tian Tian's face was still covered in tears, but she was not crying anymore. She said in a small voice, "... Be with them forever... like daddy and mummy?"

"That's right! Tian Tian's so smart." Shui Ruo quickly nodded,

“See, Tian Tian’s mummy only belongs to Tian Tian’s daddy, right? It’s just like that.”

Tian Tian looked up at Ling Chen, and stared at him for a while, “Then I… and the big bad guy… do I have to be with him forever, and my body can only be looked at and touched by him?”

Ling Chen: “……”

“Exactly!” Shui Ruo elegantly nodded as she smiled. All of her embarrassment from before seemed to have disappeared, “In fact, big brother will continue to protect Tian Tian, look after Tian Tian, and won’t let anyone bully Tian Tian. He’s also going to give Tian Tian lots of yummy things to eat, so isn’t this such a good situation?”

Ling Chen was feeling more and more conflicted. Although this was just to calm her down, this little girl was believing every single word coming out of Shui Ruo’s mouth. Moreover, the sort of things Shui Ruo was saying… didn’t seem to be too good.

Tian Tian blinked a few times, earnestly listening to Shui Ruo. As she heard the last few sentences, her eyes shone. All of a sudden, there was someone who would protect her and give her lots of yummy things to eat, forever… this didn’t seem too bad.

“So I’m really still pure and haven’t turned into a bad child? So mummy won’t be mad at me and won’t want me anymore?” Tian Tian anxiously asked.

“Of course. Tian Tian’s not a little kid anymore, so what’s wrong with seeing those kinds of things? Plus, as long as Tian Tian doesn’t let any other man look at her body or touch her, it’ll be completely fine.” Shui Ruo sincerely said.

Tian Tian thought for a while, then weakly looked at Ling Chen, “Then… big bad guy… no, big bro, will you really protect me and give me lots of things to eat, forever?”

“Of… of course, little Tian Tian.” Ling Chen forced himself to reply. All of a sudden, a decision that would affect the rest of Tian Tian’s life had been made.

Tian Tian’s reaction told Ling Chen that little kids were way too easy to trick.

“Then… big sis, big bro, after eating dinner, let’s go to the night market and buy lots of yummy food, okay?”

“If Tian Tian wants to go, we’ll definitely go.”

“Yayyyy!!!” Right after crying, Tian Tian began to yell out in joy. She jumped out of the blanket, “So hungry, so hungry, let’s eat!!”

Chapter 241 - Breaking Through To Lv20

Three days later.

The official establishment of Heart's Dream sent waves throughout all of China. However, after so many days, there had been no news of Heart's Dream recruiting players. Moreover, no one knew where the guild's headquarters were. This caused even more debate and discussion about Heart's Dream, and countless people were waiting for information regarding this guild.

Even the Yan Huang Alliance, which had been beaten by Ling Tian again and again, had quietened down over the last few days. It seemed that even the order to search for and kill Ling Tian was not as strictly followed. It was as if the Yan Huang Alliance was deliberating, or planning something.

Quite a long period of time had passed since the Money Exchange System had opened. There were many structures constructed by players in the Azure Dragon City now. As for the most coveted piece of land in the Azure Dragon City, the area to the west of the Azure Dragon Square, there had been nothing happening there. Even an idiot would know that the land there was incredibly precious. The flow of people in and out of the Azure Dragon City was simply monstrous. If a major power could buy or even lease this piece of land, and construct a marketplace, they would be able to make astronomical amounts of money. Everyone knew that all of the major powers were furiously trying to buy or lease this piece of land, but as of yet, no one had acquired the rights to it yet... perhaps the Azure Dragon City wasn't willing to give up that piece of land.

“Is Heart’s Dream going to recruit people or not? Even though there’s that order from the Yan Huang Alliance, with Ling Tian’s fame, I’m sure there would still be a lot of people who are willing to join.” One player said.

“I don’t know, maybe Ling Tian’s afraid of the Yan Huang Alliance. After all, although the Yan Huang Alliance hasn’t been officially established, its foundation is still there. No matter how strong Ling Tian is, if the Yan Huang Alliance wants to destroy a little guild that was just created, it would be like an elephant stepping on an ant. Ling Tian can only blame himself for humiliating the Yan Huang Alliance. If he dares to recruit people, their headquarters will be revealed sooner or later, and the Yan Huang Alliance will do all it can to destroy the Guild Sign.” Another player retorted.

“Bullshit! Do you think Ling Tian would be afraid of the Yan Huang Alliance? He actually killed Long Tian Yun twice, even when he was surrounded by thousands of Yan Huang Alliance players. Twice!! Holy damn, look at the Player Level Rankings! Ling Tian’s already… LV20!!”

The players all opened the Player Level Rankings. The number next to Ling Tian’s name had indeed become… 20!

Rank 1: Ling Tian, Occupation: Ling Tian Battle Soul, Level: 20, Affiliation: Heart’s Dream

“Holy crap, this is way too fast. The Sword Emperor only just

reached LV19. The forum said that after LV10, levelling up a single time required twice the amount of EXP from the previous level. Levelling from LV19 to LV20 requires twice as much EXP as levelling from LV18 to LV19!!”

“Ding… you have levelled up to LV20, HP+20, MP+20, Strength+5.”

Finally…

The further south he went, the more powerful the monsters became. If he continued travelling, he might not be able to handle the monsters later on. As such, he primarily spent his time farming for the past few days, and he had finally reached LV20.

“Now, it won’t be that easy for other people to catch up to me.” Ling Chen quickly left the monsters’ territory. After reaching LV20, he was a bit disappointed that he did not receive a new skill. However, there were other pleasant surprises.

“Ding… your pet ‘Leng’Er’ has levelled up to LV20, MP+100, Magic Attack Power+20, Defence+10.”

“Ding… your pet Leng’Er’s skill [Darkness Spike] has levelled up to LV3, [Darkness Lock] has levelled up to LV3, [Underworld Lock] has levelled up to LV3. [Sin Lock] has been unlocked.”

[Darkness Spike]: Current Level: LV3, Highest Level: LV5, increasing to LV4 requires pet to be LV30. A Darkness element attack that uses Darkness elemental energy to create a Darkness Spike within 20 metres around the caster. Silently and stealthily pierces towards a target within 5 metres of where the Darkness Spike was formed. Base attack damage is Magic Attack Power x 200%. Upon being hit, the target has a 5% of instant death. Costs 30MP, no cooldown.

[Darkness Lock]: Current Level: LV3, Highest Level: LV5, increasing to LV4 requires pet to be LV30. Uses Darkness energy to bind all targets within 20 metres of the caster, creating illusory chains that adds debuffs to the targets. Once bound, the targets' Movement Speed, Attack Speed, Jumping Ability, Hit, Evasion are all decreased by 20% for 20 seconds. Costs 50MP, cooldown time: 60 seconds.

[Underworld Lock]: Current Level: LV3, Highest Level: LV5, increasing to LV4 requires pet to be LV30. Uses Darkness energy to bind all targets within 15 metres of the caster, creating illusory chains that adds debuffs to the targets. Once bound, the targets cannot use active skills for 15 seconds. Costs 120MP, cooldown time: 60 seconds.

[Sin Lock]: Current Level: LV1, Highest Level: LV5, increasing to LV2 requires pet to be LV35. Uses Darkness energy to

surround the 20 metres around the target, attacking the target's spirit, causing them to release the hidden evil side in the hearts and enter the "Berserk" status for 5 seconds, attacking everything around them furiously. Costs 200MP, cooldown time: 60 seconds.

"Ding... your pet Leng'Er's favourability towards you +1, current favourability: 15

After joining Ling Chen, Leng'Er had never fought by his side before. Of course, the main reason was because Ling Chen had not asked her to join him in battle. Only after her favourability reached 10 or above would she be willing to follow his orders in battle. In order to quickly increase her favourability towards him, he had gone all out, and the results had been worth it. However, he could see that after reaching a favourability of 10, the rate at which Leng'Er's favourability towards him could be increased became much, much slower. However, even so, Ling Chen was confident that he could raise her favourability towards him to 20, 'closeness', within one month. From 30-39 was 'trusting', 40-49 was 'liking', 50-59 was 'affectionate', 60-69 was 'infatuation'... and anything after that was pretty much a legend.

After Leng'Er reached LV20, three of her active skills had been upgraded, and Sin Lock, which could cause the target to go into the "berserk" state, had been unlocked. Surprisingly, there had also been an increase in favourability.

Seeing that her own level had increased with her master's Leng'Er seemed very happy. Now, she didn't seem wary when Ling Chen approached her, and occasionally would voluntarily

approach Ling Chen. When Ling Chen rode on the Cloud Stepping Mare, she would often sit behind him and lean on him as she listened. After Ling Chen brought her out from that place filled with the scent of death, every day was like heaven for her.

"Ding... your pet Holy Spirit Beast 'Xiao Hui' has levelled up to LV20, HP+200, MP+5, Defence+20. [Holy Spirit's Shield] has levelled up to LV2, [Holy Spirit's Aura] has levelled up to LV5, [Holy Spirit's Gift] has levelled up to LV2."

[Holy Spirit's Shield]: Current Level: LV2, Highest Level: LV5, Level required to upgrade to LV3: LV40. An invisible shield that is always protecting around the surroundings of the Holy Spirit Beast's body, can forcibly decrease all damage received by 40%. When HP is higher than 60%, will not die after receiving a lethal blow and HP will be reserved at 1. HP recovers 5% every second, after death can directly revive on the spot, HP will recover to max, will not have any losses, can revive 3 times a day.

[Holy Spirit's Aura]: Current Level: LV5, Highest Level: LV20, Level required to upgrade to LV6: LV25, Using its Holy Spirit Aura that is void of evil and impurity to seek the protection of mother nature, upgrades the innate gifts of itself and all companions. Effect: Luck+5 and Comprehension+5 of itself along with the master and all pet companions. Effect exists even while not summoned.

[Holy Spirit's Gift]: Current Level: LV2, Highest Level: LV5, Level required to upgrade to LV3: LV40. Using Holy Spirit Force to bless the master, increasing the level of all of his/her skills. Effect: Level of all skills of master+2 (Ineffective towards skills that are already max level, directly takes effect towards new skills that appear later). Effect exists even while not summoned.

After levelling up to LV20, not only did Xiao Hui benefit, but Ling Chen also received massive benefits through Xiao Hui's skills.

"Ding... because of your pet Xiao Hui's [Holy Spirit's Aura], your Luck has risen to 12, and your Comprehension has risen to 12."

"Ding... because of your pet Xiao Hui's skill [Holy Spirit's Gift], your skill [Soul Sacrifice] has levelled up to LV4 (max level), [Heaven Wind Technique] has levelled up to LV4, [Item manipulation Technique] has levelled up to LV4, [Lucky Hand] has levelled up to LV3, [War God Technique] has levelled up to LV4, [Ling Tian Slash] has levelled up to LV7, [Ling Tian Burst] has levelled up to LV6, [Four Corners Star Formation] has levelled up to LV6, [Battle Soul Possession] has levelled up to LV3."

"Ding... because your Comprehension has exceeded 10, and your spirit is extremely strong, the max level [Soul Sacrifice] can be evolved into the evolved skill [Soul Demise]."

Apart from skills that could not be levelled up, all of Ling Chen's skills had increased by one level. This was an incredible boost to

his overall battle power. Xiao Hui's Holy Spirit's Shield was a ridiculously strong defensive skill, while Holy Spirit's Gift was undoubtedly his strongest support skill. The LV2 Holy Spirit's Gift caused all of Ling Chen's skills to level up twice. With such an overpowered boost, no one would even believe such a skill existed.

Ling Chen was overjoyed, and patted Xiao Hui's head. He opened up his stats page, and looked at his skills:

[Soul Sacrifice]: Current Level: LV4, Max Level, An impasse skill that uses your life and soul as an offering in exchange for the most extreme attack strength. Only people with a strong mind and conviction can unlock and trigger it. After activating HP=1, Physical Attack Strength+400%, Magic Attack Strength+400%, the use of any skill has no consumption (including HP and MP consumption), Duration: 20 seconds, and cannot be stopped while in use, cannot use any method of HP recovery. Cooldown Time: 180 seconds.

[Lucky Hand]: Current level: LV3, Highest level: LV5, SP to upgrade to LV4: 300,000, After reaching LV5, the skill will automatically evolve into [True Lucky Hand]. A godly skill that comes from the treasure creature Lucky Cat, this skill allows the user to use an unseen hand to steal away the target's money without the target noticing. Within range, the user can steal 40%-60% of the target's money. The success rate is affected by the target's level, grade and luck. Base success rate for stealing is (Luck x 6)%. Being able to steal without being detected is also affected by the target's level, grade and luck. Base success rate

for not being detected is (Luck x 6)%. Consumes 10 MP, cooldown time: 8 seconds.

[Heaven Wind Technique]: Current Level: LV5, Highest Level: LV10. SP to Upgrade to LV6: 5000. Ancient battle technique, after practice it can greatly increase the ability to control any weapon. Effect: When using any weapon, damage dealt is increased by 25%. Effect does not stack with other weapon proficiency skills.

[Item Manipulation Technique]: Current Level: LV4, Highest Level: LV10. SP to Upgrade to LV5: 3600. Ancient battle technique, after practice equipment that surpasses your current level can be equipped. Effect: Ignores any piece of equipment's level requirement by 4 levels.

[War God Technique]: Current Level: LV4, Highest Level, LV10, SP required to upgrade to LV5: 5000. Powerful battle technique originating from War God's soul force, after practise can greatly increase personal attack strength permanently. Effect: Strength increases by 4*X points, Physical Attack Damage increased by 10*X (X=Current level).

[Ling Tian Slash]: Current Level: LV7 Highest Level, LV10, SP

required to upgrade to LV8: 1600. Using the weapon in the hand to attack a single enemy, suddenly releasing the strength of the battle soul the instant you hit the enemy dealing devastating damage towards the opponent. Effect: Single target attack, damage is equal to 270% of regular attacks, critical hit chance+15%, 5% chance of stunning for 3-5 seconds, very high chance of pushing back the target, MP Consumption: 20, Cooldown Time: 0.

[Ling Tian Burst]: Current Level: LV6, Highest Level, LV10, SP required to upgrade to LV7: 1000. Pouring the battle soul power into the weapon, instantly releasing it when slashing forward creating a power explosion in a small area, attacking all targets in a 6 metre area in front, damage is equal to 160% of regular attacks, MP Consumption: 30, Cooldown Time: 0.

[Four Corners Star Formation]: Current Level: LV6, Highest Level: LV10, SP required to upgrade to LV7: 2200. Using the power of the battle soul to sweep the surroundings, instantly forming a formation of destruction in a 10 metre radius around yourself. The raging battle soul power will deal devastating damage towards all targets within the formation. Damage is equal to 550% of regular damage, Critical Hit Rate+15%, 100% chance to trigger knock back, MP Consumption: 100, Cooldown Time: 60 secs.

[Battle Soul Possession]: Current Level: LV3, Highest Level: LV5, SP required to upgrade to LV4: 4000. Igniting the battle soul, releasing all of your strength causing you next attack to possess the most extreme destructive power. Effect: Damage+100% for next attack, [Absolute Critical Hit] for the next attack, MP Consumption: 70, Cooldown Time: 30 secs.

Chapter 242 - Fairy Forest

After reaching LV20, Ling Chen's total battle power had been greatly increased by Xiao Hui's "Holy Spirit's Gift". Moreover, his strongest skill [Soul Sacrifice] had reached the max level! Once the max level Soul Sacrifice was activated, his Physical Attack Power and Magic Attack Power would be five times his normal attack-this was simply astounding.

The max level Soul Sacrifice also gave him a new skill-the evolved skill, [Soul Demise]!

[Soul Demise]: Current level: LV3, Highest level: LV30, SP required to upgrade to LV4: 100,000. A skill that can destroy souls created from one's powerful spirit as the foundation and support. Using Soul Demise will directly attack the target's soul. Single target attack, can be activated using both hands or through any weapon. An unseen force attacks the target's soul, ignoring level, grade, Defence, Absolute Defence, and takes away 3% of the target's HP and MP. This attack has Absolute Hit, and has a 0.3% chance to instant killing the target, ignoring level, grade and instant-death resistance. Costs 1 MP, can only be used three times per day. Cannot be used on the same target within 12 hours.

Ling Chen: "⊙o⊙) ！ ！"

This was... a skill that completely ignored defence, and took away a certain amount of HP and MP from the target. There was even a

possibility of instantly killing the target!!

Ignoring level, grade and Absolute Defence... that meant even though he was still incredibly weak, he could still take away 3% of a Saint Destroyer Beast's HP instantly. Moreover, there would even be a 0.3% chance of instantly killing a Saint Destroyer Beast!

Soul Demise... what an overpowered skill!!

Soul Demise's highest level was LV30. Given the current scaling with its level, that meant that at max level, it would be able to instantly take away 30% of the target's HP and MP, as well as have a 3% chance of instantly killing the target!

Ling Chen's heart began to thump. Back when he had received Soul Sacrifice, he had been completely shocked, and almost couldn't believe that such a terrifying skill existed. This Soul Demise was much, much scarier than Soul Sacrifice. When facing weaker opponents, its effects were almost negligible. However, when facing stronger opponents, especially those that were overpoweringly stronger, this skill gave Ling Chen an incredible amount of hope!

Right now, Soul Demise was only LV3, so the 0.3% chance of instantly killing the target was not too useful.

The more powerful a skill, the more difficult it would be to level it up. Seeing the required amount of SP to level up Soul Demise to LV4, Ling Chen exhaled slowly. Levelling to LV4 required a whole 100,000 SP... if he wanted to level up this skill to LV30, he would

need an astronomical amount of SP. However, he was sure that spending that much SP to get Soul Demise to its max level would definitely be worth it.

After all of his skills had levelled up, the amount of SP required to level them up again was simply ridiculous. After all, most of his skills were much stronger than normal skills, and he had the "Heaven's Jealousy" debuff. Seeing the SP required for each of the skills, Ling Chen could only sigh. What he wanted most right now was to level up to LV40-that way, Xiao Hui's "Holy Spirit's Gift" would be levelled up to LV3, and all of his skills would be levelled up once again.

After sighing for a while, he let the girls know that he had reached LV20 through the guild channel, then continued to travel south. For the next period of time, he would be continuously heading south without stopping to train. As each day passed, Xi Ling was running out of time.

Vermillion Bird City... I must reach there quickly!

Another five days went by.

During those five days, Ling Chen spent all of his time travelling south. When encountering any monsters, he would casually wipe them out, see what Xiao Hui refined from their corpses, and continue moving. After passing by a small stream, Ling Chen took out his map, and checked where he was. This area was marked with light green... this colour meant that this area was very safe. There would rarely be any monsters in such places, much less strong monsters.

Ling Chen looked into the distance, and saw a gigantic forest, and the ground was covered in lush green grass. The leaves of the trees were all jade-green, and the air was incredibly refreshing and vitalising. Ling Chen breathed deeply and looked at the name of this forest.

Fairy Forest. Next to this name, there was a fairly long description.

[Fairy Forest]: A vast forest that, under the protection of Nature, has never been polluted or experienced any warfare before. The most beautiful and pure race of the Forgotten Continent reside here-the Fairy Clan. Legends say that this was where the Fairy Clan originated. The Fairies are beautiful, kind, diligent, courageous and peaceful. They despise uncleanliness and warfare. Fairies are born with the power of nature, and are excellent Archers and Priests from birth. They use the power given to them by Nature to protect themselves and the peace of the Forgotten Continent. Fairies originally lived all throughout the Forgotten Continent, in closeness with humans. However, because the humans often engaged in warfare and selfish killing, resulting in countless deaths, they decided to distance themselves from humans, and reside in the Fairy Forest. The Fairy Forest is covered by a Bewildering Formation, which makes it almost impossible for outsiders to discover the Fairy Clan.

There was also a note:

"Over the years, I've tried many times to enter the legendary 'Fairy Realm'. However, I've never been able to find even a sliver of a clue, which is very disappointing. It's probably because of the Bewildering Formation that I am never able to find my way to the Fairies. However, I am completely certain that the Fairies do live in the Fairy Forest."

"Eh? Fairy Clan?" Ling Chen looked at the forest in front of him again. Back at the Novice Village, the Village Chief had mentioned the Fairy Clan. Apparently Fairies were creatures birthed by Nature, and were the purest creatures in the entire world. The Fairy Clan was not a very large clan, and their reproducing ability was quite low. Ling Chen also remembered that he had heard about the Fairy Clan at the Lonely Spirit Ridge as well-apparently the Moon God Clan, Golden Crow and the Fairy Clan had joined forces in vanquishing the Demon Beast Clan. However, the battle resulted in the Fairy Clan suffering heavy losses, causing their clan to go on the decline.

This map was drawn by Qian Gun Gun. Although he had travelled across nearly every inch of the Forgotten Continent, he was still unable to find any clue as to how to enter the Fairy Forest. It seemed impossible that anyone else could possibly enter it either. Only by completely separating themselves from the rest of the world could they enjoy true peace. Other creatures, whether they were humans, beasts, demons... they were all intrinsically selfish and greedy. The Fairies were willing to help them and become closer with them, but what the received in return every time was simply cruelty and ill-will. After experiencing this many, many times, the Fairies decided to separate themselves from the world... this was completely understandable and expected.

Although Ling Chen was curious, he was not that interested in the Fairy Clan. Ling Chen closed his map, and spurred the Cloud Stepping Mare onwards. Since there was no danger ahead, he could relax and travel at full speed.

The boundary of the Fairy Forest had many colourful flowers and grasses, as well as dancing butterflies, creating an extraordinarily beautiful scene. On his journey, he had passed through many forests, but none could compare to this one. It was as if he had entered some mystical realm.

“So beautiful…” Even Leng’Er couldn’t help but gasp in amazement. She hugged the doll in her arms, and pointed it forwards, “Look… so beautiful…”

This entire time, Leng’Er had been listening to Ling Chen tell her stories, as well as talking with Ling Chen. Leng’Er’s ability to speak had improved markedly. Although she still had difficulty talking sometimes, it was not as severe as before. After staring at her surroundings for a while, she stretched out her hands and pulled on Ling Chen’s clothes, “Master, can… you tell me a story?”

A bead of cold sweat trickled down Ling Chen’s forehead. These days, he had adamantly refused to take the initiative to tell Leng’Er stories. What he feared most was Leng’Er asking him to tell her stories.

Ling Chen, unable to refuse, could only reply bitterly, “What does Leng’Er want to listen to?”

“Snow White!” Leng’Er immediately replied.

“……” If he remembered correctly, he had already told Leng’Er Snow White’s story seven times. This would be the eighth time. After hearing it so many times, Leng’Er could probably tell him the story word for word, and yet she still liked to hear it so much.

Girls were indeed very hard to understand… Ling Chen sighed inwardly, and started to tell the story, “Once upon a time, there was a girl called Snow White. She had an evil step-mother, who was a witch…”

“No, it’s… queen, queen…” Leng’Er softly protested.

“Oh, right, it’s queen. The queen was envious of Snow White’s beauty, so she wanted to kill her, and became a witch…”

Leng’Er loved to listen to stories, and would beg Ling Chen to tell her stories every day. She would only be satisfied after listening to five or so stories.

After telling her the Nth story of the day, Ling Chen was starting to have a headache. It had been about an hour since he found out that he was in the Fairy Forest, and with Xiao Hui guiding the way, he didn’t have to worry about getting lost.

Chapter 243 - Fairy Forest

“Awoo....”

The horn on Xiao Hui’s head flashed, and Xiao Hui’s eyes flew open. He howled, and jumped down from the Cloud stepping Mare, and ran in front of a tree. This was the third time Xiao Hui had done this after entering the Fairy Forest.

Of course, Ling Chen followed him immediately. Where Xiao Hui had stopped, he found, buried in the ground, a stone-like object that was about as big as his fist.

> [Rainbow Agate]: Rainbow Agate is the highest quality of agate. It is incredibly smooth, with vibrant colours, and is clear as crystal. It can only form in places of utmost purity, without any pollution. In the Forgotten Continent, out of 300,000 pieces of agate, only about one will be a Rainbow Agate. It is incomparably priceless, and can be used to create sculptures, accessories and equipment.

This was the third piece of Rainbow Agate that Ling Chen had found in the Fairy Forest. These three pieces of Rainbow Agate were all discovered by Xiao Hui, and they had always been buried under trees or grass.
From the description, it seemed that Rainbow Agate were the highest quality and rarest type of agate. However, after entering the Fairy Forest for less than an hour, he had already obtained three. The Fairy Forest was incredibly pure and unpolluted, which

fitted the requirements for the formation of Rainbow Agate. However, this didn't mean that there would be large quantities of Rainbow Agate in this forest. Rather, it was because Xiao Hui's treasure-finding abilities were incredibly keen. It seemed that everything that caught Xiao Hui's interest was either rare or valuable. Xiao Hui did not even bother going after things that were ordinary or common.

"I wonder how much money I could sell these things for when I get back to the Azure Dragon City." Ling Chen mused to himself as he looked at the Rainbow Agate in his hand. The fortune Xiao Hui had brought to him was simply staggering. As long as he had Xiao Hui, he would never have to worry about being poor. All of the things that Xiao Hui found could cause someone to become rich overnight.

The Forgotten Continent was incredibly vast, so it was bound to contain countless treasures. The only thing that was lacking was people with the ability to discover them. The rarer and more valuable a treasure was, the more difficult it would be to discover it. Many people would live their entire lives just metres from a treasure trove, but would not realise it. In contrast, Xiao Hui had incredible treasure-finding skills-more accurately, it was like the treasures were discovering Xiao Hui. Even if Xiao Hui was sleeping, as soon as he got close to a treasure, his horn would start to shine. Just like Qi Yue said, if other people found out that Xiao Hui had this ability, they would risk everything to steal him away.

"It seems that there are quite a lot of treasures in this forest. Xiao Hui, let's keep going, and see if we can find anything else as well." Ling Chen said as he put away the Rainbow Agate.

“Woof woof!”

Xiao Hui nodded his head, and prepared to jump onto the Cloud Stepping Mare’s back. At this moment, his horn once again glowed, and he froze.

Seeing the light, Ling Chen couldn’t help but laugh, “There’s more treasure around here?”

Xiao Hui wagged his tail, and ran around in circles. When facing towards the west, the grey glow would become brighter. After doing this a few times, Xiao Hui barked, and charged westwards. Once again, Ling Chen chased after him.

The further Xiao Hui ran, the brighter his horn became. After running for about 50 metres, Xiao Hui stopped, and stood completely still, staring forwards. In front of him, was an incredibly tall tree that was about one metre in diameter. Xiao Hui did not dig, but rather stood completely motionless, staring at the tree.

“Under this tree?” Ling Chen asked. If the treasure was underneath this tree, things would be problematic. It would be very difficult to take away things from underneath this tree.

Xiao Hui did not reply. He wagged his tail, walked forward a few steps, and stretched out his paw. He patted the tree with his paw, letting out a ‘puffing’ sound.

“What is it, Xiao Hui?” Xiao Hui was behaving very strangely. It didn’t seem like he had found any treasure, but it didn’t seem as if there was any danger either. Ling Chen called back the Cloud Stepping Mare and walked over.

Xiao Hui used his paw to pat the tree many times, and ignored Ling Chen. It was as if he was thinking about something. Afterwards, he took a few steps back, and stood about half a metre in front of the tree for a few seconds. Afterwards, he began to start running around the tree. Once, twice, three times...

Ling Chen stared as Xiao Hui ran around the tree three times in a clockwise direction. Xiao Hui then stopped, and ran around the tree once, anti-clockwise. Ling Chen was stunned, and was just about to ask Xiao Hui what he was doing, when suddenly Xiao Hui jumped up towards the tree. It looked like Xiao Hui was going to crash into the tree, but at the moment when Xiao Hui should have made impact with the tree, he suddenly disappeared.

“Xiao Hui!?” Ling Chen was shocked, and quickly ran over. He touched the place where Xiao Hui had disappeared. He could feel the hard bark of the tree-but Xiao Hui definitely had disappeared there, as if he had been eaten by the tree.

What was going on? Ling Chen frowned, and stared at the tree. He thought back to what Xiao Hui had done, and copied Xiao Hui’s movements. Ling Chen ran around the tree three times clockwise, then one time anti-clockwise. He then breathed in, and ran towards the tree and jumped...

As he flew nearer and nearer to the tree, Ling Chen forced

himself to keep his eyes open. Just as he was about to hit the tree, his vision blurred, and he felt as if the world was turning upside down. He had not crashed into the tree, but landed on his feet, and stumbled forwards. He looked behind him... whether it was behind him, or anywhere around him, the tree was nowhere to be seen.

His surroundings were completely different to that from before. Although there were trees and flowers everywhere, it definitely wasn't the same place.

What was going on? Where was this? Was this still the Fairy Forest?

"Woof woof!"

Ling Chen looked down, and saw Xiao Hui by his feet. Xiao Hui woofed at Ling Chen a few times, then started running towards the south. Ling Chen took out his map, looked at his position, and found that he was still within the Fairy Forest. However, his position had shifted at least five kilometres from where he was previously. He frowned, and followed after Xiao Hui.

After a short while, Xiao Hui stopped in front of a large bush. He then jumped in and out, in and out. He did this three times, and disappeared once again.

Ling Chen had calmed down by now, and copied Xiao Hui's actions. Once again, his vision blurred, it felt as if the world had been turned upside down. The large bush disappeared, and in front of him was a large lake.

Ling Chen took out his map, but found that there was no lake marked on the map... this meant that Qian Gun Gun had never been to this place before. He was now in the south-west region of the Fairy Forest, once again quite far from his original position. Xiao Hui continued to run. He ran to the edge of the lake, then stopped at a stop. He stayed there for a while, then jumped up and down three times. He then jumped into the water and disappeared once again.

Ling Chen: "....."

Ling Chen now understood that within the Fairy Forest, there were so special teleportation channels. Once the teleportation channel was activated, they would be sent to another location. The actions Xiao Hui did activated these teleportation channels, but Ling Chen had no way of knowing how Xiao Hui knew how to activate these teleportation channels. Once again, Ling Chen repeated Xiao Hui's actions. He wondered where this mysterious teleportation channel would send him.

Despite jumping into the lake, he was not wet in the slightest. He had instead arrived at a place where trees grew incredibly densely together. Ling Chen continued to follow Xiao Hui and follow his actions, and was continuously teleported all over the place. Sometimes it was to the north, sometimes it was towards the south-east, sometimes it was towards the south-west. There was no pattern to these teleportation channels, and after ten or so times, Ling Chen was incredibly dizzy. In these ten or so times, the way of activating these teleportation channels was different every time, but Xiao Hui always managed to find a way to activate them.

After the 17th time...

Over time, Ling Chen became more and more used to being teleported by the teleportation channels. However, this time, when he saw his new surroundings, his eyes widened.

The forest was gone. In front of him, was a world of brightly coloured flowers and grasses.

The grass was green and lush, and there were hundreds of different types of flowers. They were all of different colours, and were incredibly beautiful. It was as if there was a sea of flowers and grass in front of him. Ling Chen stood motionless and speechless as he took in this site in front of him. This was a scene that he felt could only be seen in heaven!

Ling Chen couldn't resist but raise his wrist, and take a photo of this scene, his heart unable to remain calm.

Within this sea of flowers and grass, there was a narrow path stretching into the distance, cutting this 'sea' in half. Ling Chen was currently standing on this path.

This... where was this?

"Ding... you have discovered the hidden map 'Fairy Realm', Fame+100."

Chapter 244 - Cai'Er

Fairy... Realm!?

Holy crap, was this the Fairy Realm where the Fairy Clan supposedly lives-the place that Qian Gun Gun simply couldn't find!?

My goodness...

Although a small part of Ling Chen was expecting this, the system announcement still shocked him. This was the home of the clan that had disappeared long, long ago, and had almost been forgotten by the rest of the Forgotten Continent. After separating themselves from all other races, no one had ever seen a Fairy. Qian Gun Gun had lived for countless years, and had travelled to countless places, but could not find the Fairy Realm no matter how hard he tried. And yet, Ling Chen had inadvertently found it-rather, it was Xiao Hui who had brought him here.

Were Xiao Hui's actions from before the steps in unlocking the Bewildering Formation mentioned by Qian Gun Gun?

Was this unimaginably beautiful place the home of the Fairies? It was as beautiful as a celestial realm here. If Shui Ruo came here, she would definitely love it so much that she would never leave. Ling Chen decided that since he had come all the way here, he had no reason to leave without taking a look around. What would the Fairies look like?

Although the Fairies were very secretive and mysterious, they were by nature very kind and loved the Nature, so he wasn't too worried. Ling Chen looked at Xiao Hui, who had easily gotten past the Bewildering Formation, sighed in admiration in his heart. He began to walk forwards while admiring the view.

As he walked, Ling Chen would also take photos of what he was seeing. After walking for a long time, he still could not see the end of the path. With Xiao Hui walking in front of him, Ling Chen did not have to worry about getting lost or encountering any danger.

After ten minutes, Ling Chen stopped walking, and looked to the side... he heard a sound-it sounded like a young girl's singing.

"Lalala, lalala, I am the happy Cai'Er, I love my granny, I love my dad, I love my big sister, I love singing, I love bees, I love butterflies, I love collecting pollen... Cai'Er's the cutest, Cai'Er's the best, lalala..."

Ling Chen: "....."

The voice was very sweet and pleasant to the ear, and was coming closer and closer. It evidently sounded like it came from a little girl. Very soon, Ling Chen saw the source of the singing. Amidst the countless flowers and grasses, there was a figure dressed in blue. There was also a small pair of wings on the figure's back that were flapping-that's right, wings! The wings were not like that of a bird, but rather like that of a butterfly's or cicada's.

This girl with wings... could she be... a Fairy?

The girl was flying and dancing around above the flowers, and her hands would pass over flowers as she flew by. Ling Chen's eyes widened. He had thought the girl was quite far away, which was why she looked so small. However, the singing seemed to be coming from right next to him. She was only about 20 metres away, but still seemed extremely small...

Apart from her wings, she looked exactly like what a normal human girl looked like, except that she was only about half a metre tall!

So this was... what Fairies looked like!?

"Lalala, lalala, I am the happy Cai'Er, I love my granny, I love my dad, I love my big sister, I love singing... eh??"

When she was about 10 metres away, the little Fairy finally noticed Ling Chen. She abruptly stopped singing, and quickly flew in front of Ling Chen. She looked at him up and down in shock and curiosity. After coming close, Ling Chen could clearly see what this little Fairy girl looked like. Indeed, she was only half a metre tall, and was wearing a blue dress. She only looked about twelve or thirteen years old, and her face was as cute as Leng'Er's most beautiful doll. She had long, black hair, and her eyes shone like stars. Her ears were exactly the same as a normal human's-there was no sign of the pointedness that stories claimed they had.

Simply put, this Fairy was exactly the same as a normal human, except that she had wings and was much, much smaller.

“Lalala, big brother, you’re so tall. It’s so strange, why hasn’t Cai’Er seen you before? And the clothes you’re wearing are so strange as well.” The Fairy girl looked at him with her bright eyes.

The Fairy Clan was not very big, and their reproductive ability was quite poor. Over the past thousands of years, the Fairy Clan’s numbers had been decreasing every year. The reason was quite simple… The number of male Fairies that were born greatly exceeded the number of female Fairies, and female Fairies could only give birth once. Before, the male Fairies would often marry human females. However, after the Fairies separated themselves from the other races, this could not happen anymore. Thus, although the Fairies lived for a long time, their numbers continually decreased. As a result, seeing someone that she didn’t recognise would be very strange.

Ling Chen clearly understood that he was pretty much a trespasser, and that he would be rejected by this Fairy Clan. However, this little Fairy looked very naïve and innocent, as well as very gullible. He quickly thought of a good answer, and was about to speak, when the little Fairy suddenly let out a cry of surprise, “Ah… no wings, no smell of Nature, weird clothing… y-y-y-you… you’re not a Fairy! You’re one of those… humans!!”

Ling Chen: “……”

The little Fairy’s face was full of fear, as if she believed that this human was going to swallow her whole. With a ‘swish’, her little body retreated far away, and after a green glow flashed, a bow appeared in her hands. She stretched the bow, and a green

coloured elemental arrow appeared, pointing at Ling Chen.

After finding out that he was a human, her reaction was even worse than what Ling Chen had expected. It seemed that the humans were very despised by the Fairies. He quickly said, “I am a human, but I accidentally came here. I’m not a bad person, and I won’t hurt you.”

The little Fairy was incredibly wary towards him, and her little face became very serious, “Granny said that although humans look like us, but they’re the worst creatures in the whole world, and they love to tell lies! Humans definitely can’t be trusted, and can’t be allowed to enter our home. Otherwise, our clan will suffer terrible consequences… quickly leave here! Otherwise… otherwise I’m going to attack!”

The little Fairy’s face was extremely concentrated, and her hand was shaking. Evidently, she had never fought before. Despite this, her serious and concentrated face and expression were incredibly cute, and did not seem threatening at all. Ling Chen could only helplessly reply, “Little sister, what you said is quite wrong. Sure, there are bad humans, but there are also…”

“Granny wouldn’t lie to me!!” The little Fairy furiously retorted back, “Hurry up and leave, otherwise I’m really going to start to attack!”

“I’m really not a bad person, and I didn’t come here on purpose. If you don’t believe me…”

Halfway through his sentence, the little Fairy released her arrow, and the green elemental arrow shot towards him.

Damn… she's really attacking?

Seeing that they were being attacked, Xiao Hui immediately entered battle mode. The information regarding this Fairy Girl entered Ling Chen's mind.

[Cai'Er]: Type: Fairy, Grade: Celestial, Level: 42, HP: 1,560,000, The second daughter of the current Chief of the Fairy Clan. She is incredibly pure and innocent. With a pure heart and great talent, she was born at the Celestial grade. Out of the entire Clan, she has the highest affinity with Nature, and is this generation's "Maiden of Nature". As such, she is seen as the Fairy Clan's hope. Like her clansmen, she has never left the Fairy Realm before, and is fearful of the unknown outer world.

Passive Abilities:

[Nature's Blessing]: A Fairy-only Passive Ability. When using 'Arrow' attacks, Hit+280%, Arrow Speed+50%, Range+50%. When using Healing and Support Magic, effectiveness + 50%.

[Nature's Protection]: A Fairy-only Passive Ability. Apart from Poison, resistance to all abnormal statuses is greatly increased. Apart from the Darkness element, resistance to all elements is greatly increased. Recovers 5,000 HP and 500 MP every second.

[Fairy's Elegy]: A skill that belongs only to Cai'Er. Within one hour of dying, any other Fairy can give up their lives in exchange for reviving Cai'Er.

Attacks: ????

Ultimate Attack: ????

Weakness: Weak to Poison Attacks.

The little Fairy's level was so high that Xiao Hui's Eye of the Holy Spirit could only reveal part of the information about her. However, just this information alone caused Ling Chen to be greatly shocked. This little Fairy in front of him, who still looked like a little girl, was a Celestial grade creature, and was even LV42! Moreover, she was the Fairy Chief's daughter, as well as the "Maiden of Nature", which seemed like an important status!

The first Fairy he had met had actually turned out to have such an important background.

Swish!

The attack from a LV42 Celestial grade Fairy was not to be underestimated. The arrow greatly exceeded the speed at which arrows normally flew, and Ling Chen barely dodged it. After Xiao Hui's Eye of the Holy Spirit had levelled up to LV2, it could now tell Ling Chen an enemy's weakness. It seemed that Fairies'

weakness was Poison Attacks, but none of Ling Chen's attacks could apply the Poison status. Moreover, even if he did have Poison attacks, he still wouldn't be willing to use them on this little Fairy.

After dodging the attack, Ling Chen hurriedly called out, "Little sister, I'm really not a bad person."

Apart from this, there was nothing else he could say.

"Granny said that humans can't be trusted. If you're not a bad person, immediately leave from here... if you don't leave..."

Swish!

Another arrow shot towards Ling Chen. However, these two arrows were very ordinary arrows. Evidently, because of this Fairy's kind nature, she was unwilling to use any attacks that could actually harm him. Otherwise, with her LV42 Celestial grade power, it would be incredibly easy to destroy Ling Chen. Ling Chen once again dodged, and frowned. He bent his legs, and shot forwards...

Although she was a super powerful LV42 Celestial grade Fairy, but she was still a little girl. I don't believe that as a man, I'm unable to subdue a little girl!

Chapter 245 - Ying Xue

With Ling Chen's Defence and HP, if he was hit even once by these attacks from the LV42 Celestial grade Cai'Er, he would die without a doubt. As such, he desperately dodged each and every arrow. The only way for her to stop attacking would be to run away, but this was something that Ling Chen definitely would not do.

As such, he charged forwards.

Not only were Fairies proficient in using a bow and arrow, but could also use magic. Just because he was in close-range didn't mean that he was safe. However, he did not have any doubts as he charged towards Cai'Er. Just as she was about to launch her third attack, the Lunar Scourge on Ling Chen's right wrist glowed, and released 'Moon Shadow'. Immediately the little Fairy was frozen in place.

By this time, Ling Chen had already reached the little Fairy. However, he did not take out his weapons, despite having such a good opportunity to attack. Attacking in this sort of situation was an absolute taboo. Instead, he looked at her, and helplessly said, "Little sister, you can't move right now. Just then, you were attacking me, so if I'm a bad person, I'd be attacking you right now, right? See, I'm not doing anything at all. Yes, there are lots of bad humans, but not every single human is bad. A long, long time ago, humans and Fairies were good friends. Did your granny tell you this?"

While Ling Chen was speaking, Moon Shadow's effects ended,

and the little Fairy regained control over her body. She immediately retreated, and said in a small voice, “What… what just happened? Why couldn’t I move?”

Ling Chen: “……”

“But,” the little Fairy continued to talk as she put away her bow, “You don’t seem like a bad person. Otherwise, you would have attacked me just then… lalala, granny did tell me that a very, very long time ago, our Fairy Clan was good friends with humans, but there were a lot of bad humans… so are you a good human then?”

“That’s right, you’re very smart.” Ling Chen smilingly said. Children were indeed easy to win over.

“Wait, no, no!” Cai’Er started to shake her head. Her little face became serious again, “Whether you’re a good human or a bad human, you’re still not allowed to come into this place. You should quickly leave here, otherwise, even if you’re a good human…”

“Cai’Er, who are you talking to?”

A woman’s voice that was soft as clouds and gentle as a breeze sounded out. Cai’Er blinked, and her tensed up face relaxed, and happily smiled, “Big sis, big sis, I’m over here!”

A big sister? Ling Chen looked around, but he couldn’t see any other Fairies. Suddenly he saw that a white light appeared behind Cai’Er, and a woman’s figure appeared within the light. This figure

looked exactly like a normal human woman, except that it also had a pair of cicada's wings.

Indeed, it was another Fairy!!

"Big sis!!"

Cai'Er happily flew over, and jumped into the woman's arms. The scene of the woman hugging Cai'Er looked like a mother hugging her young daughter. The woman's beautiful eyes looked over and rested on Ling Chen. As their eyes met, Ling Chen saw that this woman was incredibly beautiful-as beautiful as Shui Ruo.

This woman reminded him of clouds, and was dressed in a pure white silk garment. All of her features were simply perfect, whether it was her dazzling white skin, beautiful eyes, small and cute nose, or her cherry-coloured lips. Her beauty was not one of seductiveness, but rather, one that emanated purity and kindness.

She was almost too perfect for this world.

After seeing her face, Ling Chen was simply unable to look away. It seemed that the saying that Fairies were the most beautiful creatures in the world was very, very true. The little Fairy Cai'Er was very pretty and cute, but this woman seemed like a goddess. Were all Fairy women as beautiful as her?!

While still in shock, Xiao Hui had already transmitted the information regarding this woman to him.

[Ying Xue]: Type: Fairy, Grade: Heaven's End, Level: ????, HP: ????, The eldest daughter of the current Fairy Chief. Unable to display any other information.

Passive Abilities: ????

Attacks: ????

Ultimate Attack: ????

Weaknesses: ????

Ling Chen received another shock. This young, incredibly beautiful Fairy woman... she was actually...

Heaven's End grade!!

The random little girl he had bumped to had turned out to be a Celestial grade creature, and this beautiful woman was a Heaven's End grade creature... it seemed that the Fairies were not only beautiful, but incredibly powerful as well!

Moreover, from Xiao Hui's information, it seemed that this Fairy woman was the little Fairy Cai'Er's blood sister, and their father was the Fairy Chief.

What sort of luck was this? Meeting two Fairy princesses the first time he had come to this Fairy Realm.

"Big sis, big sis, he's a human, one of those humans that granny told us about. This is the first time Cai'Er's ever seen a human... but he doesn't seem like he's a bad human, so what should we do? Should we tell dad or granny?"

It seemed that Cai'Er was very dependent on her big sister. Once her big sister had arrived, all of her worries and anxiety seemed to have melted away. The Fairy woman and Ling Chen looked at each other. Hearing what Cai'Er had to say, her lips moved, "Human?"

This woman was called Ying Xue, and looked about as old as he was. And yet, this woman who looked about the same age as himself... was of the Heaven's End grade! If she wanted to kill Ling Chen, it would be as easy as killing an ant. Ling Chen never thought that within this realm, the first Heaven's End creature he met would be this young, goddess-like woman.

After finding out that Ling Chen was a human, her reaction was abnormally calm. Because the Fairy Clan had been sealed away from the rest of the world for thousands of years, this woman shouldn't have ever seen a human before. Her reaction upon seeing one should have been one of shock; something like what her little sister had displayed. However, the only reaction that Ling Chen saw was that her eyes momentarily widened, but she immediately regained her calm composure. Her eyes were like an abyss; after looking into her eyes, Ling Chen could feel a sense of pressure bearing down on him.

The pressure from a Heaven's End creature was not to be underestimated. This feeling told Ling Chen that it would only take a moment for this woman to destroy him; he wouldn't even have the chance to run.

The Fairy Clan was indeed very powerful-no wonder the Moon God Clan had requested the Fairy Clan to help them when fighting the Demon Beast Clan.

Not only was Ying Xue's reaction extremely calm, but her actions were also brisk and decisive. Seeing this outsider who had entered her home, she had not panicked, and had not shown any curiosity. Instead, she slowly stretched out her jade-white palm, with a jade bracelet on her wrist. She quietly asked, "Tell me how you got here."

Her voice was so soft and gentle that it sounded like a girl confessing to a boy who she loved. No one would be able to resist it and lie to her. Ying Xue's voice even caused Ling Chen's body to relax, and he calmly replied, "I don't know how I got here either. I was walking along in the Fairy Forest, and somehow got here."

The woman's expression remained calm, and her voice was still as gentle as the wind, "Since it's like that, I'll send you out from here. This is not a place where humans should come, so do not try to come here again. Also, don't tell anyone else about this place. You... can go now."

As she spoke, the jade bracelet on the girl's wrist shone, and a

warm, white light landed on Ling Chen.

Although their distance was not too far apart, and the white glow was not travelling too quickly, Ling Chen definitely could have easily avoided it. However, Ling Chen swayed, and was not able to dodge it. As soon as the white glow touched him, it encapsulated his entire body... because he could not sense any danger from this white glow he had reacted a moment too late. The moment the white glow touched his body, a system announcement sounded out in his ears:

“Ding... you have been locked on to by the skill ‘Nature’s Ring’. After 10 seconds, you will be transported 500 kilometres away.”

“.....”

“Goddamn !@#$%....”

The system announcement caused Ling Chen, who was pondering how to enter the inner regions of the Fairy Realm, to nearly jump up in shock. Although he had not received any damage from the white glow, he would be transported 500 kilometres away!!

“Human, Nature’s Ring will send you to a place far away. I hope that you won’t come here again, because this is not a place where you should be. Cai’Er, let’s go.”

After the woman finished talking, she turned to leave.

Ten seconds… nine seconds… eight seconds…

Ling Chen frowned. Although this woman was as beautiful as a goddess; although she was a powerful Heaven's End grade creature; although he was technically trespassing onto their territory… but to be controlled by her like this left a sour taste in his mouth… Ling Chen was naturally a proud person, so after leaving Heaven and Hell, he had always been in control of himself and others.

He slowly let out a breath, and his gaze rested on the Fairy woman called Yin Xue.

Since you Fairies don't like humans… Then, I'll give you another reason not to like humans!

Chapter 246 - Stealing Away The Little Fairy!

500 kilometres away... if he was lucky, it would be a town or the wilderness. If he was unlucky, he would be transported into a river or canyon, or even the territory of a powerful monster. Ling Chen's eyes narrowed as he waited for Moon Shadow's cooldown time to expire. The instant it expired, he shot forwards. When he was within range, he activated Moon Shadow, and froze Ying Xue and Cai'Er in place.

Ling Chen's Moon Shadow now had a range of 20 metres. Because it was a skill that could be used immediately, even the Ying Xue and Cai'Er had no time to react before they were frozen by the skill. Ling Chen charged over and grabbed onto Cai'Er's small body, encapsulating her with the white light as well.

The extremely calm Ying Xue's eyes revealed an expression of shock. Under the effects of Moon Shadow, she was unable to move, despite being of Heaven's End grade. The human male in front of her then extended out a finger, and gently touched her chin. The moment his finger came into contact with her skin, her emotions spun out of control. The Fairy Clan was the most loyal clan in the world. No matter if it was a male or female, all Fairies would be loyal to one person, and would not let anyone else touch their bodies. Even if their other half died, they would still continue to love them in their hearts. Otherwise, if their bodies were touched by any other creature, they would feel that their bodies had been contaminated and polluted.

Evidently, Ling Chen did not know any of this, and did not know

how significant his actions would be on this Fairy woman.

“Little beauty, humans are very, very evil. Next time you meet humans, be careful!” Ling Chen smilingly said as he used his “Lucky Hand” on the beautiful Fairy woman.

“Ding… the target does not have any money or gold. Because your Luck exceeds 10, Lucky Hand’s hidden effect has been triggered. When using Lucky Hand on a target with no money or gold, there is a certain chance of stealing an item away from the target.”

“Ding… you have obtained the item ‘Ying Xue’s First Wings’”

“Ding… your Lucky Hand has not been detected by the target.”

Eh? Ling Chen was incredibly shocked, Lucky Hand had a hidden effect? When the target had no money, he could directly steal an item?

However, Ling Chen did not know how lucky he had been. Ying Xue was of the Heaven’s End grade, and her level was much, much higher than Ling Chen’s. Under normal circumstances, even if he used the Lucky Hand on her a hundred times, he probably would not have succeeded even once. However, Ying Xue had been frozen by Moon Shadow, Cai’Er had been held by Ling Chen within the effects of Nature’s Ring, and Ling Chen touching her chin caused her heart and emotions to become incredibly flustered. As such, Ling Chen’s Lucky Hand had succeeded without her noticing.

The Lucky Hand's main function was to steal money. As such, the chance of stealing an item from a target who had no money was incredibly low. Being able to successfully steal away an item from a Heaven's End grade Fairy on his first try was incredibly, incredibly lucky of Ling Chen. Even if he tried another hundred times or even thousand times, it was unlikely that he would succeed again.

First Wings? What was that?

However, Ling Chen had no time to think. The instant after the announcement told him that his Lucky Hand had succeeded, the Moon Shadow's effects ended, and the Nature's Ring's countdown hit zero. The white glow flashed brightly, and both Ling Chen and Cai'Er disappeared.

"Cai'Er!!"

After regaining control over her body again, Ying Xue anxiously cried out. However, it was too late. Cai'Er, with the human, had been transported 500 kilometres away into the human world!

After what had just happened with the human, Ying Xue's emotions were still in a wreck. Cai'Er had never left the Fairy Clan before, and a long time had passed since the Fairy Clan had separated themselves from the rest of the world. By now, none of the Fairies had any idea what the outside world was like. And yet, Cai'Er had been sent to the outside world with that human. Ying Xue was feeling incredibly worried about her.

After sighing, she turned around. As a gentle breeze blew past, her body seemed to turn into smoke and she disappeared.

At the centre of the Fairy Realm, under an ancient tree.

“What!?”

A yell of surprise came out from the largest jade-green house. Because it was so peaceful, this yell travelled very far, and many Fairies stopped doing what they were doing and looked over. The Fairy Chief was always calm and gentle like water, and they very rarely heard him raise this voice. Had something terrible happened?

The male looked about 40 years old, and had an air of geniality and dignity around him. The Fairy Realm had never been entered into by an outsider before. When they heard that Cai’Er had been taken away by an intruding human, they had been completely dumbfounded.

Ying Xue gravely nodded her head, and told him what had happened.

The middle-aged man frowned, and thought in silence for a while. He turned around, and slowly asked, “How did that human enter?”

“He said he inadvertently found his way here.” Ying Xue replied.

“That’s definitely impossible.” The middle-aged man flicked his wrist, “Our clan is protected by Nature’s Bewildering Formation. No matter how powerful a creature is, it still cannot compare to the almighty Nature. As such, it is impossible to forcefully destroy the Bewildering Formation. Plus, even if it was destroyed, we would have known. The other option, passing through the Bewildering Formation, is almost just as impossible. Making even one wrong move would send the person to a different location, making it impossible to find this place. It’s impossible that the human ‘inadvertently’ found his way here. It’s very possible that he found a way to pass through the Bewildering Formation.”

“So if he spreads the word about how to get here, then…”

“Exactly!” the middle-aged man solemnly nodded, “Cai’Er is a Maiden of Nature, so she is always protected by Nature. As such, rather than her safety, I’m more worried about this issue.”

“What should we do then?” Ying Xue realised how serious this problem was.

The middle-aged man thought for a while, the frowned, “Go to your grandmother, and gather all of the Elders. We must quickly discuss what to do. Otherwise, our Fairy Clan could face destruction.”

“Roger!” Ying Xue nodded, but did not immediately leave. She half-opened her mouth, as if she wanted to say something.

“Ying Xue, is there anything else?” The middle-aged man asked. He knew that his daughter was normally extremely calm and collected; she would rarely seem like this.

Ying Xue’s chest slightly rose, and she slowly said, “Father, my First Wings are gone.”

“Eh?” The middle-aged man revealed an expression of shock, which then turned into joy, “Ahhhhh, Xue’Er, you’ve finally found someone you like? Haha, I’ve always worried that because your personality is so calm, you wouldn’t ever fall for a man. It seems that I’ve been worrying too much. Quick, tell me, which lucky man got your First Wings? No matter who it is, I won’t reject him, and will definitely do all I can to help you!”

Ying Xue gently bit her lips, and slowly shook her head, “Father, I didn’t give my First Wings to anyone. They simply just disappeared, and I have no idea what happened to them.”

“Disappeared?” The middle-aged man frowned, “Impossible! With your abilities, no one should be able to take away your First Wings without your knowledge.”

“I really don’t know what happened.” At this point, Ying Xue was unable to keep calm. She could only powerlessly shake her head, “When I was going out to find Cai’Er, I still had them. However…”

From when she had gone out to find Cai’Er till now, she had only met two people. One was Cai’Er, the other was that human! Cai’Er definitely couldn’t have taken away her First Wings, so it must

have been...

Ying Xue suddenly looked up, and anxiously said, “It was that human! He must have used some weird method to steal my First Wings! At that time, our bodies had been frozen by a skill of his, so I’m sure that it was him.”

This was the first time the middle-aged man had seen his daughter lose control of her emotions.

However, this was not surprising to him-a Fairy woman’s First Wings were her most important item-even more precious than her own life.

“I want to go home~~~ I want to go hooooome!!!!! Waaaah!”

The little Fairy’s face was completely covered by her tears. Ling Chen sat on a large rock, and helplessly said, “Stop crying, no matter how hard you cry, you can’t immediately go back.”

As soon as this little Fairy started crying, Ling Chen had already regretted his decision.

Chapter 247 - Sending Cai'Er Home

"Stop crying... stop crying... stop crying!!"

"Wuu... why... why are you being so mean... wuuu... waaah!!"

Ling Chen: "....."

Ling Chen was completely frustrated. He could only let the little Fairy cry to her heart's content as he tried to work out where they were. They were in some kind of wilderness, with grasses and weeds growing everywhere, but it didn't seem like it was a place where people usually passed through. However, it didn't seem like there would be any monsters here either. He opened his map, and looked for his position. The map he had bought from Qian Gun Gun was no ordinary map-not only was it incredibly detailed, but it could also tell him where his position was, even if Qian Gun Gun had never been there himself... of course, the prerequisite was that it had to be on this map.

After finding out where they were, Ling Chen was actually overjoyed.

The place where the Nature's Ring had transported him was actually on the route to the Vermillion Bird City! Travelling from the Fairy Forest to here normally would have taken him about ten or so days, so this transportation had saved him close to half a month's worth of time! From here, if he continued to head south, he would reach the Vermillion Bird City in less than half a month.

So this was what they meant by ‘every cloud has a silver lining’. But then again, nothing really terrible had happened-he had only been given a massive gift by that Fairy.

“Wuuu… you… you’re laughing?! You humans are all evil!” While she was crying, the person who had brought her here not only did not comfort her, but stood there laughing, causing the little Fairy to cry even harder.

To have found out that he had reaped such rewards from that situation, Ling Chen immediately became much happier. However, hearing the little Fairy wailing her head off, Ling Chen’s head began to hurt.

What should he do with this little Fairy whom he had hot-headedly taken out with him? Surely he couldn’t just abandon her. After all, she was just a little child in a completely unfamiliar world. Because of her different appearance, humans might start to investigate and experiment on her… it was him who had brought her out here, so it would be inhumane of him to just leave her by herself.

Should he take her with him then? That was even worse… taking this 0.5metre tall Fairy with wings with him wherever he went was sure to cause much trouble… after all, he couldn’t put her in another dimension like what he did with pets, nor could she prevent anyone else from seeing her like Leng’Er could.

Moreover, this little Fairy called Cai’Er was the Fairy Clan’s “Maiden of Nature”, and seemed to be very important to the Fairies. Would what he did cause the Fairies to charge out of the

Fairy Realm looking for him?

A little girl was already Celestial grade, and a woman who looked similar in age to himself was Heaven's End grade. The Fairy Clan was undoubtedly very powerful, so if he became their enemy... it definitely wouldn't turn out well for him.

Thinking to here, he knocked on his head... why the hell had he done something so stupid??

Ling Chen immediately changed his expression, and put on a 'good guy' appearance, "Little Fairy, please stop crying. It was wrong of me to take you out from your home, but I'm really not a bad person."

"You're still saying you're not a bad person... you're definitely a bad person! Wuu... and... I'm not called little Fairy, I'm called Cai'er.... Wuuu..." The little Fairy corrected him as she continued to cry.

"Alright, Cai'Er." Ling Chen said, "But please stop crying, otherwise you might cause a scary monster to come over. Did your granny tell you that in the outside world, there are lots of scary monsters that love to eat kids? If they hear kids crying, they will follow the sound of crying and then eat the kid."

"Waaah..." Ling Chen's words immediately had an effect. The little Fairy was incredibly naive and gullible, and immediately stopped crying, her body curled up into a little ball. Inwardly, Ling Chen was quite shocked. This little Fairy was Celestial grade, and

could pretty much destroy anything that she met. And yet, she had been scared into this state by a few of his words.

Seeing how pitiful the little Fairy looked, Ling Chen smiled and nodded, “En, that’s better. Remember, if you don’t want to be eaten, don’t cry.”

After speaking, Ling Chen turned around and started to walk.

After Ling Chen walked about ten steps away, the little Fairy panicked, and chased after him, “You… where are you going?!”

“I’m going home, of course.” Ling Chen casually replied.

“You’re not… not allowed to go… I’m… I’m so scared… wuu…” As she spoke, the little Fairy started to cry again. To be left in the outside world that had been described as an incredibly scary place by her relatives, it was only natural that she would be scared out of her mind.

“But Cai’Er says that I’m a bad person. If I’m a bad person, then I should stay away from Cai’Er” Ling Chen said as he continued to walk forwards.

“You’re not allowed to go! Not allowed to go!” The little Fairy hurriedly flew over, caught on to Ling Chen’s clothes, “Wuu… I’m so scared… You brought me here, so you can’t just leave me by myself, wuuu…”

Cai'Er's crying melted Ling Chen's heart. After all, it was him who had put her in this situation. Ling Chen turned around and looked at the little Fairy, and slowly said, "Alright, don't worry, I'm really not a bad person. I was just scaring you before. It was wrong of me to take you away from your home, so I'll take you home, okay?"

Ling Chen's words caused Cai'Er's crying to die down. She sniffled, and tearily looked at Ling Chen, "Really?"

"En! Come with me. In not too long, you can go home." Ling Chen nodded. If he didn't want to leave her by herself, the only thing he could do was to send her home. After all, it was impossible to keep her with him forever. He had to log off, eat and rest, but he couldn't do any of that if he had to leave Cai'Er by herself. In order to free himself, he would have to take her back to the Fairy Realm.

He was very stone-hearted, and could take lives without even batting an eye. However, at times, he could also be soft-hearted.

The little Fairy nodded her head. Right now, she could only rely on Ling Chen.

This place was very far from the Fairy Forest, and Ling Chen definitely wasn't willing to walk the whole way with Cai'Er. He took out his map, and found the nearest town, then started walking that way with Cai'Er. The nearest town wasn't too far away; it would only take them about half an hour to walk there.

Perhaps it was because she was tired from crying, but Cai'Er gradually calmed down. As Ling Chen rode on the Cloud Stepping Mare, she would fly behind him like a butterfly, looking around her at their surroundings. Little kids were, after all, very curious to the world around them. Although the Fairy Realm was wonderful and beautiful, the outside world was mysterious and unknown, which made all Fairies feel curious about it. As such, out of both curiosity and fear, the little Cai'Er would glance around her now and then.

"Cai'Er, has no one in your clan ever exited the Fairy Realm before?" Ling Chen asked.

"No one at all. They all say that the outside world is very scary; humans are very devious and evil; monsters are all cruel and bloodthirsty; demons are especially terrifying... our ancestors told us to never go to the outside world." Cai'Er earnestly replied as she looked around her. Her actions and expression were all very wary and alert.

"To be honest, the outside world isn't that scary." Ling Chen casually said. Over all these years, the Fairy Clan had become used to living in separation from the rest of the world. This wasn't something that could be changed by saying a sentence or two.

"I believe... you're not a bad person. If... you take me home." Cai'Er pitifully said, Suddenly, she stopped, and shouted, "Humans, there are humans!"

In front of them, there was a person dressed like a farmer walking towards them, causing the little Fairy to call out in shock.

Ling Chen pointed behind him, “Hide behind me, he won’t be able to see you.”

If it was her older sister Ying Xue, she would be able to retract her wings, and no one would be able to tell that she was a Fairy. However, Cai’Er… was simply too small. Even if she retracted her wings, it would still be blindingly obvious that she was not a human.

The little Fairy immediately hid behind Ling Chen, and pressed against his back. Ling Chen increased his speed, and passed by the farmer quickly. After a while, the little Fairy patted her chest and let out a breath in relief. Ling Chen felt quite amused-with her strength as a Celestial grade creature, she could practically dominate the entire Forgotten Continent. And yet, she was cowering behind him because of a farmer.

“Big brother, where are you? We’re going to have lunch soon.”

As they neared the town, Ling Chen heard Shui Ruo’s voice. He looked at the time and saw that it was nearly noon. He picked up his communication device and replied, “Ruo Ruo, you can eat first with Tian Tian. I’m unable to leave right now, and it might take a while before I can log off.”

If he left now, the little Fairy would definitely cry her eyes out until he logged on again.

“I see… then we’ll eat first; be careful big brother. Oh, and by the way, Tian Tian’s already LV7, so fast, right!”

Chapter 248 - The First Day In The Human World

The little town was called the Cloud River Town. Ling Chen looked at the introduction to this town, and found out that thirty kilometres to the south, there was a city with the same name... Cloud River City. The Cloud River town was mostly likely within the boundaries of the Cloud River City, and was not very large. It was mostly constituted of normal villagers.

“So this is where humans live? It looks completely different to what we live in.”

After entering the little town, Cai’Er hid behind Ling Chen while looking around. Ling Chen asked, “What are the houses like where you live?”

“Our houses are all made using trees. Some are at the bottom of trees, some are in the middle of trees, some are at the top of trees. They’re all very beautiful.” Cai’Er replied.

Ling Chen was speechless... you guys can fly, so of course you would build wherever you wanted to. Plus, all that world has are trees, flowers and grasses, so it’s not that strange that you’d build houses attached to trees.

After thinking for a bit, Ling Chen took out a cloak and put it on. Cloaks were the best type of accessory to protect one’s identity... just like the Sword Emperor, after all these years, no one knew that she was a woman. After putting on the cloak, Ling Chen said,

“Cai’Er, you can hide inside this cloak. This way, no one will be able to see you.”

“Hide... inside there?” After realising that he meant inside the cloak, Cai’Er furiously shook her head, “No way, no way! Granny said that we can’t get too close to men. If I hide in your clothes, I’ll be very close to you, and...”

“Alright then.” Ling Chen shrugged, “Then just follow behind me. However, as you know, you look completely different to humans. If you’re discovered by any other humans, they might catch you and experiment on you. They might even sell you or feed you to some ferocious monsters... when that time comes, I won’t be able to protect you.”

“Ahh!!” Cai’Er let out a small cry of fear, and her face became pale as a sheet. She quickly dove into Ling Chen’s cloak. Even when she was inside the cloak, she still couldn’t help but tremble.

“That’s better.” Ling Chen chuckled, and walked towards the town, “Remember, don’t casually come out, and don’t talk when there are other people around.”

Cai’Er quickly nodded her head.

The town was quite quiet when they entered. At this time, most people were probably working. Ling Chen greeted a young woman, and politely asked, “Hello, could you please tell me where the Item Shop is?”

“Hello... Oh, could you be one of those otherworlders from the legends?” The young woman looked at him in shock, “I never thought I’d meet one of you legendary people. The Item Shop is ahead. If you continue walking on this road, you’ll see if in about 300 metres.”

“Thank you very much.” Ling Chen thanked her, and continued walking. The young woman stared at him, and thought inwardly, “I heard that these otherworlders are pretty weak, but they can continuously revive. What an enviable ability.”

Very soon, Ling Chen found the Item Shop. The owner, a middle-aged man, looked at Ling Chen and smiled warmly, “Hello, young warrior. What can I do for you?”

Looking at the goods, Ling Chen saw that none of the potions or crystals were better than what was sold in the Azure Dragon City. It seemed that the only place where he could buy better potions and crystals would be at the Central Imperial City. Ling Chen bought a few teleport scrolls for the Cloud River Town, then, after asking some questions about the Cloud River Town, turned and left. After buying the teleport scroll for this town, he had achieved his goal. After taking Cai’Er back to her home, he could directly return to here.

“Cai’Er, from the way these people talk and conduct themselves, aren’t they all good, kind people? None of them are as evil or bad as you said. Which of the people we met seemed like a bad person?” After walking to a secluded spot, Ling Chen asked Cai’Er.

“They don’t seem like bad people, but granny said that

humans…”

“Has your granny ever met a human before? Has she ever talked to a human before?” Ling Chen did not wait for Cai’Er to finish before bombarding her with another two questions.

Cai’Er stayed silent for a while, before replying in a small voice, “Granny’s never left the Fairy Realm either, so she’s never met a human before.”

“So your granny, as well as all the other Fairies who told you humans are all bad, have never met humans before right? Even though you think humans are all bad people, you’ve only heard about them before today, right?” Ling Chen slowly asked.

Cai’Er poked her head out from within the cloak, thought for a while, then weakly tried to rebut, “But granny would never lie to me.”

“Yes, but which one is more reliable-hearing about something or seeing something? Which human in this town is as wicked or scary as your granny described?” Ling Chen asked.

The little Fairy was once again stumped. After all, how could such a pure and innocent little Fairy contend with Ling Chen, this sly old fox.

Ling Chen continued to talk, “It’s true that there are bad humans, but those people are in the minority. The majority of

humans are all very friendly and kind. Although the Fairies have gone into seclusion for quite a long time now, but whenever the humans talk about Fairies, they always say that the Fairies are beautiful, kind and love peace. As such, whenever humans think of Fairies, they always view them in a very positive light. Everything I said to you before about what would happen if other humans discovered you was just to scare you.

Cai'Er: "....."

"So, before we return to the Fairy Clan, do you want to play in the human world for a bit? Think about it-after you return to the Fairy Realm, you might not be able to come out for the rest of your life. This might be the last chance you get to properly see the human world, so that you can tell your granny, dad and big sister all about it. What do you think?" Ling Chen asked.

As there was no one else around, Cai'Er's entire body was outside of the cloak. Ling Chen's words were very enticing to her. When she was in the Fairy Realm, she had been very apprehensive of the outside world, but because of her curious nature, she had always wondered what this outside world would be like. She wasn't able to resist this offer, and nodded... soon after, a rumble escaped from her stomach.

"Hungry?" Ling Chen laughed.

"Mmm!" The little Fairy pitifully nodded, "I came out to get some floral nectar to eat, and then... I was transported out. I'm so hungry now... I really want to eat something."

“Do you usually eat floral nectar for your meals?” Ling Chen curiously asked.

“Floral nectar, pollen, petals, dew of the dawn and dusk are all things we like to eat and drink.” Cai’Er said as she swallowed a mouthful of saliva.

Within the Fairy Realm, there were many different types of flowers and grasses, so it wasn’t too surprising that some of them or parts of them were edible. Ling Chen took out two Azure Dragon City teleport scrolls, and handed one to Cai’Er, “Hold this in your hand and shatter it with your hands. I’ll take you to eat something now… even though human food is very different to Fairy food, but maybe you’ll like it.”

……

After returning to the Azure Dragon City, Ling Chen kept his cloak on so that no one would find out about Cai’Er. Within Ling Chen’s cloak, Cai’Er peaked out from some gaps. Seeing so many people, as well as all the architectural structures, Cai’Er could not help but gasp in shock.

“Wah! These houses are so tall and so pretty!” In the little town, she felt that the houses looked very strange. However, when she saw the countless beautiful and splendorous houses in the Azure Dragon City, her mouth hung wide open in complete shock. In the Fairy Realm, she had never seen such beautiful architecture before.

“Amazed, right? Our human world has all sorts of houses. Some are even bigger and prettier than these ones. Also, it’s even more beautiful inside.” Ling Chen proudly said. He was quite amused by her reaction.

“So, so beautiful…” The little Fairy muttered, completely and utterly entranced. She continued to mumble, “I want… to live in this sort of house… wow… so beautiful…”

Ling Chen took Cai’Er to the largest food square in the Azure Dragon City, and booked one of the most luxurious VIP rooms, then proceeded to order eight or nine dishes.

Every corner of the VIP room was decorated with beautiful items, whether it was the walls, ground, table, lights, windows…Cai’Er’s mouth hung open for a long time as she looked around her. She couldn’t believe that this was all reality.

“What do you think? Whether it’s the outside or the inside, our houses are much more beautiful than your ones, right?” Ling Chen smugly asked.

Cai’Er could only dumbly nod in response.

In the virtual world, if one didn’t want to wait, they could request that the dishes be served as soon as they were ordered. After ordering, Ling Chen selected the option to have them all brought up immediately. After a few beautiful waitresses brought him all of the food he had ordered, Ling Chen took the little Cai’Er

out of his cloak. By now, her saliva had soaked a large patch on the front of her dress.

"It smells so good... so, so good!" Cai'Er sniffed around her, as if she was trying to breathe in the food itself. Upon smelling all the delicious food in front of her, her mouth began to overflow with saliva. Ling Chen casually sniffed, and thought to himself, "The food I ordered wasn't even that luxurious... it seems that the food Fairies eat is much, much different to what we eat."

"If you want to eat, then go ahead. No one else will come here." Ling Chen said as he smiled.

Cai'Er vigorously swallowed another mouthful of saliva, and asked in a small voice, "Can I really?" After receiving confirmation from Ling Chen again, she couldn't hold back anymore and quickly flew over...

Chapter 249 - Cai'Er's New Friends

Having eaten flower nectar, pollen and dew for her entire life, what sort of reaction would this little Fairy have upon eating the delicious human food?

Ling Chen originally thought that the way Tian Tian ate was the most terrifying eating style in the whole world, but he found that he was wrong. The moment Cai'Er floated over to the table, she began to devour the food like a cyclone. Because Cai'Er was quite small, she almost landed inside the plate, and ravenously devoured everything in front of her. Seeing her almost inhale all of the food, Ling Chen's jaw almost hit the ground. After all, she was already hungry, and was someone who loved to eat yummy things. After finding food that she felt was so delicious, she was unable to control herself.

Fairies did not eat any human food. Perhaps this was why they were called the purest creatures, free from any contamination or pollution. However, this didn't mean that they didn't like to eat human-it was just that, sealed away in their own world, they didn't have any chance to eat human food.

Ling Chen had ordered nine dishes in total, and Cai'Er had already finished one in just a matter of seconds. She raised her head from the plate, and licked her lips, "Wowww... so, so yummy! I've never eaten something so yummy before... this is definitely the most, most, most yummiest thing in the whole world!"

After recovering, she leapt towards another plate, and after taking a small bite, her eyes flashed, "Wah! Heavens... this one... is

even more delicious than the one from before!!”

Cai’Er’s yelling caused Ling Chen to become speechless. The food in the plate rapidly disappeared as Cai’Er once again started to devour everything. Ling Chen was simply amazed-how could Cai’Er’s little body fit so much food?! Seeing Cai’Er in her frenzy, he walked over to another side of the room and picked up his communication device. He softly said, “Ruo Ruo, have you eaten with Tian Tian yet? Can you get Meng Xin and the others to come to where I am? I’m at the Central Food Plaza in the Emperor Room. I’m going to introduce a very cute friend to you guys.”

After talking to Shui Ruo, Cai’Er was still feasting her heart out. Ling Chen sat next to her and watched her eat.

Ten minutes later…

“Whew…” Cai’Er comfortably sat on the table, and happily patted her little stomach. As her little tongue licked her lips, she exclaimed, “So full, so full! Human big bro, so this is what your human food is like. It’s simply too delicious.”

“Much better than your Fairy food, right?” Ling Chen smiled as he replied.

“Mhmm!” The little Fairy nodded her head earnestly, “I didn’t know there could be such yummy things in the world… you humans are so lucky.”

“If you stay in the human world, you can eat this sort of thing every day.” Ling Chen smilingly said.

The little Fairy who had cried her heart out because she was taken to the human world now had a look of deep contemplation on her face. After thinking for a while, she reluctantly shook her head, “Even though… even though I want to eat this yummy food every day, but granny said that I shouldn’t go to the human world. I’m sure they’re all very worried about me right now…”

Seeing the scraps of food left, Cai’Er swallowed a mouthful of saliva, and asked in a small voice, “Big bro, can I take some food back with me? I really want granny, dad and big sis to try some as well.”

“Sure. This place does takeaways, so I’ll order some for you now.” Ling Chen immediately agreed.

“Wah! Thank you big bro… you’re really a good person!” The little Fairy ecstatically replied. Unknowingly, she started to like this big brother more and more.

Ling Chen ordered even more food for takeaway, and put all of it in front of Cai’Er. There was so much that it could be described as a small mountain. Cai’Er gazed at all the food for a while, then waved her hand. A green glow appeared on the food, and the takeaway food disappeared.

“Alright, now I can bring all of the food back with me.” Cai’Er said as she patted her hands. She had probably put the food into

some sort of special item or dimension.

At this moment, someone knocked on the door, “Big brother, are you inside?”

Inside the VIP room, even if it was the waitresses, they would first have to knock, and would have to be given permission to enter before they could enter. Hearing the voice from outside, Cai’Er panicked, and instinctively shot into Ling Chen’s cloak. Ling Chen chuckled, and replied, “I’m inside, you guys can come in.”

Shui Ruo, Meng Xin, Xiao Qi, Su’Er and Mu Bing Yao walked in. Shui Ruo walked over and smiled, “Big brother, you said that you wanted to introduce us to a very cute friend-where is he or she?”

“Right here.” Ling Chen mysteriously smiled, and took off his cloak, “Cai’Er, come out, I want to introduce a few human big sisters to you.”

Seeing that her hiding place had suddenly vanished, the little Fairy gave a cry of surprise and flew behind Ling Chen’s back, her hands covering her eyes… as if she believed that if she couldn’t see them, they couldn’t see her either. She was not fearful of Ling Chen anymore, but that did not mean that she was not scared of humans in general. After seeing so many humans approach, she couldn’t help but feel scared.

“Wah!!” Even though Cai’Er flew behind Ling Chen very quickly, the girls were still able to see what she looked like. They all let out cries of surprise-this little person was so small, and had a pair of

transparent wings. Ling Chen moved aside, and used his hands to move Cai'Er in front of him. He comfortingly said, "Cai'Er, don't be afraid, they're all good people and won't harm you."

As he spoke to Cai'Er, he looked at the girls, and signalled to them not to do anything that would scare the little Fairy.

The girls were all staring at Cai'Er, their eyes were filled with curiosity and liking... it was the same way Leng'Er looked at her dolls. Indeed, none of the girls could resist this cute and beautiful little person.

"So cute! I've never met such a cute little girl before!" Shui Ruo was instantly smitten by this little Fairy, and she walked closer as she smiled, "Little sister, is Cai'Er your name?"

No one could resist Shui Ruo's gentle and heart-warming voice. Hearing this voice, the little Fairy looked up, and nervously said, "I... I'm called Cai'Er."

"Cai'Er, what a lovely name. It suits you a lot." Shui Ruo said as she smiled.

Even if Cai'Er tried, she simply wouldn't be able to find anything scary about Shui Ruo. Seeing Shui Ruo's smile, she simply couldn't stay nervous anymore.

"Cai'Er, not only are you so pretty, but your name is very pretty as well!" Xiao Qi also walked over, and looked at this little girl

closely, “I’m called Qi Qi; you can call me big sister. This is called Shui Ruo, this is Su Su, this is Meng Xin, and this is Mu Bing Yao. We can all be good friends to Cai’Er.”

Seeing that Cai’Er was still a little bit nervous, Xiao Qi introduced everyone to her. Yun Meng Xin looked at Cai’Er for a while, then gently asked, “Little sister, how old are you this year?”

“Me? I’m… 103 years old this year.” The little Cai’Er replied.

Yun Meng Xin: “……”

Shui Ruo: “……”

The girls’ change of expressions was almost comical. This answer was something that they definitely had not expected. Ling Chen explained, “That’s really her age. Cai’Er isn’t a human of the Forgotten Continent, but a Fairy.”

“Fairy?” The girls were all shocked.

Ling Chen nodded and explained, “En, Fairies usually live for one thousand years or so. A Fairy who is 103 years old is equivalent to a human who is about 10 years old. Not only do Fairies live for a long time, but they also age slowly, and their mentality develops at a similar rate. As such, Cai’Er’s personality is that of a ten year old child’s.”

Subsequently, Ling Chen told them about how he had entered the Fairy Forest, followed Xiao Hui into the Fairy Realm, and taken Cai'Er out from there. The girls were all extremely shocked and amazed, and couldn't stop letting out cries of surprise.

"Big brother, you're so bad. I can't believe you took Cai'Er out like that. I'm sure she was very scared at the time." Shui Ruo rebuked Ling Chen as she bent down to comfort Cai'Er, "Cai'Er, don't worry, and don't be afraid. Very soon, big brother will send you back. We'll all protect you and won't let anyone harm you."

"En!" Although they had been strangers, but after interacting with the girls for a while, Cai'Er was not afraid of them anymore... within her heart, she thought to herself that humans weren't as scary or terrible as her granny had said. On the contrary, they all seemed very kind and nice.

"I'm going to take Cai'Er back today. It's just that Cai'Er has already lived for 100 years, but this is her first time leaving the Fairy Realm. After taking her back, she might never be able to come out again. So before I take her back, do you all want to take her out to play?"

"Of course!" Shui Ruo happily replied.

"Great, great! Cai'Er, there are lots of fun places in the Azure Dragon City. There's a massive amusement park, so we'll take you there, okay?" Of course, Xiao Qi was completely on board with this idea.

“Um… Cai’Er, can I hug you?” Su’Er stood in front of Cai’Er and nervously asked. She looked even more nervous than Cai’Er herself. However, it was obvious from the way she looked at Cai’Er that she really, really liked this little Fairy.

“Me too, me too… Cai’Er, let big sister hug you alright?”

“Hnn… Qi Qi, don’t steal her away from me…”

Chapter 250 - The Reluctant-To-Leave-Cai'Er

The Azure Dragon City Amusement Park was enormous, and was larger than even the largest amusement park in Beijing by ten times. The rides were much bigger and better than those in the real world, and although it wasn't practical to have digital devices that the real world had, there were many things that were made possible in the virtual world that simply would not be possible in the real world. The cost of going to such a place was not cheap, but one was guaranteed to have the time of their life there.

"Wow!!" Cai'Er was amazed by the sea of people, as well as countless rides and things to play. Xiao Qi walked over, and smiled, "Cai'Er, there's many, many things to play here. Do you want to spend some time here?"

Yes!!" Cai'Er vigorously nodded her head. She was at the age that loved to play, and there were so many toys that could be won at different stalls.

"What do you want to play first? Oh, let's go on a rollercoaster." Xiao Qi immediately chose her target.

"Qi Qi, can you not choose to start with something so hair-raising!" Ling Chen retorted.

"It's decided, let's go, let's go!" Xiao Qi pulled Su'Er and Shui Ruo's hands as she charged over to a rollercoaster. Ling Chen and the others could only helplessly follow behind her.

Rollercoasters, see-saws, merry-go-rounds, rafting, swings, ice skating, Adventure Palace, Fairy Tale Palace, Scenery Palace, etc... the group played on nearly everything the amusement park had to offer. With the entire Heart's Dream present, as well as an extra little guest, everyone had a great time. Cai'Er, who had never left the Fairy Realm before, had never seen such amazing things before-going to the amusement park with Ling Chen and the others had been incredibly exciting for her. From the beginning to the end of the day, she had not stopped yelling, screaming, laughing. She forgot all about how scared she was of the human world, and forgot to hide within Ling Chen's cloak. The girls always stood around her to make sure that no one else saw her.

The group played from noon till evening. The little Fairy who had been yelling and screaming the entire afternoon was on the verge of collapse. She tiredly sat on the seat in the Ferris wheel, her little face completely red.

Even Ling Chen sat there, trying to recover his strength. However, the girls were unwilling to waste even a single minute with this little Fairy. Xiao Qi and Su'Er were constantly talking to Cai'Er and asking her questions.

"Cai'Er, did you have fun today?"

"En!" Cai'Er nodded her head very quickly, "I had so much fun. I've never felt so happy before."

"Haha, it was much more fun than in your Fairy world right?"

Xiao Qi mischievously asked.

Although she had spent about half a day in the human world, the little Fairy immediately nodded, “You humans are so lucky… living in such beautiful houses, eating such yummy food, having so many fun things to play…”

Cai’Er really, really did like the human world. At the same time, she did not feel fearful of these girls anymore. Instead, she secretly felt very happy when she was with them, because they were so kind and treated her so well… it was completely different to what her granny had told her. This half a day of experience in the human world caused her view of the humans and the human world to change completely.

“Haha, then just stay with us, Cai’Er. We’ll take Cai’Er to play every day! How does that sound?” Xiao Qi excitedly asked.

The little Fairy felt her heart starting to beat quickly. She knew that she definitely shouldn’t leave the Fairy Realm, and definitely shouldn’t stay. And yet, she so desperately wanted to stay with these people and continue to play in the human world. She bit her lips and slowly shook her head, “But, us Fairies shouldn’t be in the human world. This is how it’s been for a long time. My granny, dad and big sis are all going to very worried about me, and are all waiting for me to go back. So… so…”

Granny, dad and big sis… Xiao Qi tentatively asked, “Cai’Er, what about your mum?”

“Mum?” This caused Cai’Er to look downcast, and she shook her head, “I don’t have a mum, and I’ve never met my mum before. I only have granny, dad and big sis. Everyone else all have a mum, but I’ve never met my mum, and I don’t know where she is…”

Hearing this, all of the girls looked at Cai’Er sympathetically. Everyone knew that a mother’s love was one of the most precious things in the world. Xiao Qi’s eyes became teary, and she couldn’t help but hug Cai’Er, “That’s ok, you’ve still got your granny, dad and big sister… and now you also have us. We’ll always be Cai’Er’s good friends, and we’ll definitely protect Cai’Er. Cai’Er, did you know, we’re actually quite similar. After I was born, my mum she… she passed away. Growing up, I’ve never met my mum before and I don’t know what she was like. However, I still have my dad and my big brother, and they treat me very well. So I’m not that envious of anyone else, and I live happier than anyone else. Cai’Er, even if we don’t have mums, we still have to live happily, okay?”

“En…” Cai’Er nodded, and enjoyed the sensation of being hugged by Xiao Qi.

Ling Chen looked up and looked at Xiao Qi in shock… he had never known that from the day Xiao Qi was born, she had lost her mum. He looked at Meng Xin and Su’Er, and saw that after what Xiao Qi had said, they all seemed to be a bit down. This was especially so for Su’Er. Her head was lowered, and her hands clenched onto her dress. She bit her lips, and her eyes became misty.

What was going on? Why did Su’Er have such a reaction to Xiao QI’s words? Could there be some sort of secret?

“Poor Qi Qi, to have lost her mum when she was born... at least she still has her dad.” Shui Ruo’s eyes became red, and she sighed as she leaned on Ling Chen.

Ling Chen gently smiled, and said in a warm tone, “Even if everyone else leaves, I’ll still be with you forever.”

Shui Ruo smiled, and leaned in close to his ears, “Big brother, it’s already quite late and you haven’t even had lunch yet.”

Ling Chen nodded, and looked at the time. It was already 7pm, so he decided that he should take Cai’Er back soon.

He stood up, and went over to Cai’Er, “Cai’Er, it’s quite late, so I should take you back now.”

“Ah? Going back already?” Hearing Ling Chen say that, Xiao Qi quickly hugged Cai’Er, refusing to let her be taken away.

“This can’t be helped,” Ling Chen explained, “Cai’Er’s been out here for a long time, and the Fairy Clan is probably panicking. If I don’t quickly take Cai’Er back, the Fairy Clan might move out to find and kill me. As for Cai’Er... I’m sure you want to go home too, right?”

After getting off the Ferris wheel, the group went to a secluded area to say their goodbyes. Cai’Er waved her hands, unwilling to part with these big sisters.

“Cai’Er, here are a few toys that we bought from the toy store just then; take them with you.”

“Also, here’s some clothes for Cai’Er. Cai’Er can wear the smaller ones, and the bigger ones are for your big sister and your dad. I’m sure you big sister and your dad will like the clothes as well.”

“Here’s lots of yummy lollies. Don’t eat too many in one go though, otherwise it’ll be bad for your teeth.”

“Say hi to your friends and relatives for me.”

“Cai’Er, do your best to be happy every day, we’ll all miss you.”

As she said her goodbyes, Cai’Er’s eyes became misty, and tears started to roll down. She yelled out, “Big sisters, I… I’ll also miss you all a lot…”

Ling Chen patted Cai’Er’s shoulders and said, “It’s time to go.”

Ling Chen and Cai’Er each shattered a teleport scroll, and appeared in the town near the Fairy Forest.

Why Ling Chen made so much effort to make sure that Cai’Er had a good time in the human world and changed her view towards humans, Ling Chen had no idea. Perhaps it was because he felt indignant towards the Fairy’s unjustified loathing of all

humans; perhaps it was because he did not want the Fairy Clan to be too angry that he had taken away Cai'Er; perhaps it was because he wanted Shui Ruo and the others to see what Fairies were like. On the way back to the Fairy Forest, he mulled over this inwardly.

One hour later.

"This is the Fairy Forest; your home is inside. You'll be able to go home soon." Ling Chen said as he pointed towards the green forest.

There was no need for Ling Chen's announcement-when they were close to the Forest, she could already smell the scent of the Fairy Realm. Hearing Ling Chen's words, she did not become excited, but rather stopped in front of the forest, silently looking ahead.

Ling Chen also stopped walking, "Cai'Er, what's wrong?"

The little Fairy was not as excited or relieved as he had expected her to have been. Instead, she looked at Ling Chen with a complicated look on her face, "Big bro... in future... can I still meet those big sisters?"

Ling Chen couldn't help but laugh, "If you want to meet them, just come out of the Fairy Realm and come to the human world. Then you'll be able to see them again."

The little Fairy lapsed into silence. She didn't fly around

anymore, but stood on the Cloud Stepping Mare's head, staring ahead. Ling Chen did not say anything, but increased the speed, and charged into the Fairy Forest.

Chapter 251 - Qing Mu

The Fairy Forest was very vast, and it would be almost impossible for Ling Chen to find the Fairy Forest again by himself. However, with Xiao Hui leading the way, Ling Chen followed a route that was even shorter than the one they took the previous time, and arrived at the Fairy Realm (or, more accurately, the Bewildering Formation) very quickly. Ling Chen stopped, and said to Cai'Er, "Cai'Er, in front of us is your Fairy Clan's Bewildering Formation. I'm sure you know how to get past it, right?"

Cai'Er looked ahead, "I know about the Bewildering Formation. Granny said that people who are trying to enter our Fairy Realm will always be transported to a different place if they don't know exactly how to get past the Bewildering Formation. However... even I don't know how to get past it."

Cai'Er had never left the Fairy Realm before, so it wasn't strange that she did not know how to get past the Bewildering Formation. Originally, Ling Chen had believed that the Bewildering Formation didn't affect Fairies.

"Alright, I'll have to take you in then. Come, follow me. Remember to always hold on to me, and don't let go."

After being taken out from the Fairy Realm, Cai'Er had pretty much forgotten all of the strict rules that Fairies were required to observe. Cai'Er, who had been adamantly opposed to coming into contact with Ling Chen, now tightly held on to Ling Chen's clothes.

Xiao Hui led the way, repeating the motions that they had done the first time they had entered the Fairy Realm. Not too long after, they passed through the Bewildering Formation. The system announcement telling them that they had entered the Fairy Realm sounded out, and they appeared in the sea of flowers and grasses.

"Alright, you can go home now." Seeing the beautiful scene, Ling Chen couldn't help but sigh in admiration. Cai'Er was amazed and in awe of the human world, and Ling Chen was even more amazed and in awe of the Fairy Realm. He patted Cai'Er's small head, "You should go home now-I'm sure that your family's very worried about you. I should also quickly leave, otherwise I'll be in trouble if your dad or big sister find me here again."

Cai'Er did not resist being patted by him. She looked up, and her eyes began to become misty, "Big bro... even though you forcefully took me out, but today... today I had so much fun. It was the most fun I've ever had in my entire life. Thank you so much big bro. Because of you, I found out that humans and the human world aren't that scary, and I... I'll definitely miss you and all the big sisters."

As she spoke, Cai'Er began to sniffle. It seemed that she was really quite reluctant to part with him.

"Haha," Ling Chen laughed, "Don't cry, otherwise if your family saw, they'd think I bullied you." He paused, and softly said, "Cai'Er, I'm going now. Maybe in future I'll come to play with you again."

"Really?" Cai'Er's teary eyes shone with excitement. She

stretched out her pinky, “Promise?”

Ling Chen was slightly shocked, and also stretched out his pinky, making a pinky promise with Cai’Er, “En, I promise. Maybe next time I come I’ll also bring those big sisters.”

“En!” Cai’Er happily nodded, “You definitely have to come-I’ll be here waiting for you all!”

“Alright I’m going now.” Ling Chen took out a Cloud River Town teleport scroll, and gently shattered it.

“Ding… you cannot use teleport scrolls in sealed maps.”

Ling Chen: “……”

“Big brother, what’s wrong?” Seeing that he was still standing there motionless, Cai’Er quietly asked what going on.

“The teleport scroll I bought isn’t working here, so I can only exit through the Bewildering Formation. Goodbye Cai’Er. Remember to say hi to your family and friends for me.” Ling Chen waved, and walked back the way he came. After walking through the sea of flowers and grasses, he would once again reach the forest, and pass through the Bewildering Formation.

“Ah! Be careful, big bro!”

“Awoo!!”

After he took a few steps forwards, Cai’Er called out to him, and Xiao Hui also stopped and let out a bark of warning. Ling Chen slowed down, but his body still crashed into something solid. He stumbled back, and rubbed his head, his eyes wide as he looked ahead of him.

Although he had clearly bumped into something, there was definitely nothing there! He shook his head, and carefully walked forwards, his hand stretched out in front of him. Soon, his hand felt something incredibly solid.

This was… an invisible barrier!?

He walked around, but no matter where he tried, the invisible barrier seemed to encompass the entire Fairy Realm.

“What’s going on? What is this?” Ling Chen turned to ask Cai’Er.

Cai’Er looked at him for a while, her expression downcast, “I… I actually forgot, around the Fairy Realm, there is a barrier that only lets you enter, but does not let you exit… within this barrier, unless it’s through Nature’s Ring, there’s no other way of getting out…”

Ling Chen: “……”

Nature’s Ring-wasn’t that the skill that Ying Xue used to teleport

him 500 kilometres away?

With no way to walk out, and the teleport scroll unusable inside this sealed map, Ling Chen could only helplessly say, “Looks like we’ll have to call your sister to get her to use Nature’s Ring to send me out.”

Before, she had forcefully sent him out upon seeing him. Surely she’d be willing to do it again at his request.

“But… but…” Cai’Er looked as if she wanted to cry, “Only big sis can use Nature’s Ring, and… it can only be used once every 100 years…”

Ling Chen: “……”

Ling Chen and Cai’Er stared at each other in silence, before Ling Chen spluttered, “W-what!?”

Once… every 100 years!!

It was just used this afternoon, so the next time will be after another 100 years!?

Goddamnit !@#$%…..

Is this some kind of joke?!

Seeing Ling Chen's face tighten, Cai'Er knew that she had made a massive mistake. She hurriedly said, "Big bro, don't worry. I'll find granny and dad and see if they can do something about it. Granny and dad are really powerful, so I'm sure they'll know what to do."

Ling Chen was starting to feel desperate. He took out different teleport scrolls and tried them all one by one. Of course, not a single one of them worked. It seemed that this barrier prevented one from exiting through any means. Ling Chen could only give in, "Alright, let's go find your granny and dad."

The Fairy houses were completely different to human houses. The Fairy houses were all fairly small, and made entirely of wood. Some were made simply by turning parts of trees into houses, making the house part of the tree. Although the houses were all built in different places on different trees, they didn't give an impression of being disorganised or disorderly. Rather, looking at the houses was like looking at a piece of art. Moreover, the air and atmosphere here was clean and fresh, without a single bit of pollution.

"Granny, dad, big sis... I'm back!!"

In the residential area, Cai'Er loudly called out. Because of how peaceful it was, Cai'Er's voice travelled very far. Beside her, Ling Chen silently considered the different possibilities of what might happen. Immediately, a white glow appeared in front of them. Ying Xue appeared, and seeing Cai'Er, her face burst into a smile, "Cai'Er..." However, she saw Ling Chen next to her, and her expression changed.

At this moment, a green glow also appeared, and a vigorous-looking middle-aged man appeared next to Ying Xue. He looked at Cai'Er, and became very emotional, "Cai'Er, you... you're finally back! This is great! We were so worried the entire day, thinking about how to bring-eh?"

The middle-aged man stopped talking halfway through his sentence and looked at Ling Chen, weighing him up. He calmly said, "You're the human that took Cai'Er away?"

"Dad!" Cai'Er hurriedly flew in front of Ling Chen, "Big bro isn't a bad person. Even though he took me out, but... but he was very nice to me. He took me to play at a really fun place, and we ate so much yummy food, then brought me back. Dad, please don't be angry at him. Big bro's really not a bad person."

Seeing Cai'Er's actions, the middle-aged man warmly laughed, "Haha, Cai'Er, when did I say that I was angry at him. It was obvious that he brought you back-just from this, dad wouldn't be angry at him. Haha, hello, otherworlder guest, welcome to the Fairy Realm. I heard about the impolite way my daughter Ying Xue treated you before; I hope you don't take offence. Thank you for taking care of Cai'Er and bringing her back. My name is Greenwood, and I am the current Chief of the Fairy Clan. You can call me Greenwood."

Although the middle-aged man looked at him very warmly, Ling Chen felt as if the Fairy Chief could see through every single bit of him. Just this proved that this middle-aged man was terrifyingly powerful. At least, he was much more terrifying than the Heaven's End grade Ying Xue. Hearing that he was the Fairy Chief, Ling

Chen slightly relaxed. Although he was still a bit shocked about how warm and cordial this person was, he politely responded, “Fairy Chief, you are too polite. I was in the wrong in entering the Fairy Realm and taking away Cai’Er. The Fairy Chief’s kindness and congeniality makes me feel ashamed of my actions.”

“Hahaha,” Greenwood nodded in a satisfied manner, “Cai’Er is not only safe, but is so happy. It seems that our worries from before were unnecessary. Distinguished guest, you don’t need to blame yourself. You can treat this place like your own home.”

Immediately, a hundred question marks appeared in Ling Chen’s head. Weren’t all Fairies afraid of and hostile towards humans? The first time he had come, Cai’Er had been scared out of her mind, and had taken out her weapon to attack him to chase him away. Ying Xue wordlessly decided to send him far, far away.

And yet, the Chief of the Fairy Clan was so incredibly welcoming and warm towards him.

Chapter 252 - A Fairy's First Wings

After Ying Xue and the Greenwood appeared, more and more Fairies began to appear, crowding around Ling Chen and staring at him. There were males and females, both young and old. The majority were males, and all of them looked at Ling Chen curiously, as if he was an alien. However, from the way they looked at him, Ling Chen couldn't see any fear or rejection, merely interest. They all kept their distance, quietly talking among themselves.

Fairies were indeed the most beautiful creatures in the world. No matter if it was the males or females, Ling Chen could see that every single one of them were beautiful and stunning. As for Ying Xue, she was on a completely different level to all of the other Fairies. Her beauty and the atmosphere around her made one want to gaze at her forever.

Seeing that her dad was not angry at Ling Chen, and was not going to do anything to him, Cai'Er let out a breath that she had been holding. However, she was a bit curious as to why their reactions were so different from that which she had expected. She directly said, "Dad, in order to take me back, big bro has no way of getting out. Big sis already used her Nature's Ring today, so she can only use it again after 100 years. Are there any other ways to send big brother out? Dad, you're so powerful, so I'm sure you'll find a way, right?"

Ling Chen followed on, "Fairy Chief Greenwood, I only came here to send Cai'Er home. After all, I am a human, so I definitely can't stay here, so-"

“I have a question for you, and you must answer truthfully.” Ying Xue, who had been silent this whole time, suddenly spoke as she looked at Ling Chen.

“What is it?” Ling Chen nodded.

“Do you... have my First Wings?” Ying Xue slowly asked with a complicated look in her crystal eyes.

Woosh. As soon as Ying Xue spoke, Ling Chen could feel that every single Fairy’s eyes were locked on to him. Even Greenwood was staring at him in concentration, waiting for his answer. Cai’Er’s mouth was wide open, looking at him in shock.

Ling Chen could feel that something was off. Indeed, he had stolen something called “Ying Xue’s First Wings” from Ying Xue, and seeing the Fairies’ reactions, it seemed to be something important.

Knowing the situation he was in, Ling Chen didn’t want to risk lying. He nodded, “Before, I was caught up in the moment and took an item from you. It seems that this item is very important to you, and I didn’t intentionally take it, so I hope you’re not too angry. I’ll return it to you now.”

As he spoke, Ling Chen took out “Ying Xue’s First Wings”, and held it in front of Ying Xue. This was a pair of very beautiful wings, and were extremely similar to the wings on Ying Xue’s back, except them were much smaller. They were not as transparent as the ones

on Ying Xue's back, but were still incredibly beautiful. The scent that it released was one of grasses and flowers, as well as a maiden's fragrance.

The moment Ling Chen admitted it, and took out the wings, the amount of quiet whispering within the crowd of Fairies suddenly increased by many times. The way they looked at Ling Chen also completely changed. This was especially so for the younger male Fairies-some looked extremely gloomy, while others looked at Ling Chen with extreme admiration.

This sort of reaction caused Ling Chen to become extremely confused.

What sort of thing were these 'First Wings'?

Ying Xue did not take them, but stared at him dumbly. Although she was certain that it was him who had taken them away, but at this moment, she was unable to stay calm and her chest heaved.

Ying Xue was incredibly beautiful, and this reaction caused Ling Chen to feel even more shocked. Apart from the quiet discussions in the crowd, everyone else was silent.

"Ahh!!" It was Cai'Er who broke the silence. Her little face was filled with shock, as if the most inconceivable thing in the whole world had happened. Her eyes moved rapidly from Ling Chen, to the First Wings, to Ying Xue, and she stuttered, "B-big bro, y-y-y-you have big sis' First Wings?"

“Ahem!” Seeing everyone in shock, Greenwood coughed twice, walked forwards and smiled, “Young human, since you have taken away Ying Xue’s First Wings, this is a miraculous turn of fate. Since it’s like this, please keep the First Wings; there’s no need to return them to her. Alright, please put them away.”

“But-” Ling Chen was not entirely sure what was happening. He looked towards Ying Xue, and saw that her eyes were filled with confusion, and she turned around. Ling Chen could only put away the First Wings, “Alright, thank you Ying Xue for your gift. Fairy Chief Greenwood, about what I was asking before…”

Greenwood shook his head, “The barrier is something that our ancestors put up to separate our Fairy Clan from the rest of the world. It is invincible and encompasses everything. It’s almost impossible to break through it forcefully. Even if the entire clan attacks it, it won’t be damaged in the slightest. The Fairy Realm can only be entered, but not exited except through the Nature’s Ring. Over all these years, you’re the first human to enter here, as well as the first human to be transported out by the Nature’s Ring. However, the Nature’s Ring can only be used once every 100 years, and there are no other ways of exiting.

Ling Chen frowned. Apart from Nature’s Ring, there was no way of getting out of the Fairy Realm. If this was true, within Mystic Moon, he would only be able to do things within the Fairy Realm. The only other way to leave would be to die, and his level would go back to LV0.

Greenwood saw the worry in Ling Chen’s eyes, and he comforted Ling Chen, saying, “Young human, please calm down. There is still

some hope. My mother knows countless secrets, so perhaps she knows of a way to exit. However, right now mother is cultivating, and she will only come out of seclusion tomorrow. In this period of time, feel free to take a walk around and have a look. Please treat this like your own home; I'm sure every Fairy will welcome you.

"I have some clan matters to attend to, so I will have to leave now. After discussing with mother tomorrow, I will immediately let you know what we can do. Cai'Er, Ying Xue, please show him around. Everyone, please go back to your own homes. Please don't overwhelm our first visitor." Greenwood smiled at Ling Chen, then turned to leave. Ling Chen simply couldn't understand why he was being so friendly.

There's definitely something wrong here! Ling Chen scratched his head.

Greenwood had quite a high status in the Fairy Clan, and after what he said, all of the surrounding Fairies quickly dispersed. Before leaving, all the Fairies once again looked at Ling Chen strangely, though they did not seem hostile.

"Ahhhh!!!!" After Greenwood left, Cai'Er began to yell out. She floated in front of Ying Xue, and jumped onto her, yelling, "Big sis big sis big sis! You actually gave your First Wings to big bro!! Big bro's a human!!"

Ying Xue continued to face away from Ling Chen. Ling Chen couldn't see her expression, but could hear the emotion in her voice, "I didn't give them to him; he somehow took them away from me. You can ask him."

After speaking, Ying Xue left without even looking at Ling Chen again.

“Oh, I see.” Cai’Er used her fingers to tap on her lips as she thought.

“Cai’Er,” Ling Chen couldn’t help it anymore and asked, “Cai’Er, what are these First Wings? Do they have some sort of special significance?”

“Eh? Big bro doesn’t know? Oh, that’s right, big bro’s a human so you probably don’t know these things,” the little Fairy began to earnestly explain, “First Wings are the first pair of wings that us Fairies are born with. When we come of age, our First Wings fall off, and we grow new wings. The wings that fall off, our First Wings, become a female Fairy’s most important possession-even more important than our own lives. If a female Fairy gives their First Wings to a male Fairy, and if the male Fairy accepts, that means they’ve decided to spend their whole lives together. If a female Fairy loses or destroys her First Wings, then she will have to spend her whole life alone, unable to marry. As for male Fairies, their First Wings aren’t too important.”

Ling Chen: “……”

Hearing Cai’Er’s explanation, Ling Chen’s expression became almost comical-he didn’t know if he should laugh or cry.

Chapter 253 - Dew Of Dawn And Dew Of Dusk

Although Ying Xue's First Wings were extremely beautiful, but they suddenly felt as painful to hold as a hot potato, "Cai'Er, where's your sister going? I need to immediately give this back to her. I didn't know your Fairy Clan's traditions, and I didn't take it on purpose."

"Give it back to big sis!? No way, no way!" Cai'Er shook her head vigorously, and used her little body to block the way in front of Ling Chen. She said in a serious tone, "Big bro, you definitely can't do that! Once a pair of First Wings have been given out, they can't be taken back. If you give them back to big sis, that'll be the ultimate disgrace to her. Granny, dad... and all of the Fairies will be very, very angry... big bro, you definitely can't do that!"

"But I'm not even a Fairy!"

"But big sis is a Fairy!"

"....."

Ling Chen's head felt as if it was going to split apart. He looked at the direction to which Ying Xue had walked, and cursed himself for using Lucky Hand on Ying Xue. Now, he was damned if he kept them, and damned if he gave them back... he also couldn't leave. Could it be that he really would have to...

He suddenly realised many things-why Greenwood had been so friendly to him, why the Fairy Clan all looked at him so oddly when he took out the First Wings... Because Greenwood knew that Ling Chen had his daughter's First Wings, he treated Ling Chen like a son-in-law. Perhaps it was because of this...

Maybe he would never be able to leave the Fairy Clan! Even if there were other methods to leave, Greenwood definitely wouldn't tell him. If he left, Ying Xue would have to live the rest of her life by herself. According to Cai'Er, a Fairy woman who had given out her First Wings would have to be with the person who received them, forever. If Ling Chen left, and never came back, Ying Xue would be destined to be by herself for the rest of her life.

As a father, he definitely wouldn't allow this to happen... even if Ling Chen was a human.

"Big bro? Big bro!" Cai'Er called out to him many times, then said in a small voice, "It's all my fault... In order to bring me back, big bro has to go through all of this. But that's alright, because I'm sure big bro will really like the Fairy Realm. And also, there are so many big bros chasing big sis in the Fairy Clan, but big sis rejected them all. Now, big bro gets to be with big sis forever-big sis is so beautiful and so gentle, so I'm sure big bro really likes big sis, right?"

Ling Chen replied in a depressed voice, "Cai'Er, I'm different from you Fairies. This is your home, but it's not my home. If I stay here forever, I won't be able to meet my family or friends every again... for example, those big sisters you met today-if I stay here forever, I'll never be able to meet them again, and they'll be very

worried about me. Also, the Fairy Realm is much too different from the human world; I don't think I'll ever be able to get used to here."

If there really was no other way, then Ling Chen could only choose to die. After all, dropping down back to LV0 was better than staying here forever.

"Oh... I see, big bro is right." Cai'Er understandingly nodded her head. She comforted him in a small voice, "Don't worry, big bro, granny's very powerful, so I'm sure she will have a way. However, when big bro leaves, make sure you bring big sis with you. You have big sis' First Wings, so you need to be with big sis forever. I'm sure dad and the others will agree to big sis leaving with you when you go."

Ling Chen nodded his head. Right now, he just wanted to leave. Everything else would fall into place if he could just leave.

When Ling Chen logged off, it was nearly 8pm. He gloomily walked out from the bedroom. He saw Tian Tian hugging an armful of new clothes as she ran towards the bathroom. She looked at Ling Chen, and skipped in front of him, and self-satisfiedly said, "I'll let you know, I'm already LV8 now! So fast, right!"

"Yeah, very fast." Ling Chen nodded, "However, getting from LV8 to LV10 takes even longer than getting from LV0 to LV8, so don't be too full of yourself."

“Hmph!” Tian Tian defiantly lifted her face up, “I’m the Demon Queen who’s going to conquer the earth-I can do anything! I’m going to shower now… oh, big bad guy, you didn’t have lunch today! Quickly go eat, so that you’ll have strength to buy me chocolate later!”

Seeing Tian Tian skipping away, Ling Chen rubbed his nose, “That little brat, it seems she can say some nice things now and then.”

Seated at the table, Shui Ruo looked at Ling Chen and immediately saw that something was wrong. She asked, “Big brother, what’s wrong? Did something bad happen?”

“Yes, it’s something very bad.” Ling Chen bitterly replied. He then told her what had happened within the Fairy Realm. At first, when Shui Ruo heard about the incident with Ying Xue’s First Wings, she couldn’t help but start laughing. However, after he told her that he was trapped in there, she frowned, and anxiously asked, “What does big brother plan to do then?”

Ling Chen helplessly replied, “I can only wait for Greenwood to give me an answer. If there’s no other way, I’ll just find a way to die.”

“But, according to the Fairy Clan’s rules, if you leave there, won’t Ying Xue be alone forever?” Shui Ruo quietly asked.

“Perhaps, but leaving there is more important. Forget it, let’s not think about these things anymore.”

Having not eaten for two meals, Ling Chen was ravenous. He picked up his chopsticks and began to quickly eat. Soon, they could hear water running in the bathroom, as well as Tian Tian's pleasant singing voice. Ling Chen looked up, and said, "Ruo Ruo, remember to make sure that Tian Tian goes to bed early, and that she doesn't play when she sleeps. She's much younger than us, and needs to get more rest than us."

Shui Ruo nodded, and gently replied, "I know." She looked towards the bathroom, and continued to speak, "Tian Tian's lived with us for so many days now, and she's never mentioned leaving, and seems very happy here. We've already started to get used to her living here, so... so if one day she misses her dad and mum, or if her dad and mum find her, and want to take her away, then..."

Ling Chen knew what Shui Ruo was worried about, and smiled, "Tian Tian's already part of our family, and this is her home now. With a big sister like you, how could she bear to leave? I'm worried that even if we want her to leave, she won't leave."

"En!" Shui Ruo smiled and nodded.

Around 10pm, Ling Chen made sure that Tian Tian was asleep, then lay down and returned to the Mystic Moon world.

As he logged on, he prayed that he would spawn in the Azure Dragon City, but that didn't happen. When he logged on, he was met with a world of greenness. This sight no longer made him sigh in awe and wonder, but rather in depression.

“Big bro, you’re back!”

Cai’Er seemed to be waiting for him, and as soon as he appeared, she flew over, with a large leaf in her hands, “Big bro, this is for you. It’s some dew I collected from some flowers. It’s very sweet and refreshing!”

There were a few drops of ordinary-looking dew on the jade-green leaf. Cai’Er had previously mentioned that Fairies eat flower nectar, pollen and dew. However, he was not too interested in this- after all, it wasn’t very practical for humans to drink dew to quench their thirst. Despite this, seeing Cai’Er’s expectant expression, he received the leaf and looked at the dew’s attributes.

However, his casual glance caused his eyes to widen, and he nearly dropped the leaf.

Hallucination… this must be a hallucination!

[Dew of Dusk]: Pure dew that is formed on Fairy flowers and grasses at dusk, and contains a great amount of life energy. After consuming, restores 2000MP every second, which persists for 10 seconds. Can be used continuously, and the effects do not decrease after continuous consumption.

Restore 2000MP… every second!!

Ling Chen's mouth was wide open as he stared at the dew on the leaf. Right now, the best potions could only instantly restore 400MP, and had a 5 second cooldown. Compared to this Fairy dew, those potions were complete garbage.

Restoring 2000MP every second for 10 seconds... this was game-breaking.

Ling Chen looked at Cai'Er, and quickly asked, "Cai'Er, where did you get this dew, and is there a lot?"

Cai'Er immediately nodded, "You can find it on any flower or grass, and there's a lot! We Fairies all love to drink it."

Holy crap, this Fairy Clan has such extravagant drinks. What was even more terrifying was that this sort of overpowered item could be found all over the Fairy Realm in abundance!

Ling Chen did not drink the dew-he simply could not bear to waste something so precious. He breathed in deeply and asked, "Do you have any way to store this dew? Is there anything you can put it in to keep it fresh?"

Cai'Er once again nodded, "Of course! I have a lot of them-look, big bro."

Cai'Er took out a little jade-green bottle made of wood. Cai'Er opened the bottle, and showed it to Ling Chen. The bottle was

filled with countless dewdrops. She enthusiastically said, “If you put the dewdrops in here, they can last for a long, long time.” Seeing that Ling Chen was staring at the little wooden bottle in her hand, she blinked, and held it in front of him, “Big bro, if you like it, you can have this one. There are 100 Dew of Dawn in here.”

Ling Chen gratefully accepted the bottle, and looked at the dewdrops inside:

> [Dew of Dawn]: Pure dew that is formed on Fairy flowers and grasses at dawn, and contains a great amount of life energy. After consuming, restores 5000HP every second, which persists for 10 seconds. Can be used continuously, and the effects do not decrease after continuous consumption.

Chapter 254 - The Fairy Clan's Secret (1)

The Dew of Dawn's effects were as shocking as those of the Dew of Dusk's. To Ling Chen, however, they were far more valuable. Right now, he only had 1,000 or so HP, so with the Dew of Dawn, which could recover 5,000HP per second for 10 seconds, unless there were enemies that could instantly kill him, he would be invincible with the Dew of Dawn.

Ling Chen put away the small wooden bottle and asked Cai'Er, "Cai'Er, do you have any more? I'd like as much as possible!"

"Eh?" Cai'Er tilted her head, "Big bro really likes these dewdrops? They're definitely not as yummy as your human food though... let's see... here, I have another bottle. You can have it."

This time, Cai'Er gave Ling Chen a bottle with 100 dewdrops of Dew of Dusk.

The Dew of Dawn and Dew of Dusk were things that simply could not be bought with money in the outside world.

"If big bro really likes them, I can get some more quickly." Seeing that Ling Chen really liked these dewdrops, Cai'Er was willing to get some more. After all, these dewdrops were in abundance and did not take much effort to collect.

"Mm, yes please-especially the Dew of Dawn. Those are very precious to me." Of course, for precious things like these, one could never have enough. After he left the Fairy Realm, he would

not be able to get any more.

"Sure, sure! Big bro seems to really like our dew." Cai'Er nodded eagerly. To be able to help him after all he had done for her, Cai'Er was very happy, "Oh and by the way, big sis has a lot as well. If you want, you can go ask big sis for some. I'm sure that she'll be happy to give you some."

"Err, maybe that's not the best idea." Ling Chen shrugged. Now that he knew what First Wings were, he didn't know how to confront Ying Xue. Indeed, Ying Xue was an incredibly beautiful Fairy woman-peerless amongst the Fairies and incomparable to humans. Even Shui Ruo was not as beautiful as Ying Xue. It would not even be an exaggeration to say that Ying Xue was the most beautiful being in all of the Forgotten Continent. This sort of woman would be every man's desire-most men would not even dare to dream to have her.

Being a man, it would be impossible for Ling Chen to say that he was not moved by her looks. However, Ying Xue was not the type that could get his heart racing. Although one of the reasons was because she was a 'character' in a game, the main reason was that he never wanted to betray Shui Ruo. Although Shui Ruo had told him again and again that he could do anything he wanted as long as he didn't leave her, he still didn't want to do such a thing.

As such, whenever he thought of Ying Xue, his head would hurt.

"Cai'Er, are there absolutely no gaps at all within this barrier that surrounds the Fairy Realm?" Ling Chen asked. Although he knew there wasn't much of a possibility, he still wanted to

confirm.

"Of course not. The barrier that our ancestors left behind completely sealed off our Fairy Realm, and there aren't any gaps at all. Over all these years, no Fairy has ever left before." As Cai'Er spoke, she suddenly remembered something, and her eyes shone, "That's right, I heard big sis say before that within the Fairy Realm, there's a place that connects to a different world."

Cai'Er's words startled Ling Chen. He quickly asked, "Really? Where is it?"

Cai'Er thought for a while, and pointed towards a tall mountain, "Big bro, do you see that tall mountain? It's around there. Over there, there's a transportation channel that can send you to another world. However, big sis said that only dad knows the method for triggering the transportation channel, and that no one else can ever activate it. Big sis also said that it was a forbidden area, and we shouldn't go near it, because that transportation channel was left by our ancestors to punish evildoers. If there are any evildoers, the Fairy Chief can send them to a terrifying place. Once someone is sent there, they can never come out. So, big bro should never go near there."

Ling Chen looked over, and saw that the mountain was about one kilometre away, which wasn't too far.

A transportation channel that can send one to a different world... Ling Chen's heart beat with excitement. From what Cai'Er said, apparently it wasn't a very pleasant place, but at least it would be better than being stuck in the Fairy Realm. Moreover, the other

world didn't seem like it would be completely sealed, unlike the Fairy Realm, so even if there were powerful monsters, he would still be able to use his teleport scrolls.

Perhaps Xiao Hui would be able to trigger the transportation channel... there was no reason not to go and have a look.

After making this secret decision, Ling Chen started contemplating when he would go there. Suddenly, he heard Cai'Er shouting, "Big sis! We're over here!"

Ling Chen looked up, and saw Ying Xue, wearing a white dress, walking towards them. Her footsteps were soft, as if she was walking on clouds. Ling Chen couldn't help but let out a breath in awe... if such a woman appeared in the human world, perhaps all of the men in the whole world would fall for her. However, it just didn't seem possible that a human could be so beautiful.

Ying Xue walked over, and looked at Ling Chen expressionlessly, "Grandmother has finished cultivating and has come out of conclusion. Father already told grandmother of your situation, and they have requested your presence. Come with me."

"So fast?" Greenwood said that they would have an answer the next day, so Ling Chen was pleasantly surprised. However, Ling Chen could already guess what Greenwood's answer would be-even if there was a way, chances were that Greenwood wouldn't tell him.

Although she was quite cold to him, she still seemed extremely

beautiful. Ling Chen glanced at her, and nodded, “Alright then.”

“Cai’Er, come with us as well.” Ying Xue turned around and walked towards the largest, most awe-inspiring tree with Ling Chen and Cai’Er following behind her.

“Um, can I call you Ying Xue?” Ling Chen asked.

Ying Xue emotionlessly replied, “You’re my future husband; you can call me whatever you want.”

Ling Chen slightly paused, and a trail of sweat ran down his neck. Before, he thought Ying Xue was treating him so coldly because she was angry towards him stealing her First Wings, as well as because he was an intruding human… surely no girl would want to have her whole life determined simply because of such a silly tradition, much less Ying Xue, an incredibly beautiful Fairy with an important background. However, hearing her say the words “future husband”, Ling Chen’s brain froze for a few seconds.

Ling Chen breathed in, and asked in a serious tone, “Ying Xue, answer me truthfully, do you have any feelings for me?”

“Feelings? I’ve met you for less than a day; how can I possibly have feelings for you?” Ying Xue answered without even turning around.

“Then why don’t you tell your father and the rest of your family that you don’t want to be with me?” Ling Chen asked.

“Why would I do such a thing?” Ying Xue asked back.

“You have no have no feelings for me, and you don’t even like me. So how can you make a decision that will affect your whole life like this?” Ling Chen asked as he frowned.

Ying Xue slightly turned her head, her voice clear as water, “Because you took away my First Wings, and they are with you.”

Ling Chen’s patience disappeared, and he exasperatedly said, “This is something important that will affect the rest of your life. How can you base it on such a ridiculous reason? Plus, I’m a human, so I don’t need to follow your Fairy Clan’s rules. I didn’t take your First Wings on purpose, and back then I didn’t know what they signified. What’s more, you didn’t even willingly give them to me. I’m also a player, and I don’t even reside in this world-if this game closes someday, even if I wanted to come here, I would still disappear from your world forever. Could you accept such a situation?”

Ying Xue stopped walking, and turned around, her face furious, “You’re not willing?”

Creatures from different worlds indeed saw things differently. Although Ying Xue had a calm personality, but she had quite a strong reaction towards his words. Ling Chen realised that his words probably hit a sensitive spot, and remembered what Cai’Er had told him before. He could only shake his head, “You are the princess of the Fairy Clan, and are so beautiful-how could I be

unwilling? It's just that... never mind, let's go see your father first."

The Fairy Chief's house was at the tallest tree in the Fairy Realm. Ying Xue opened the jade-green door and said, "You can enter."

"Aren't you two coming in as well?" Ling Chen asked. Ying Xue and Cai'Er didn't seem like they were going to follow.

"There are some things father wants to say to you individually, so we'll come in later. I'm going to gather our clan's 10 Elders, and then conduct a ceremony. Cai'Er, let's go."

"Okay, big sis. Are we going to get those grandpas?" Cai'Er quickly followed behind Ying Xue.

Talk to me individually? Ling Chen thought for a bit, then walked in.

Chapter 255 - The Fairy Clan's Secret (2)

Fairy houses were all made from wood, and were fairly small. This was so for the Fairy Chief's house as well. The feeling Ling Chen experienced when walking into this house was one of freshness and elegance. When Ling Chen walked in, Greenwood was standing at a table, as if he had been waiting for a long time. Seeing Ling Chen walk in, Greenwood smiled, "Come, young human, please take a seat."

After greeting each other, Ling Chen and Greenwood sat down facing each other. Ling Chen directly asked, "Fairy Chief Greenwood, did you call me here to tell me if there was any way of leaving?"

Greenwood sighed and shook his head, "I am ashamed to say that none of us know any way of leaving the Fairy Realm except through the Nature's Ring. To be honest, when I saw that you appeared here, I knew that you would be like us, unable to leave."

Ling Chen deeply frowned, "There's really no other way?"

Greenwood became extremely serious, stood up, and paced around as he replied, "There are some matters that are extremely secret that have been passed down from Fairy Chief to Fairy Chief. Although you're not part of our Fairy Clan, I'll still tell you, otherwise you'll be unable to accept things as they are."

"What things?" Ling Chen stood up as he earnestly asked.

Greenwood turned around, and looked at him, “Do you know why we have a barrier around us that doesn’t allow us to leave?”

Ling Chen thought for a while, then replied, “Cai’Er told me that it was because the ancestors of the Fairy Clan didn’t want the Fairy Clan to enter the outside world again.”

“Indeed,” Greenwood nodded, “This was the original intention for setting up the barrier. Our clan is a prestigious one, and overall, we are quite powerful. I’m sure that you’ve heard that what our clan hates the most is conflict and war. However, there has never been a period of time in the Forgotten Continent when there wasn’t any battles or war. In order to maintain the peace of the Forgotten Continent, our ancestors joined the war against the demons, and used their power and lives to destroy those evil beings. However, our clan paid a heavy price, and has been in decline ever since. Despite this, our ancestors did not regret their decision, as they had exterminated one of the biggest threats to the Forgotten Continent. Our ancestors believed that without those demons, the Forgotten Continent would be able to return to its peaceful days, and there would not be any more warfare.

“However, they were proven wrong. Although there was not the threat of the demons anymore, but the humans started to fight among themselves. Every single battle, countless creatures would be injured or die. The humans even started to try to manipulate and use the Fairies’ powers for their own selfish gain. At that time, the Fairy Clan had taken a massive blow, and did not have even one tenth of the power they had at their peak. The humans that had been kind and friendly to us began to try to take advantage of our clan…”

Ling Chen: “……”

“Our ancestors completely lost faith in humanity, and apologised to the Moon God Clan for what they were going to do. They retreated to this place, the origin of our Fairy Clan, and set up the Bewildering Formation, so that no human would ever find us. They also created a barrier to seal the Fairy Realm, so that Fairies would not be able to leave… because they believed that if Fairies interacted with the outside world, they would also be contaminated with the greed, pride, cruelty and immorality of the humans. If that happened, our Fairy Clan would be finished.

After giving a historical overview, Greenwood looked at Ling Chen, “Young human, do you think our ancestor’s actions were too extreme, and that they shouldn’t have imposed their decisions on their descendants?”

Ling Chen thought for a while, then nodded.

“Ai,” Greenwood sighed, “Facing the situation of our clan having suffered great losses, as well as their utter disappointment in the humans, they made a rash and extreme decision. They sealed off the Fairy Clan in hopes that the Fairies would not be polluted by the outside world, but they never would have thought that this would one day result in the Fairy Clan truly perishing.”

“What do you mean?” Ling Chen asked, astonished. There was no warfare here, no pollution and Fairies had much longer lifespans than humans. How could the Fairy Clan perish in such an environment?

Greenwood looked downcast and his voice became heavier. He deeply sighed, “It’s because Fairy Clan has low reproductive abilities. In our clan, six out of ten Fairies are males, and only four are females. Moreover, out of ten female Fairies, around two will not be able to give birth, and out of those who can give birth, they can only give birth once. Also, Fairies only give birth to one child- there are no twins or triplets as you humans have. You can see what the problem that our clan faces is.”

Ling Chen was shocked. There was such a disparity between the ratio of males to females, and they had such poor reproductive abilities. If this was the case, the Fairy Clan would lose a significant number of Fairies every generation, and in not too long, perhaps a few thousand years, they would go extinct.

“This is something that we have no control over. In the past, Fairies would marry humans. Because there are always more male Fairies than female Fairies, many male Fairies would marry human females, and give birth to more Fairies through their human wives. In those times, the Fairy Clan was actually increasing in number. However, after being sealed… ai.”

Greenwood once again deeply sighed, his heart full of anguish and frustration. He slowly continued, “Apart from what I just said, there is something else… although it is much purer and more beautiful here than the outside world, but because of the barrier, it is simply a beautiful prison. No matter how beautiful it is, a prison is still a prison.”

Ling Chen stayed silent and waited for Greenwood to continue.

“No matter how beautiful a place is, anyone would become sick of it and want to leave after staying there for a long time. All of us want to leave here and see the vast outside world. However, we have no way of escaping here, so we can only tell each generation how dirty and polluted the outside world is, as well as slander the humans so as to reduce their curiosity and desire to go to the outside world. Only through this method can we keep the peace in our clan. However, although most of the younger Fairies are fearful and apprehensive of the outside world, it’s still impossible to completely eliminate any curiosity they have. It’s just that with that barrier there, all we can do is hope and dream of the outside world, though we can probably never leave.”

Greenwood deeply breathed in, and continued to talk, “Young human, I told you these things so that you would understand that we have always wanted to leave here. Even if it’s because of the certain peril that our clan faces staying here, we simply cannot remain in this sealed realm. It’s just that, like I said before, even if every single Fairy attacked with their full strength, we would be unable to unable to destroy the barrier. According to our ancestors, the only beings powerful enough to destroy this barrier would be the Moon God Clan. However, it was our ancestors who told the Moon God Clan that they wanted to separate themselves from the rest of the world forever, and now that we are sealed in here, there’s no way to even contact the Moon God Clan. As such, we can only stay here, generation after generation.”

The main reason Greenwood told Ling Chen these things was to tell him an important truth-that after entering, he could never leave. Even the Fairy Chief himself wanted to leave, but it was simply impossible.

“Don’t you have the Nature’s Ring? Couldn’t you all use that to send you out?” Ling Chen thought of the skill that had sent him 500 kilometres away.

“The reason’s very simple-Nature’s Ring doesn’t affect us Fairies. Because it randomly teleports the target to a random place 500 kilometres away, the target could be sent to an extremely dangerous place, or a place where they could be stranded with no food or water. As such, when the Nature’s Ring was made, it was made so that Fairies would not be affected by it. However, it is effective for humans like yourself.” Greenwood explained.

Ling Chen became even more confused, “But when I was transported out, I also took Cai’Er with me. Isn’t Cai’Er a Fairy? She’s your daughter as well.”

“No,” Suprisingly, Greenwood shook his head, “This is one of our Fairy Clan’s greatest secrets. I can tell you, but you must not tell anyone else. Cai’Er isn’t a ‘pure’ Fairy, and she’s not my daughter either… you must not tell anyone, especially not Cai’Er.”

Ling Chen was shocked, but thinking to Cai’Er’s appearance, she was indeed different to the other Fairies. When he had first met Cai’Er, he had noticed how incredibly small she was. He had thought that all Fairies were that small until he met Ying Xue, as well as the other Fairies of the Fairy Clan. Moreover, it wasn’t simply because Cai’Er was young-Fairy children were about as big as human children, and there were no other Fairies who were as small as Cai’Er.

So if Cai'Er wasn't a 'pure' Fairy, what was she?

At this moment, someone knocked on the door, and Ying Xue's cold voice sounded out, "Father, grandmother and the 10 Elders are here now."

Greenwood turned around, looked towards the door, and calmly said, "You can all come in and begin the ceremony."

Ceremony? What ceremony? Ling Chen was filled with questions.

Chapter 256 - Lunar Sky Hell (1)

After Greenwood spoke, Cai'Er floated in, and called out, "Dad!". Afterwards, a small, skinny elderly woman with a walking stick walked in with Ying Xue's help.

This elderly woman looked about 90 years old, and even though the atmosphere in the Fairy Realm could make one look younger, she still looked incredibly ancient. Her face looked like a leaf from a tree that had existed for thousands of years, but she walked very steadily, and her eyes radiated power that made it difficult to look at her directly in the eyes... when Ling Chen looked at her, even he instinctively wanted to look away.

Her gaze was incredibly sharp, like that of an eagle's... it was surprising that such an old person could have such terrifying eyes. Seeing the aura around this woman, Ling Chen guessed that she was Fairy Chief Greenwood's mother. This elderly woman looked ancient, whereas Greenwood still looked middle-aged. It seemed that Fairies tended to give birth quite late.

"Mother!" Greenwood quickly ran over to support her. Behind the elderly woman, there were ten other Fairies-seven males and three females-the youngest of whom looked about the same age as Greenwood. The auras from each of these ten Fairies were incredibly powerful, causing Ling Chen's heart to slightly tremble. These ten Fairies were probably the ten Elders that Ying Xue mentioned. To become Elders of the Fairy Clan, they must all have monstrous power.

What sort of ceremony was it that Greenwood had mentioned?

“Please sit, Elders.” After helping the elderly woman to sit down in the central seat, Greenwood looked at the ten Elders and sat down next to the elderly woman.

The ten Elders sat in two rows, one on each side of the room. Only Ling Chen and Ying Xue were standing... as well as Cai’Er who was floating around, looking very interested. Everyone suddenly became silent, and stared at Ling Chen, causing Ling Chen to feel quite awkward. This was especially so for the elderly woman staring at him-her piercing gaze made him feel as if his entire body was being stabbed over and over again.

“Mother, this is the human from the outside world. Through a turn of fate, he received Ying Xue’s First Wings.” Greenwood gestured to Ling Chen as he spoke to the elderly woman beside him.

The elderly woman continued to gaze at Ling Chen, and nodded her head. She slightly smiled, “Very good. The humans are just like the legends say-very similar to us with the exception of not having wings. This human has good eyes and a mysterious air around him, and doesn’t seem to be evil or immoral. I suppose he wouldn’t be too bad for Ying Xue. As such, I am satisfied. Young human, what is your name?”

Ling Chen politely replied, “My name is Ling Tian. How should I address senior?”

“Haha,” The elderly woman warmly smiled, “You can call me

Granny Witherwood, but in future, you can call me grandmother or granny like Ying Xue."

Greenwood and the ten Elders all began to heartily smile. The Elder sitting at the far right smiled, "Ying Xue is a treasure that the heavens has gifted to our Fairy Clan. Long ago, we said that Ying Xue's marriage should be decided by the heavens, and this human who descended from the heavens, by chance, obtained Ying Xue's First Wings! Is this not a marriage ordained by the heavens? Hahaha, wonderful!"

"It's not just that this little brother is the first human who has ever come to our Fairy Realm-perhaps he is a variable; a variable that the heavens have sent to change our Fairy Clan's fate. What do you all say?" Another Elder smilingly said.

All the other Elders nodded in agreement. If what these Elders had said had come out of a human's mouth, everyone would have taken it to be a joke. However, seeing that these Elders were acting so seriously and sincerely, it was unlikely that these pure and righteous Fairies were lying or being sarcastic.

It seemed that Fairies were more different mentally than physically to humans.

"Alright, enough with the small talk. Child, Greenwood has already told me the situation with you and my Clan. Since you have come here, there is no way for you to leave. Perhaps this is something that the heavens decided. In future, you can stay here and let this become your new home. Moreover, Ying Xue's not that young anymore, and this old granny has been waiting for her to

have a family for a long time. I hope that you two can get married within ten days. What are your thoughts?" Granny Witherwood said warmly as she looked at Ling Chen.

Hearing this, almost stumbled backwards. This Granny Witherwood had an incredibly high status in the Fairy Clan, and all of the ten Elders, as well as the Fairy Chief were present in this little room. It seemed that in order to pressure him, the Fairy Clan had gathered together all of their important and powerful figures.

However, Ling Chen would not change his mind.

Against the pressure from these twelve Fairies, Ling Chen deeply breathed in, and calmly said, "Granny Witherwood, Fairy Chief Greenwood, as well as the ten Elders, I am unable to accept the marriage between Ying Xue and myself."

As soon as Ling Chen had said this, the entire room fell silent. The peaceful and warm atmosphere within the room became icy cold.

The smiles on Greenwood and the ten Elders' faces froze, whereas Ying Xue's lips slightly trembled. Cai'Er's look of excitement turned into one of agitation, with one hand covering her mouth and the other one furiously making gestures to Ling Chen.

This change in atmosphere was completely within Ling Chen's expectations. He continued to speak, "In our human world, marriage isn't decided by an object. Rather, two people take time

to develop their feelings for each other, and when their feelings reach a certain level, they decide to get married and spend the rest of their lives together. I have known Ying Xue for less than a day, and we have no feelings for each other. Although the Fairy Clan's rules stipulate that because I have Ying Xue's First Wings, she must marry me, but after all, I am a human and cannot accept this. Moreover, as a human, the maximum I can live is 100 years. If I really did marry Ying Xue, then after a few decades, I would grow old and die, whereas Ying Xue would still look young and beautiful. Wouldn't this be the same as her spending the rest of her life alone? Fairy Chief Greenwood, Granny Witherwood, I'm sure that you wouldn't want this to happen to Ying Xue."

After Ling Chen finished talking, he looked at Granny Witherwood in the eyes. After all, Granny Witherwood had the most decision-making power in this little wooden room.

Fairy Chief Greenwood sighed and said, "Mother, please don't become angry. He is, after all, an outsider, so he doesn't completely understand our traditions. It's understandable that he would say such things."

Granny Witherwood nodded, and her voice continued to be warm, "Child, although I have never been to the outside world, but I believe that in the outside world, it's impossible to find a girl as pretty as Ying Xue. Our ancestors said that it is within a human's nature to be lustful and immoral, and there are countless humans who are willing to do unimaginable things for beauties. However, what you have said has proven that you are not one of those people. Moreover, your rejection has shown that to be able to reject our offer, you are not weakling or a coward, but are rather rational and logical. Haha, this old granny truly glad that Ying Xue

can be with someone like you. However, child, there's something that you're wrong about-in our Fairy Clan, we do value Fairies having feelings for each other. Only after a female Fairy falls in love with a male will she give her most important possession, her First Wings, to that male. And only if the male also loves her will he accept her First Wings. However, Ying Xue did not you give you her wings, but you somehow received them-in my clan, this is something we call a match made by heaven. It is the most admirable type of union, as we believe that this sort of marriage is granted by Nature itself."

Greenwood followed on, "Us Fairies are all birthed by Nature, and believe that our fate is determined by Nature itself, including marriage. Your marriage with Ying Xue is something that was arranged by Nature, so we will do our best to fulfil it. If you two are not united in marriage, that would be tantamount to disrespect and rebellion to Nature, and our clan will receive punishments from Nature. Although you are a human, now that you are within our clan, you also need to follow our clan's rules and traditions."

Ling Chen: !@#$%..... (What sort of stupid logic is this?!)

"As for your second point, there's no need worrying about that," Granny Witherwood said as she stretched out her withered hand, and a small wooden bottle about as big as her thumb appeared, "Come, child, drink this bottle of Fairy Water. Afterwards, your body, soul and energy will all become purified, and you will have the blood, energy and lifespan of a Fairy. If you also become a Fairy, then you won't have to worry about dying early and leaving Ying Xue by herself."

Body, soul and energy being purified and having a Fairy's blood... becoming a true Fairy!

Ling Chen's heart jumped, and he rapidly shook his head, "I'm a human, so how could I become a Fairy! Moreover, I can't stay here forever-my friends are all in the human world, so I will definitely find a way back!"

"Indeed, you are a human, and although your body is here, your heart is not. This is even more of a reason for you to drink this Fairy Water. Furthermore, you have come into our Fairy Realm twice, so you evidently know the method for activating the transportation channels in the Bewildering Formation. If you left, and told other people, perhaps a true disaster would befall our Fairy Clan. As such, no matter what, you must drink this Fairy Water. Not only will this Fairy Water let you become a true Fairy, but it will also cleanse your memories, and make you forget about everything unrelated to Fairies. That way, you will be able to stay here without worrying about leaving. This will benefit you greatly, so quickly drink it down." Although Granny Witherwood spoke slowly, each of her words boomed against Ling Chen's ears, attacking his ears and heart.

Ling Chen: "!!!!!!" (Cleansing memories??)

Within his mind, he suddenly remembered the mental attack he had suffered from the Lunar Scourge. That sort of sensation was incredibly realistic, and should not have existed in normal games. He believed that if his spirit was not incredibly strong, his mind would have collapsed, and become the Lunar Scourge's puppet. From that moment, he had sensed that there was something

strange and different about Mystic Moon. It was as if things within Mystic Moon could affect one's mind and spirit in the real world.

In that case, if he really drank this Fairy Water, maybe his memories really would be erased.

With the precedent from the Lunar Scourge, Ling Chen definitely did not want to risk losing his memories. Suddenly, Ling Yue's voice sounded out in his mind, "Little master! Don't drink the Fairy Water under any circumstances! From memory, the Fairy Water is used to purify creatures, and can purify their body, energy and memories. The highest quality of Fairy Water can directly turn humans into Fairies, so don't drink it, otherwise you'll really lose all of your memories!"

Ling Chen quickly stepped back, and resolutely replied, "No! I am a human, and I refuse to become a Fairy! As for the Bewildering Formation, I swear that I won't tell anyone!"

All of the Fairies fell silent, and Granny Witherwood sighed, "Usually, our Fairy Clan is unwilling to use force, but we're even more unwilling to displease Nature. Even if you don't want to, we'll have to help you drink it down."

"Little master, quickly leave!!" Qi Yue yelled out.

Chapter 257 - Lunar Sky Prison (2)

The moment Qi Yue yelled out, Ling Chen became incredibly alert. He sensed there was danger coming from beneath him, and he flipped backwards. The moment his feet left the ground, ten vines shot out, and grew to about two metres in length. Evidently, if he was caught by these tree vines, he would be completely bound, unable to move at all. If that happened...

After dodging the tree vines, Ling Chen's body was covered in cold sweat. His amicability to the Fairy Clan instantly vanished, and his face darkened, "It's claimed that your Fairy Clan is the kindest race in the entire world; is this your kindness? Forcefully wiping someone's memories-this is one of the cruellest things you can do!"

The sudden appearance of the vines caused Greenwood and the ten Elders to all stand up in shock. Greenwood hurriedly asked, "Mother, is this really the right thing to do?"

Granny Witherwood sighed and replied, "Child, I have to do this-the alternative is even more cruel. If you are unable to forget about your life in the outside world, being forced to stay here will be even more painful. However, if you can forget about the past, and live as a Fairy, you will live happily each day. After all, now that you're here, it's impossible for you to leave. Greenwood, Elders, let's help him drink down this Fairy Water. He was sent here by Nature, so we cannot disobey Nature."

Granny Witherwood's words caused Greenwood and the ten Elders to become resolute. They also stretched out their hands, and

even more tree vines burst out of the ground to attack Ling Chen.

“Ah, big bro!”

The only one who was anxious for Ling Chen was Cai’Er.

Ling Chen tightly gritted his teeth. By now, there were so many vines in the room that the room had darkened from the vines blocking out the light from outside. At first, he was quite nervous upon entering the Fairy Realm, but the Fairies’ warmth and cordiality had dispelled any nervousness. However, at this moment, all he felt for the Fairy Clan was resentment... no matter what the reason was, trying to erase his memories was completely unforgiveable!

Woosh!

How could it be that easy to bind Ling Chen’s body with those vines? Like a fish in water, Ling Chen weaved in and out of the vines, and dodged all of the Fairies’ attacks. Seeing that they had failed in restraining him, the Fairies were all unbelievably shocked. They did not expect that this human would be able to dodge the vines, and they weren’t even able to see clearly how he did it.

“Quickly leave! That Fairy Chief has at least Mysterious God grade power! He was just casually attacking just then; if he used his full power, you wouldn’t have a chance. These Fairies don’t have any ill-will towards you, but they seem determined to catch you. Leave immediately, and run as far as you can!” Qi Yue yelled.

Seeing that Ling Chen had escaped all of their attacks, Greenwood frowned. He lifted his hand, and a green light flashed on his palm. The ten Elders also did the same, and immediately, Ling Chen could sense impending danger from every corner of the room. Ling Chen's eyes widened, and he raised his right hand, releasing a piercing silver light from the Lunar Scourge.

Flash!!

As the silver light filled the small room, all of the Fairies screamed out in pain and squeezed their eyes shut, unable to open them temporarily. This was the most terrifying light they had ever encountered in their whole lives. It was as if countless tiny, silver swords had filled the room, robbing them of their vision.

After they were finally able to open their eyes again, they looked around, but found that Ling Chen was gone.

"That light just then..." Greenwood walked to the door, and sighed, "No matter what he does, he won't be able to leave this sealed space."

Greenwood stretched out his hands, and took out a unique-looking bamboo flute. He talked into the flute, "Immediately capture that human. Restrain him, but do not hurt him under any circumstances!"

Putting down the flute, Greenwood closed his eyes and said, "Let's try to catch up to him as well."

Using Moon Flare, Ling Chen had escaped from the small room. He called out his Cloud Stepping Mare, and charged forwards. He was not running aimlessly like the Fairy Clan had expected-instead, he was directly charging towards the mountain that supposedly contained the dangerous transportation channel.

After charging out for about 100 metres, large waves of adult Fairies suddenly appeared. They stretched out their hands, and green lights flashed on their palms... Fairies were not only expert Archers, but could also control plants. Evidently, they didn't want to hurt him, as they didn't use any arrows-however, this motion of stretching out their hand and the green flash indicated the summoning of those vines.

Even the little Cai'Er was of the Celestial grade-with so many adult Fairies attacking together, it would be incredibly difficult for him to escape. Ling Chen desperately thought, and suddenly thought of an item. He reached into his bag and took out one of the [Furious Pineapples] he had obtained from the Lucky Cat, and threw it ahead of him.

Boom!!

As the Furious Pineapple landed, it created a deafening explosion, and all of the Fairies ahead fell to the ground with little stars spinning around their heads... all of them had been stunned. Apart from Poison, Fairies had high resistance to all abnormal statuses. However, this Furious Pineapple came from a Lucky Cat, so the stun it applied definitely wasn't any normal stun. Ling Chen increased his speed and continued to charge ahead.

He was now only about one kilometre away from the mountain! If there really was a transportation channel there, even if it was incredibly dangerous, it would be better than having his memories wiped!

The Fairy Realm was not very big, and there was nowhere to run or hide. As such, the Fairies were not overly desperate in chasing him.

Although the Cloud Stepping Mare was fast, it couldn't outrun the experts of the Fairy Clan. When Ling Chen was still about 300 metres away from the mountain, the ten Elders suddenly appeared in front of him, blocking his way. The Elder in the middle exasperatedly said, "Child, stop running. We don't want to harm you-drinking this Fairy Water will only benefit you!"

"Screw off!" Ling Chen was enraged. He unhesitatingly threw another Furious Pineapple out in front of him.

Boom!!!

To be the ten Elders of the Fairy Clan, these Fairies were incomparably stronger than other normal Fairies. However, as the Furious Pineapple exploded, they also fell to the ground like the other Fairies, stunned for 5 seconds... even they were unable to resist the effects of the Furious Pineapple.

In total, Ling Chen had obtained five Furious Pineapples from the Lucky Cat. In just a short while, he had already used two, causing

his heart to ache. However, he had no other choice-he simply couldn't risk being caught. After charging for another 100 metres, a green light flashed and a wall of vines were growing in front of him. He looked behind him, and found that the ten Elders were already standing again. This gigantic vine wall was the only thing stopping him from reaching his destination.

Seeing the vine wall growing in front of him, Ling Chen did not reduce his speed, but stared at a gap that was quickly closing. He called out in a low voice, "Moon Shadow!!"

Moon Shadow affected anything that was within its radius-not just living creatures. The gigantic vine wall stopped growing, no matter how hard the ten Elders tried. They could only watch as Ling Chen slipped through the last gap in the vine wall.

The Fairies were not too desperate to chase him down as they were actually quite unwilling to force others to do things against their will. Moreover, the place where Ling Chen was fleeing to was a dead end. There was nowhere to run once he reached the mountain.

Without any more obstacles, Ling Chen finally reached the mountain. Him, a LV20 player, reaching his destination despite being blocked by many Fairies was quite unbelievable. Ling Chen jumped down from the Cloud Stepping Mare, and called out Xiao Hui. He quickly said to Xiao Hui, "Xiao Hui, see if there are any secret transportation channels here... even if it's an incredibly dangerous one, we still need to go through it!"

Xiao Hui immediately started exploring, and the horn on his head

glowed with a grey light. Xiao Hui had never let Ling Chen down before, and after running around, he stopped about 10 metres away from the mountain. He paused for a few seconds, then jumped up and down, and ran in a circle around where he had stopped.

Once, twice, three times...

After running around in circles five times, a dim, white circle of light appeared where he was running. As Xiao Hui continued to run, the circle of light became brighter and brighter. After running around in circles ten times, Xiao Hui jumped out of the circle of light, and ran in front of Ling Chen, then barked.

The white circle of light... was definitely a transportation channel!

It seemed that what Cai'Er had told him was true.

Ling Chen was elated-he could finally leave! He unhesitatingly walked towards the circle of light. Just as he was about to enter, Greenwood and the ten Elders had caught up, as well as Ying Xue and an anxious-looking Cai'Er.

The instant he saw the circle of light, Greenwood's face revealed an expression of shock. He yelled, "Don't enter it!!!!"

Ling Chen smirked inwardly. As if he would listen to Greenwood. He and Xiao Hui both ran into the transportation channel.

Greenwood face twisted, and released all of his power, so much that the ten Elders beside him and his two daughters were swept back by it. A vine as thick as an arm erupted out of the ground, and shot towards Ling Chen, hoping to pull him out from the transportation channel.

However, it was too late.

When Ling Chen stood within the circle of light, the transportation had already begun. By the time the vine reached Ling Chen's body, Ling Chen had already disappeared into thin air.

Greenwood couldn't believe his eyes. He staggered back two steps, unable to accept what had just happened.

"It's over..." Greenwood dispiritedly said.

Chapter 258 - Lunar Sky Prison (3)

“What just happened? How did he know that there was a secret transportation channel there? How did he even know how to activate it… Chief Greenwood, what’s going on? Isn’t it just you who knows how to activate the transportation channel?” The ten Elders all asked in confusion. It wasn’t a secret that there was a transportation channel at the mountain; almost all of the Fairies knew that it was used to punish evildoers from the outside world. Because it was rumoured that the place the transportation channel connected to was extremely dangerous, Fairies were not allowed to go close. However, only the Fairy Chief of each generation knew of the method for activating the transportation channel, so even if one went near, if they didn’t know how to activate it, nothing would happen. In the end, no one really knew where the transportation channel connected to.

“I don’t know,” Greenwood shook his head, “This should be the first time he has ever come to this place. He shouldn’t even know about this secret transportation channel, and…”

“It… It was me who told him,” Cai’Er said with her head lowered, “Wuu… but even I don’t know how to activate the transportation channel.”

“It’s not that surprising that he knew of the transportation channel. After all, it’s not much of a secret. However, the method for activating the transportation channel is very unique, so how did he activate it in such a short period of time?” Greenwood frowned deeply. Only he knew where the transportation channel led to.

“He somehow found a way to get past the Bewildering Formation, so perhaps he has some method for easily finding and activating transportation channels. Father, where does that transportation channel lead to?” Ying Xue walked up and asked in her clear voice, her crystal eyes with a hint of worry in them.

The ten Elders and Cai’Er all looked towards Greenwood, waiting for him to answer Ying Xue.

“Ai,” Greenwood sighed, “We hoped that he would be able to follow our Fairy Clan’s rules and religion, but in the end, we’re much too different from humans. We are unable to understand him, and he is unable to understand us. Perhaps we were in the wrong this time. To us, making him drink down the Fairy Water may not have been that bad, but to him, perhaps he was more willing to die than accept that. As such, we have forced him… into a place of death.

Greenwood raised his head and closed his eyes, “That transportation channel was something that our ancestors asked the Moon God Clan to create for us before we were sealed off. The purpose of the transportation channel was to punish evildoers, as well as enemies from the outside world. When activated, this transportation channel sends the target to a place called the ‘Lunar Sky Hell’. It is a place even more terrifying than hell itself, and is a place where the Moon God Clan imprisons all of the extremely evil humans, monsters, demons, undead… only creatures that have committed countless sins would be sent to such a place. What’s more, once a creature is thrown in there, they can never leave. The seal on that place is many, many times stronger than the barrier around the Fairy Realm, and there are countless evil creatures

there. Legends say that there are even some Ancient Beasts. According to the ancestors, the Ancient Beasts in there can even easily kill our ancestors. The only thing awaiting that human, Ling Tian, is death. Perhaps right now he is being savagely killed... and even if he doesn't get killed, he'll still never be able to leave there."

"Ahh!" Cai'Er let out a cry of shock, and covered her mouth with her hands. She was so worried that it seemed as if she was going to start crying.

"No wonder the ancestors told us not go near here. It turned out that this transportation channel connects to such a terrifying place. Ai, then that human... although it was unintentional, this was caused by us. We should all go and reflect on our actions." One Elder said, ashamed.

"Wuu... no, no, big brother will be fine. He said that he's a 'player' from a different world, and that he can revive after dying, and return to the human city. He'll definitely be fine." Cai'Er said as she desperately held back her tears and shook her head.

"No, that's not entirely true. If it was anywhere else, that would be the case. However, in the Lunar Sky Hell, that definitely won't happen. The seal on the Lunar Sky Hell was put in place by the Moon God Clan themselves, so nothing could ever escape from there. If he's from another world, then that means his spirit is here-usually if he dies, then he will be revived in a human city. However, in the Lunar Sky Hell, even if he revives, he'll revive in the Lunar Sky Hell!"

"Wuu... then, big brother, he... he'll never be able to come

out…?” the little Cai’Er’s voice trembled as she asked; she simply couldn’t accept this sort of outcome. If Ling Chen would never be able to escape from the Lunar Sky Hell, she would never be able to see him again, and neither would Ying Xue. As such, Ying Xue would have to spend the rest of her life by herself.

Greenwood deeply sighed, and turned around. He helplessly said, “Elders, please set up a seal around this place so that no one can get close to here. If we have to use it again someday, we’ll unlock the seal then.”

Afterwards, he looked at Ying Xue, then began to walk back, downcast.

At the foot of the mountain, the wind whistled by. Ying Xue stood unmoving, staring at the place where Ling Chen had disappeared speechlessly, as if her soul had been taken away.

She thought that she had no feelings for him, but seeing him adamantly reject their marriage, and disappear in the transportation channel, her heart suddenly felt empty and confused.

It was completely dark where Ling Chen appeared, and there was a stench of rotten flesh. The air was icy cold, and the atmosphere within this place was cruel and oppressive, as if there were countless blades stabbing into his entire body.

Where was this?

And the atmosphere in here… why was it so terrifying?!

Ling Chen endured the disgusting stench, and opened his eyes wide to look at his surroundings. After a while, his eyes became adjusted to the darkness, and he could roughly see the area within 10 metres of him.

“Little master, where is this place? Why does the atmosphere feel so strange here?” Qi Yue asked.

“I don’t know; I didn’t receive any system announcements just then. Cai’Er told me that the transportation channel connected to somewhere extremely dangerous.” Ling Chen frowned, and took out his weapons, and edged forwards. At this moment, a system announcement sounded out.

“Ding… you have entered an extremely dangerous region – Lunar Sky Hell.”

“Lunar… Sky… Hell…” Hearing this system announcement, Ling Chen muttered these words to himself.

“Lunar Sky Hell…” Qi Yue also repeated the name, then went silent. After a few seconds, she suddenly yelled out, “What did you say? This is… Lunar Sky Hell!?”

“Ding… within the Lunar Sky Hell, your level will decrease by 1

every 24 hours. You will respawn where you die, and receive three times the normal death penalty. Please quickly leave.”

Ling Chen: “!!!!!!”

The system announcement caused Ling Chen to become extremely shocked. His level would decrease by 1 every 24 hours... to think that there would be such a terrifying place within Mystic Moon! And Qi Yue’s reaction just then...

“Qi Yue, what do you know about Lunar Sky Hell?” Ling Chen anxiously asked.

For a while, Ling Chen could only hear Qi Yue heavily breathing. After half a minute, she despondently replied, “No doubt, our surroundings, the environment all confirm that this is the Lunar Sky Hell. I never thought that we would be taken to this place... it’s over, little master, we’re going to be stuck here forever.”

Qi Yue’s caused Ling Chen to become even more worried, “What sort of place is this?”

“This is a place that, once entered, cannot be left. This applies to players like little master as well. If you players died at any other place, you would be taken back to the Revival Centre, but if you die here, you will keep reviving here. Escaping from here is pretty much impossible-within the last 10,000 years, no creature has ever escaped from here before!” Qi Yue said in an ominous voice.

Ling Chen: “……”

Qi Yue’s words, as well as the system announcement from just then, struck Ling Chen like a thunderbolt. No way to escape, level decreasing by 1 every 24 hours, and even dying would revive him at the same place where he had died… he never would have thought that there would be such a cruel place in a game world. It seemed that he might be trapped here forever.

“Is the seal here even stronger than the one in the Fairy Realm?” Ling Chen asked as he ground his teeth together.

“The barrier in the Fairy Realm is indeed strong, but comparing the Fairy Realm barrier to the Lunar Sky Hell seal is like comparing a sheet of paper to a block of steel! This Lunar Sky Hell belongs to the Moon God Clan, and it’s where they seal all extremely evil creatures. The seal on this place has been reinforced by countless generations of Moon Gods-even if a Moon God was put in here, they might not be able to escape. All of the creatures that have been sealed in here are all extremely power and evil creatures, including Ancient Beasts and Ancient Spirits have incredibly long lifespans and terrifying strength! The weakest of the are about Lord grade, and the strongest are Mysterious God or even stronger! Any of the creatures sealed in here are enough to wreak havoc in the entire Forgotten Continent. However, none of these powerful beasts or spirits have ever been able to escape. They can only fight and kill among themselves, and the ones that are still living are all incredibly powerful. Little master, you coming here was completely unintentional-since the creation of the Lunar Sky Hell, you’re probably the weakest creature that’s ever come in here. Any creature here is able to easily rip you apart.”

Ling Yue's words caused Ling Chen to shiver. He stubbornly took out a teleport scroll, and tried to shatter it... however, it was ineffective even in the Fairy Realm, so how could it work here? Ling Chen picked up his communication device, and tried to contact Shui Ruo. However, all he could hear was a system announcement telling him that he could not contact the outside world.

Before, Ling Chen thought that because the only way to leave the Fairy Realm was to die, being transported anywhere else would be better. However, he never expected to be sent to such a terrifying place. His position had changed from one where he was able to escape, but at a cost, to one of complete and utter despair.

Chapter 259 - Ninefang

“Moreover, the atmosphere is polluted and unclean, which can weaken living creatures. Powerful creatures will be able to resist it, but weaker creatures will find that their strength will be gradually taken away. Because little master is too weak, even if you don’t meet any monsters that kill you, your level will continue to decrease as long as you stay here.” Qi Yue said. Her voice was grave and serious-evidently, she was also distressed by Ling Chen’s situation.

Ling Chen stood there in shock, and felt powerless, “There’s really no way to escape from here?”

“None at all.” Qi Yue replied, “Otherwise, all of the powerful monsters would have escaped from here long ago. Of course, if one was absurdly powerful, they would be able to destroy the seal forcefully. However, that sort of power would have to be ten times stronger than that of the three Moon Goddesses. It’s simply impossible for someone to have that sort of power. To be sealed in the Lunar Sky Hell was one of the most severe types of punishment-if one died, then that would be the end of it, but if they didn’t, then they would have to suffer for eternity.” Qi Yue paused, then continued in a despondent voice, “Back then, what scared me the most was being locked up in here. I never thought that it wouldn’t be the Moon God Clan throwing me in here, but little master choosing to come to this place.”

Ling Chen had never encountered, nor heard of, such a terrifying place that could not be left in a game world before. Logically, such a place should not appear in a game-it simply wouldn’t be fair for there to be a place that could not be left by players once they

entered, causing them to be unable to play the game.

Qi Yue's words were like buckets of cold water that were poured on Ling Chen's body and heart, causing him to feel more and more depressed. Qi Yue's information fully corroborated with the system announcements, which showed that what she was saying was the truth.

The Lunar Sky Hell was a place of total despair and hopelessness.

However, despair was something that Ling Chen had faced over and over again in his life. As such, when hearing what Qi Yue had to say, Ling Chen's reaction was not too extreme.

"There are no such things as absolutes. Whatever, let's have a look around." Ling Chen sighed as he walked forwards.

"I guess that's the only thing we can do. However, little master, be prepared to stay here forever. Since I reside in the Lunar Scourge, as long as the Lunar Scourge is not destroyed, I won't die either. Although I'll be here forever, but with the undying little master, that doesn't seem too bad." Qi Yue had returned to her normal self-after all, there was no point remaining depressed. "However, little master, please be careful, and try not to die too much. With the Lunar Scourge, as well as little master's abilities, I'm sure that you'll be able to run away as long as there aren't too many monsters."

Lunar Sky Hell...

Looking ahead, Ling Chen deeply breathed in.

This was a place that players shouldn't be able to enter, and yet he had somehow ended up here. He started to become used to the rotten stench, and although it was dark, he could still somewhat see what was close to him. The only thing that caused him to feel unsettled was the gloomy and heavy atmosphere. There were no living creatures around him, but there seemed to be danger everywhere. He looked down at Xiao Hui, and saw that Xiao Hui's fur was standing, and had been for a long time.

Evidently, it was very dangerous here.

Even peak-level experts would have to be extremely wary when coming here, let alone him, a LV20 player!

Ling Chen calmed himself down, and started to walk forwards. Ling Chen found that the ground was quite flat, and was pleasantly surprised. However, the ground felt incredibly solid, so it probably wouldn't be practical to dig his way out. Within the darkness, he could only see about 10 metres in front of him. Every single step he took with care, and made sure not to make any noise. His mind was stretched to its maximum alertness.

Ling Chen calmly said, "Since I'm a player, even if I keep getting killed and falling down to LV0, that doesn't really matter, because I won't really die. There's no difference between dying once and dying 100 times, so it's not that terrifying. I'll just keep looking for a way to escape; or maybe the Moon God Clan monitors this place, and will discover me, then let me out. Perhaps the Fairy Clan will think of some way to contact the Moon God Clan and tell them to

release me…”

“Rest assured, little master, none of those things you just considered can become reality,” Qi Yue swiftly said, “Those incredibly strong monsters have not been able to escape, let alone you, who does not even amount to 0.0001 of their power.”

Ling Chen laughed, “Then I’ll just stay here. With a beauty like you, I don’t think I’ll be too bored.”

“Aiya, little master, are you confessing your feelings to me?” Qi Yue said in a mocking voice.

“Awoo!”

Suddenly, Xiao Hui howled, and Ling Chen suddenly stopped walking. He couldn’t see anything within his field of vision, but he could sense something incredibly dangerous not too far away. Ling Chen held his breath, and squinted, trying to see what was ahead. He could roughly make out a gigantic shape.

However, Xiao Hui could see what it was, and the information regarding the source of the danger was transmitted to Ling Chen.

[Ninefang]: Type: Beast, Level: ????, Grade: Heaven’s End. An Ancient Beast with nine fangs on its side which can stretch for 100 metres and pierce through its target, causing the target to shatter into pieces. A vicious and bloodthirsty creature that has

taken countless lives and is feared by countless creatures. It has been sealed in the Lunar Sky Hell for 10,000 years, and has become stronger and more vicious during that time.

Passive Abilities: ????, Skills: ????, Ultimate Skill: ????, Weaknesses: ????

Ling Chen: “!!!!”

Heaven’s End grade… Ancient Beast!!

Because of the gap in their levels, Xiao Hui could only detect limited information. However, just this bit of information alone was enough to shock Ling Chen. After Entering the Lunar Sky Hell, the first creature he had encountered was a Heaven’s End grade Ancient Beast. According to Qi Yue, all of the creatures sealed in the Lunar Sky Hell were all incredibly powerful and incredibly terrifying. Ling Chen tightly held his breath, and slowly backed away… the giant silhouette wasn’t moving, as if it was asleep.

Qi Yue also saw the information that appeared in Ling Chen’s mind. As Ling Chen was soundlessly retreating, Qi Yue yelled out, “Quickly run!! This is the Ancient Beast Ninefangs of the legends!! It is incredibly bloodthirsty, and is very sensitive to any living creatures. Being so close to it, it’s definitely already detected you!! Its fangs can be extended up to 100 metres, so it’s probably preparing to attack you right now, rather than sleeping!!”

Just as Qi Yue yelled out, a gust of wind blew past, carrying a

think scent of death.

Woosh!!

The air was pierced and an incredibly sharp fang, about half a metre in height... indeed, it was a fang. Ling Chen twisted his body, with his knees on the ground and his back almost on the ground. The fang passed over his chest by less than half a centimetre.

ROARRR!!!!!

A terrifying roar sent tremors through the air, and the roar, as well as the pressure from the beast, weighed down on Ling Chen like a gigantic mountain, making it difficult for him to breath. Ling Chen knew that death had just narrowly passed by, and his entire body broke out in cold sweat. Ling Chen widened his eyes, and released a silver glow from the Lunar Scourge...

Moon Shadow!! There was no other choice.

A silver light appeared, and expanded out from Ling Chen. The gigantic silhouette was also caught within the effects of Moon Shadow, and under Moon Shadow's light, Ling Chen could see what this Ancient Beast looked like... it was about five metres tall, and its entire body was black. It had an extremely small head, and had two rows of fangs on its body, four on each side. Each of those fangs were about two metres long, and were incredibly sharp. The fang that had just passed by Ling Chen came from its chest, and stretched far into the darkness.

Chapter 260 - Xiao Feng Chen (1)

How did he, a LV20 player, end up in such a dangerous place filled with Ancient Beasts? Even if this sort of place was to appear, it would usually be in the late phases of the game!

Moon Shadow was Ling Chen's absolute protection, and held the Ninefang in place. Ling Chen got up, and summoned the Cloud Stepping Mare, then leapt on and started galloping in the opposite direction... what a joke. Even if the Heaven's End grade Ancient Beast wasn't at its maximum level, it was still at least LV80-90. Even if he was a fool, he would know that trying to fight it would be ridiculous. However, running at full speed would create much noise, and with everything being so dim, he couldn't see very far. At this rate, he may alarm other even more scary beasts. At that moment, he couldn't do anything else because any hesitation would be the same as death.

5 seconds was not a long time, but within that time he had run for a few hundred metres. Facing an ordinary monster, this would be more than enough, but with the Heaven's End grade Ancient Beast behind him, this distance looked radically insufficient. After 5 seconds, when Ling Chen turned his head to look, and like a cold wind from hell his whole body was hit by a fierce wind, and his body instinctively reacted as an object flew in from the side.

Chhhiiiii!!

The incomparably terrifying fang shot out from the darkness, piercing through Cloud Stepping mare. The Cloud Stepping mare let out a painful neigh, and vanished in a white light. In the

darkness, the damage value “-126,000” appeared, which made Ling Chen’s heart skip a beat.

If his reaction from before was a split second later, he would have been directly hit.

“ROOOAR!”

An ear-splitting roar could be heard in the darkness, after the first fang, a second cold wind followed closely. Ling Chen dropped onto the ground, and using both his hands and feet, he pushed his body to the side to evade the second fang. Then, using his legs to push back and leaping towards the left, he narrowly dodged the 3rd fang. Immediately after, he tumbled on the ground, dodging the 4th fang... 4 fangs shot out within a 2 second window, and Ling Chen’s fluid movements were also all performed in 2 seconds. During this time he could hear Ninefang’s heavy treading approaching with earthquake-like footsteps. After the 4th fang was shot out, judging by the sound of the footsteps Ling Chen determined that the Ninefang was less than 40 metres away. Ling Chen stretched out his right hand, releasing a sudden bright glow.

“ROOAAR!!!!!”

The surroundings were covered by the light of the Moon Flare. Under the dazzling light, Ninefang and all other nearby beasts covered their eyes in pain. The Ninefang no longer wanted to attack, and could not even see where its target was. Ling Chen stood up, and started running in the other direction... even if you are an Ancient Beast, don’t think you can kill me that easily!

“Young master, if you use Moon Flare in a place like this, the bright light will easily attract other beasts to the area.” Qi Yue reminded.

“That’s right, I’m hoping to attract other beasts to the area!” Ling Chen said through his clenched teeth while running.

The duration of Moon Flare was the same as before, a short 5 seconds. Without Cloud Stepping Mare, Ling Chen’s ability to escape was dramatically reduced. When the Moon Flare vanished, a mass of red flames appeared in front of Ling Chen. Xiao Hui, who was running beside him, suddenly let out a welp, and another piece of incomplete information was sent to Ling Chen’s mind.

[Volcanic Desolation Beast] : Category: Beast, Level: ????, Grade: Heaven’s End, An Ancient Beast, its body is made of molten lava, and its flames can destroy virtually everything. Its mere existence brought about countless nightmares. It was sealed 10,000 years ago by the Moon God Clan, and till this day its fire has never been put out.

Passive Ability: ???; Skills: ???; Ultimate Skill: ???; Weaknesses: ???

The red shadow approached at an exceptional pace, and even in a distance, its scorching heat could be felt. As it closed in, he could see its entire figure... its body was of an extremely strange shape. The surface was similar to that of flowing magma, flowing slowly,

and looked unspeakably terrifying. Growing out of its sides were 4 giant arms; each arm had a burning flame. As it continued its quick approach, Ling Chen could see its body continuously changed shape in unexpected ways; only its arms remained unmoving.

Another Ancient Beast, and it was Heaven's End grade as well! These were hard to encounter even once every 100 years in the outside, and here another had so easily appeared before him! This is a truly scary place!

"It's the Volcanic Desolation Beast... to think that it was actually sealed in here, and hasn't died after all this time!" Qi Yue said anxiously, the name Volcanic Desolation Beast was one she had heard before. She also added, "But this is also good, these two Ancient Beasts are quite vicious and if they bump into one another there will inevitably be a fierce battle, giving little master a chance to run away!"

Indeed, when the Volcanic Desolation Beast appeared, Ling Chen felt Nightfang change its target. Ling Chen didn't deliberate any longer, and quickly took out the Dark Cloak of Concealment that he got from the Giant Greedy Toad and put it on his body. Immediately, his body vanished in the darkness and the two beasts no longer paid attention to him. It was not easy to detect his presence, and taking this opportunity, Ling Chen quickly left stealthily.

Ling Chen didn't spend a moment longer looking, and holding his breath, under the Dark Cloak of Concealment, he ran 1km before stopping. Although even at that distance he could hear the sounds of fierce combat taking place, and could see the twinkle of

the red flame, but for now he was safe. The effect of the Dark Cloak of Concealment had also been depleted, and the cloak turned into mist and started to dissipate. His palm touched an icy cold wall, and Ling Chen walked along the wall, puffing, then eventually leaned against it to regain his strength.

This place was too scary.

He had only been here for a few minutes, and had already unexpectedly encountered 2 Ancient Beasts one after the other. If not for their natural disposition to fight each other, even if he used Moon Shadow and Moon Flare to run away, he would be unable to escape the destiny of being destroyed.

He had faced huge mental pressure, and at this time he could finally relax. However, he knew that if he sat down, he would be unable to get up again. 1km away, the fight continued, and in the other direction a strange sound could be heard.

Gu...

Gu...

“Whats that sound?” Ling Chen wrinkled his brow, his whole body tense again.

Gu...

Gu...

Gu… thump! Gu… thump!

Ling Chen stood up next to the wall, motionless, as if he was a sculpture on display. Facing the source of the strange sound, looking at it with concentration for a long time, he could make out a big fuzzy shadow that was as big as a hill. That dark shadow was jumping towards his location, the “gu” sound, was the sound that it made from its mouth, and “thump” was every time it hit the ground.

This sound… the movement… could it be… a frog!?

Gu.. thump! Gu.. thump! Gu.. thump! Gu thump! Thump! Thump! ThumpThumpThump…

The sound suddenly changed, the speed of the shadow quickened, and its movement, was exactly towards his location. Ling Chen’s heart dropped-he knew that he had been discovered!

He couldn’t clearly see it, but that didn’t mean it couldn’t see him. The Ancient Beast’s abilities could not be compared at all to human abilities! It had noticed Ling Chen, as easily as a normal person would have seen another person in broad daylight.

[Ancient Toad King]: Category: Beast, level: ???, Grade: Heaven’s End. The Ancient Toad King was the leader of the Toads and has an incomparably greedy heart. It has formidable defensive power and ability to manipulate the ground. After

the Toads had been destroyed by the Moon God clan, the Ancient Toad King was banished to this prison, and since being thrown here, it has never been killed.

Passive Ability: ???; Skills: ???; Ultimate Skill: ???; Weaknesses: ???

An Ancient Beast, he had encountered an Ancient Beast yet again!!

And it was similar to Ling Chen's guess, it was a huge toad!

Thumpthumpthumpthumpthump!

The Ancient Toad King leapt forwards by at least several metres at a time. With the sound of it hitting the ground getting closer and closer, Ling Chen couldn't help but feel anxious. However, this time, there was no warning as he felt a pressure moving towards him in the air. He quickly raised his head and stared at the monster entering his field of view. He could also see a pair of claws that were bigger than he was; the dark green claws were covered in bumps of various sizes, and was a terrifying sight. Along with the claws, a huge ugly body entered Ling Chen's field of view, and its breath flooded the area with a foul smell; the body reflected a cold light, casting fear on those who looked.

Ling Chen raised his right hand, and cast Moon Shadow with the Lunar Scourge. While facing Ancient Beasts that he was unable to fight, the Lunar Scourge's two big diversion skills became a

significant advantage in keeping alive. The body of the Ancient Toad King froze in midair, and taking advantage of the time bought with Moon Shadow, Ling Chen started rapidly running away. While doing so, he managed to get a good look at the giant toad...

It was tens of metres long, wide and tall.

But its shape, and its cry, made Ling Chen think about when he first entered Mystic Moon, one of the most dangerous opponents he fought at the time—the Giant Greedy Toad!

Chapter 261 - Xiao Feng Chen (2)

In the Lunar Sky Hell, Ling Chen really faced danger at every step, and had to take every step with utmost care. First it was NineFang, then the Volcanic Desolation Beast, and when he finally had some time to catch his breath, he encountered the Ancient Toad King!

This was truly a very scary world.

Thump!!

The effect of Moon Shadow had ended and the huge body of the Ancient Toad King landed on the ground heavily, causing the ground to tremble. Ling Chen had already escaped by dozens of meters. After he rushed off, he could hear the thumping sound behind him getting closer and closer.

The movement speed of the Ancient Toad King was not the fastest amongst other monsters in the same tier, but it was an Ancient Beast after all, so its speed was actually comparable to Ling Chen's. The few dozens of metres of distance was closed in an instant. Then, the Ancient Toad King suddenly jumped up high, reaching more than 30m into the air, but it didn't fall onto Ling Chen, but instead landed heavily 10m behind Ling Chen's position.

Bang!!!

Ling Chen was shaken, and he fell onto the ground.

“Ding… due to the effect of the Ancient Toad King’s “Great Earth Storm”, you are ‘dizzy’ and ‘stunned’ for at least 5 seconds.”

Ling Chen’s brain had blanked out and couldn’t process what the notification was, but he knew he had been stunned. For the effect of dizziness, his greatly strengthened mental energy was a big help; an effect that should have affected him for at least 5 seconds took him only 2 seconds to recover from. As he regained consciousness, his vision started to be restored, and he could see that the Ancient Toad King was above his body, less than 5 metres away!

Even though he had recovered from the dizziness, he had not actually recovered from the stun, so even though Ling Chen wanted to immediately escape, he couldn’t compel his body to move. Moreover, even under normal conditions, even if his speed was doubled, he would be unable to move out of the way quickly enough to escape the Ancient Toad King.

Alas, with these kinds of abilities in a scary place such as this one, his strength was like an ant; no matter how much he struggled, death was inevitable.

Having no place to go, Ling Chen could only close his eyes, but he felt a certain peace. After all, he had faced beasts that were of Heaven End’s grade. Being able to escape 3 of these monsters for such a long time, was already a pretty big deal.

Coming to this place, even though it was forced by the Fairies, he only had himself to blame. Moreover, the Fairy Clan didn’t force

him to use the transportation channel; he chose to do that himself. Coming here and hearing the announcement made him scared but also excited. And when faced with the terrors of this place, the stimulation was definitely exciting but in the end he was unable to fight and could only face his death.

Bang!!!

The Ancient Toad King fell, making a huge noise. But it was just a noise, and that noise seemed like it was far away when it reached Ling Chen's ears, with the accompaniment of a howling roar. His body did not have the sensation of being hit, but it was more like he was picked up, and carried off at an astonishing speed.

Ling Chen opened his eyes, and realized his body was being transported quickly by something. He turned his head and was surprised to see the figure of a small person!

It was definitely the figure of a person! And the thing that was holding onto him, was definitely a hand!

A person!? How can this place have people?

The wind howling by his ears told Ling Chen how fast he was going, and this person, with one arm holding onto him, could still travel at this terrifying speed! This speed was that of a race car in real life; how could it possibly be a person?!

Moreover this person, saved him from the Ancient Toad King

from before.

This person...

Ling Chen wanted to ask something loudly, but was traveling too quickly and couldn't speak when he opened his mouth. Who knew how long it was before the howling in his ears died down, and Ling Chen could get a breath of air, and feel his whole body relax. The person that was holding onto him immediately threw him onto the ground with a "peng". Ling Chen fell heavily but quickly stabilized, and got up holding one hand against the wall, looking at the person who just rescued him.

It was really a person!

Small in stature, thin, with messy patches of grey hair and beard on his head and face. He was covered in raggedy clothes. His whole body, including his face was covered in greasy dirt, like he had just climbed out of a swamp, and he was also letting off a foul odour. With dirt covering his entire face, leaving only the eyes recognizable, but in this moment, these eyes were letting off a sense of excitement... like a wolf that was eyeing off a fat sheep.

But meeting this person, Ling Chen was even more excited, as he had just saved his life. Even though he was unable to see what he looked like clearly, he could recognize that this was a relatively old person. He took a step forward and was about to say something when the old man suddenly rushed him first, yelling like a musket going off.

“Hey, boy, you dare provoke that smelly toad, do you not want to live? Good thing you met me! Tch, little ol’ me has been here for so many years, and I’ve finally bumped into another human. All these years I’ve been here incredibly alone and bored. Oh right, boy, you seem young, and you also aren’t emitting any evil auras, and your strength is trash even amongst trash, how did you end up here? Unless you suffered the same fate as I did after you offended that three bitches from the Moon God Clan?”

Looking at his speed from before, it definitely showed that this old man’s actual strength was actually terrifying. But his speech and stance did not reflect the status of his power; he had crooked teeth and danced for joy, his eyes moving left and right while looking at Ling Chen. When he said his last sentence, he unexpectedly shouted “three bitches from the Moon God clan”. This old man definitely looked... insane.

“Little master, be careful of this person! There aren’t many humans who have been sealed into this place, but each one of them are definitely ferocious and not the friendly kind. This person seems to have been here a long time and has not died, so his strength is to be feared. Moreover, the mental toll that this place has, even on someone with formidable mental fortitude, would also cause their mind to eventually collapse. Given the words and actions of this person, it’s possible that he has already lost his mind. And a person who has lost his mind is capable of anything.” Qi Yue reminded.

Ling Chen nodded, and opened his mouth: “Old man, thanks for saving me...”

“What? Old man!” hearing what Ling Chen had called him, the old man jumped around like a monkey, and scolded, “You’re the old man! Your whole family are old men! Do I really look that old! Huh!!”

Ling Chen just grinned and took it, this old man, must really be insane. It’s no wonder, staying in a place like this for so long, there was no way to maintain mental balance. He just said politely, “What should I call you then?”

The old man curled his lip in disdain, “Older brother of course, brother got it! Younger brother is good too. Do not call me old man again, or I’ll curse you to live a life as an old man! Young people these days, no manners and don’t even know convention. Come on, call me brother!”

Seeing that this old man was mentally unstable, he felt sorry for him. After all he had saved his life, so he endured it. He braced himself and called out, “Brother!”

“Yeah! That’s the way.” the old man nodded with contentment, “Kid, you didn’t tell me, how did you end up here? No matter how I look, you don’t seem the type to get thrown in here. Tutut, but your complexion is so fair, and your face is so handsome and clear! I know, it must be that those three bitches from the Moon God Clan caught you hundreds of times to ‘satisfy’ themselves and were afraid that you would leak information about them so they threw you in here?”

Ling Chen really wanted to spit in this man’s face.

“It was like this, I accidentally entered a transportation channel and was transmitted here; I was not thrown in here by the Moon God clan.” Ling Chen said truthfully.

“What?” the old man jumped up again, looked at him curiously, “You were casually transmitted to this damned place? Is your judgment that bad! Did your ancestors not pass you information about this place? You should have known about this damned place from a young age! Let me tell you, this is the most dangerous place in the world. In the many years I’ve been here, so many people have entered, but I’m the only one still alive. The monsters in here I may not be able to defeat, but if I want to escape, no one can catch me. Owell, no point in talking about this; even if you want to leave, you can’t. Hmm, now that I look at you, you look like a decent fellow. Relax, its very unusual for a person to come in, so I will definitely protect you. Hey, don’t look at me like I’m a god. Back then, the people who worshipped me were countless, I don’t need another one.”

Ling Chen endured, and endured and endured again, making himself keep a calm expression, and then asking, “Old... der brother, have you been here for a long time?”

“You’re lucky, boy, asking a good question like this. Till today, I’ve been here for exactly one thousand years.” The old man said with his crooked mouth

One thousand years? Ling Chen’s heart skipped a beat. He had been sealed in here for one thousand years and still wasn’t dead. This person was not just the average kind of strong. A normal

person, even if they lived in a peaceful world, didn’t live past 100 years old.

Chapter 262 - Xiao Feng Chen (3)

“Come, boy, quickly tell me stories about the outside. What has the Forgotten Continent become? Have there been any incredible beauties or terrifyingly ugly people? Has the Forgotten City been smited by that daring guy? Has that scaredy-cat from the Night Demon Clan come out yet? Are those three bitches from the Moon God Clan still alive? Have they become old and ugly, smelling like shit? Have they been raped by any person or beast... oh wait, if they’re old and ugly, not even toads would look at them, let alone men. Speaking of which, are you sure you didn’t get sent here by those smelly goddesses?”

Ling Chen: ┐(ˍ _ ˎ)┌ (I must endure.~~~)

The old man pulled Ling Chen to sit down next to him, throwing question after question, giving Ling Chen no time to respond. Moreover, it was not like Ling Chen could answer these questions anyway. He had never been to the Forgotten City; the Night Demon Clan was something he had heard about when he was in the Novice Village, and in regards to the three Moon Goddesses, they were “gods”, he had no way to come into contact with them. So even after listening to the old man ramble for ages, he still didn’t know what to say.

“Speak, boy!” The old man started to become impatient, whacking Ling Chen on the back.

“All these questions you’ve asked, I don’t know how to answer” Ling Chen said helplessly.

“Heyheyheyhey!” the old man jumped up, “Boy! I saved your life, and you aren’t willing to tell me anything? Humph! I get it, you want to keep the secrets.” The old man said with disdain, “The hell you keeping secrets for, huh?! Do you know where you are right now? I’m telling you, now that you’re here there is no way in all of eternity that you’re leaving. You’d be dreaming to even find someone to tell these things to! What’s stopping you from telling me? See now that I’m your brother, after all these years of having no one to talk to, I’m willing to tell you anything, even what colour underwear my wife likes to wear… wait, I don’t think I have a wife.”

Ling Chen was getting a headache, saying with the sincerest tone possible, “It’s not that I want to keep secrets, but the questions you’re asking, I really don’t know the answers. I haven’t been to the Forgotten City, and I’ve never come into contact with the three Moon Goddesses before.”

“Tsktsktsk, boy, do you think you can get a lie past big brother?” The old man didn’t believe him, then rolling his eyes, suddenly his face broke into a wide smile as he said, “Hehehehe, boy, you’ve forced my hand, I didn’t want to do this… but you won’t tell me anything, I’ll have to force you to.”

The voice of the man suddenly changed, and on his face was an unwavering smile, as he spoke, he started rubbing 2 of his fingers together expertly, this action made Ling Chen worried, and asked, wide eyed, “What are you doing? I really don’t know about any of those things.”

“It doesn’t matter, seeing as you’ll be telling me everything soon,

hehehehe, check out my... [Deity Curse]!

After he spoke, the old man grinned, his mouth slightly moving as he muttered something and a glint appeared in his eyes.

Most people would have been unable to see the glint in the old man's eyes, and even if they looked really carefully for it, they would not notice it. However, Ling Chen could see it very clearly, and it was because of this flash, that he felt a little dizzy... but this feeling, he was all too familiar with.

Back when he was in "Heaven", he would receive terrifying shocks and stimulations to his consciousness, which were far greater than the one he was currently experiencing. And so, when he felt this dizziness he instantly became more vigilant, and with his training, he was able to use his mental energy to shake off this feeling and regain his sharp-mindedness.

The time during which he felt the dizziness was brief, less than 1/10 of a second. Other than that, nothing else happened to him. He stared at the old man, and realized that his smile was getting wider and wider. He looked at the old man suspiciously, asking, "What are you trying to do? I told you I really don't know anything! I had only arrived at Mystic Moon less than a month ago."

"Ah!!"

When Ling Chen said these words, it generated an exaggerated reaction from the old man; it was like he had been pricked by a needle as he jumped back, and stared at him in disbelief, "You you

you you you you, how can you speak normally? I clearly just used my Deity Curse!”

“What curse?” Ling Chen was speechless as he stared at this crazy old man. Deity Curse? This was a kind of name only a fool would think of.

The old man pulled at his hair, and then muttered aloud, “Impossible, this is impossible!! Could it be that it has been too many years? No, no, even if I forget how eat and take a dump, there is no way I would forget this. Could it be that this kid... no way! This kid can’t even kill a big chicken, how could his mental energy be stronger than mine; the problem definitely didn’t come from there.”

The old man raised his head, and stared at him again, saying, “Utter Despair Curse!”

The old man’s eyes flashed once again, and at the same time, Ling Chen felt that same dizziness again. However, like before, just as quickly as it appeared, Ling Chen’s formidable mental energy extinguished it, so it didn’t affect him at all. It all happened so quickly that he didn’t even realise what had happened.

“I asked, what are you trying to do?” Ling Chen was getting impatient. The old man’s eyes widened even further in shock.

“This is absolutely impossible! There’s definitely something wrong!” the old man was off talking to himself again. He then stared at Ling Chen again, saying more weird phrases.

“Total Recklessness Curse!”

“Complete Cold-heartedness Curse!”

“Wailing and Howling Curse!”

“Scaredy Cat Curse!”

…

To Ling Chen, this old man was clearly mentally deranged. He was jumping up and down like a monkey, staring straight at him, and calling out phrases that made no sense. After yelling out 10 or so of these phrases, Ling Chen could only stare helplessly at his insanity. However, there actually was something affecting his consciousness, but this effect was so short that it didn’t have any lasting effect on him.

He wondered why he was getting short spells of dizziness-could it be that there was not enough oxygen in the air in this place?

“Hahahaha, one more time… Deity Curse!” the old man’s voice was getting hoarse, as he shouted out the phrase that he shouted the first time. Ling Chen started to feel somewhat sorry for the old man. Being able to survive in this place for a millennium, he must have been some famous person in the Forgotten Continent in the past. What Qi Yue said was right though-no matter who ended up here, they would end up changing from the person they once were.

The slight dizziness came back once more, but Ling Chen withstood the feeling with his mental energy and he shook his head and cleared his mind. At this moment, the old man suddenly stood still, his limbs pointing in different directions, just staring at him.

The old man had finally quietened down, but this seemed even more strange to Ling Chen. He took a step forwards, and asked tentatively, “What happened? Are you okay?”

After he finished speaking, he saw the old man’s eyes light up, and start filling up with tears! That’s right, he had started tearing up, and looking at the expression on his face, these were tears because he was incredibly moved, like someone finding their long lost son.

The old man moved in a flash and appeared before Ling Chen, putting his hands before Ling Chen, kneeling before him and with his eyes filled with tears he looked at Ling Chen. Then...

“Ah!!” it looked like the old man was looking at a god, and he emotionally said, “I never thought that I would be able to meet you in such a hopeless place. You are like a dazzling ray of light in this boundless darkness that shines through my whole body, warming my soul. You look like a bright moon in the boundless night sky, dimming all the stars with your light. You are like a flower on sheep dump, blooming proudly, to rule over the world. Your appearance, your sound, your frown, your smile is noble, your fart makes the air ten thousand miles around you sweet. To be able to run into you in such a place, I am most honoured, this life is

fulfilled, even if I were to die now, it would be okay. Wuuu wuuu wuuu... I really.. am so moved, so so moved...”

The moved old man started to cry, and his nose started running as he cried. His whole body was filled with emotion as his tears fell onto Ling Chen’s shoes. Ling Chen was sweating, and was considering whether he should turn and run, but at the same time he said in his mind, “Qi Yue, you were right, this guy is crazy. Should I get away from him?”

Qi Yue: “...”

“Qi Yue? Can you not give me an opinion? This man is obviously very strong-even though he just saved me, if he went crazy and wanted to kill me, with his speed, even if I had a 100 lives I’d never escape.” After waiting what seemed like half a day for Qi Yue to respond, Ling Chen spoke again.

“Ah! Your nobility makes me feel inferior, your dignity crushes my heart, the teeth from your mouth at the most beautiful pearls in the world, the mud of your shoe is so magnificent, worth more than precious metals by thousands of times...”

And in the moment Ling Chen was reaching his limit, Qi Yue finally spoke, and said something strange, “This person isn’t crazy.”

“Isn’t crazy? Isn’t this crazy?”

“He isn’t crazy. Right now, he’s affected by his own ‘Feng Chen Curse’ as it was reflected.” Qi Yue replied.

“Feng Chen Curse? Reflected? What does this mean?” Ling Chen asked with surprise.

“Because, little master, your mental energy is too strong, so his Feng Chen Curse doesn’t affect you. Moreover, his ‘Deity Curse was reflected by your superior mental energy. Right now he isn’t crazy, but under the effects of the ‘Deity Curse’.” Qi Yue spoke calmly, but Ling Chen could still detect a sense of shock in her voice.

“I never thought that the Feng Chen Curses, which even the Moon God Clan were wary of and caused countless experts to run in fear still existed in this world.”

Chapter 263 - The Legendary Feng Chen Murdering Heart Curses

“Feng Chen Curses? What was that? Could it be that this old man’s yelling from before were... ‘curses’?” Ling Chen said in surprise. Seeing the old man still kneeling there, mumbling to himself, Ling Chen could not help but feel bewildered.

Qi Yue began to explain, “Feng Chen Murdering Heart Curses, or Feng Chen Curses in short, are a mysterious type of curse that can truly ‘murder’ one’s heart. The Feng Chen Murdering Heart Curses originated from the ancient ‘Feng Chen Sect’, and its founder was the infamous ‘Hatred Sage’ of the Three Sages of the Night Demon Clan. In every generation, there is only one successor to the Feng Chen Sect, and the Feng Chen Curses are the sect’s primary ability. The successors of the Feng Chen Sect usually have very weak fighting power, but even the most powerful beings in the Forgotten Continent are fearful of the Feng Chen Sect successors. Back then, the Feng Chen Sect had two abilities that everyone knew of, one of which were the ‘Feng Chen Murdering Heart Curses’. The Feng Chen Curses use one’s spirit to attack and overpower another person’s spirit. However, they are different to normal mind control, spirit control and puppeteering skills-once a Feng Chen Curse is used, the target will be completely willing to do inconceivable things. Surely little master understands how terrifying these curses are now. You see, this old man’s Feng Chen Curse was countered by you, so he is the one being affected by it instead. The curse he just tried to use on you is called the ‘Deity Curse’. If it worked on you, you’d be on your knees, thinking that you were worshipping some sort of god.”

Ling Chen: “……”

Holy shit, you've got to be kidding, right? If he did something like what the old man was doing now, he probably wouldn't have the dignity to live anymore. Ling Chen shuddered, and suddenly understood why Qi Yue said that even the most powerful beings are fearful of those from the Feng Chen Sect. The more powerful one was, the more famous they were bound to be. They could accept being defeated, or even killed, but if they were to do something so shameful in front of others...

"What's even more terrifying is that normal spirit attacks consume an incredibly great amount of spirit, making it impossible to use them more than a few times in a row. However, Feng Chen Curses only expend a tiny bit of spirit each use. The consumption rate is so low... that the closest comparison would be like how much energy a person spends breathing."

Qi Yue continued to recite all that she knew about the Feng Chen Sect, "The people of the Feng Chen Sect have always acted in an unrestrained way, and don't care about any rules or laws. They've never joined any factions, but instead like to float around carefree and unfettered, doing whatever they want. [TLN: From the context in Chinese here, 'Feng Chen' pretty much means 'carefree', 'relaxed', etc (kinda like Xiao Yao)]. People of the Feng Chen Sect have never been much of fighters, but no one has ever dared to become enemies with the Feng Chen Sect-even though, at most, there are only two people in the Sect at any given time. Moreover, the reason that there is only one successor per generation is not because they wanted to restrict the growth of the sect, but rather because it's simply too rare to find someone who's qualified. One of the requirements is for the person to have an incredibly strong spirit-only one out of 10,000,000 or even 100,000,000 might be able to fulfil such a requirement. As such, whenever a successor is

found, it is always a momentous occasion for the Feng Chen Sect. After all, every generation faces the possibility of not being able to find a successor, resulting in the Feng Chen Sect disappearing forever."

Qi Yue's words caused Ling Chen to become incredibly curious about this Feng Chen Sect, "So this old man, he's from the Feng Chen Sect..."

"That's right. Before, he was acting completely crazy, but that's how most people of the Feng Chen Sect are. They do whatever they want, and do not restrain themselves or hide anything. Little master, you should ask him about his background, as well as why he was sealed here. After getting hit by the 'Deity Curse', he sees you as a god, so he'll answer any question you ask."

"Oh!" Ling Chen nodded, then walked forwards and tentatively asked... "You... what's your name?"

"I'm called Xiao... Feng... Chen... 'Xiao' meaning 'Xiao', 'Feng' meaning 'Feng' and 'Chen' meaning 'Chen'. [TLN: The original joke in Chinese is way better, but language barriers make it impossible to translate and keep it funny]. I'm the only person in the Feng Chen Sect at the moment." Hearing the question from Ling Chen, the old man immediately replied earnestly, as if afraid that he would upset this deity.

Xiao Feng Chen... Feng Chen Sect! It seemed that Qi Yue was right in saying that this old man was from the Feng Chen Sect!

Ling Chen continued to ask, “Why were you locked up in here?”

“I was put in here because…”

Just as Xiao Feng Chen was halfway through his sentence, he suddenly stopped speaking, and his tears also stopped flowing. His expression immediately changed, and stood up with a ‘swish’, looking at Ling Chen with incredibly wide eyes.

“Crap, it seems that the Deity Curse’s effects have worn off.” Qi Yue said.

“Y-y-y-y-y-you…” Xiao Feng Chen pointed at Ling Chen, his expression extremely comical. Ling Chen quickly took two steps back… the old man had done something so shameful in front of him-perhaps he was so ashamed that he would resort to killing Ling Chen.

After being frozen like that for a few seconds, Ling Chen saw Xiao Feng Chen swallow a big mouthful of saliva as he blurted out, “W-w-w-w-what’s your name??”

“Ling Tian!” Ling Chen replied.

Woosh!!

A gust of wind blew by, and Xiao Feng Chen was suddenly in front of him. Two incredibly dirty hands clasped on to Ling Chen’s clothes, and before Ling Chen could react, the old man’s face was

only about 20 centimetres away from his own. At such a close distance, Ling Chen could clearly see the tears running down the old man's face.

"The heavens are smiling on me! The heavens are smiling on me!" Still clutching on to Ling Chen, the old man began to roar out in joy, covering Ling Chen with spit. By now, his face was covered with his tears, "1,700 years! A whole 1,700 years! I've walked across the entire Forgotten Continent, dreaming that I'd find my successor... before finding a successor, I couldn't die even if I wanted to-even though I was trapped in this damn place, I didn't dare to die-otherwise, my Feng Chen Sect would come to ruins because of me. But now... look what I've found! I've found a little monster who can counter my Deity Curse!!"

Ling Chen was almost about to pass out from the old man's stench. However, the old man was gripping his clothes way too tightly, so Ling Chen could only curse inwardly.

After yelling out, Xiao Feng Chen looked him in the eyes, excitedly asking, "Boy! Be my disciple! If you become my disciple, I'll let you have the most powerful ability in the whole world! When the time comes, no matter if you are having affairs, sexually harassing young girls, seducing MILFs, you'll always be successful! Quick, accept me as your master, otherwise you'll lose this opportunity! Quick, quick quick!"

"This, I..." Ling Chen was completely caught off-guard by the old man's reaction.

"What? You don't want to? Oh, right, right, with such a strong

spirit, how could you accept me as your master? Alright... I'll be your disciple!" Xiao Feng Chen crashed down on his knees and kowtowed towards Ling Chen, "As long as you become the successor to the Feng Chen Sect, let alone disciple, I'd even be your grand-disciple (disciple's disciple)!!"

The hell!

Ling Chen quickly pulled him up-Xiao Feng Chen was simply inconceivable. While pulling him up, Ling Chen quickly said, "That wasn't what I meant. It's just that..."

"You should ask him first why he was locked up in here." Qi Yue reminded him.

Ling Chen nodded, and changed the topic, "It's just that I just met you, and it's the first time I've heard of this 'Feng Chen Sect'. It's impossible for me to just accept you as my master so suddenly."

Xiao Feng Chen stared at him, then knocked on his own head, "Ah, right! Right, right, right, right! I was so excited that I forgot about all that. Haha, boy, no... Ling Tian... bro... what I said was true. If you accept me as your master, and inherit the power from the Feng Chen Sect, with your terrifying spirit, in less than 30 years... no, 5 years... you'll be able to dominate the entire Forgotten Continent. Even those three bitches from the Moon God Clan would have to tread carefully around you! No expert, whether they're gods, demons, beasts, would amount to anything before you."

“Really?” Ling Chen smirked, “Well if it’s so powerful, then why would you be locked in such a place?”

“Goddamn!” Hearing that Ling Chen was undermining the Feng Chen Sect, Xiao Feng Chen became enraged. He stared at Ling Chen, “That was because of an accident! An accident! Even now, I still feel angry when I think back to that incident. If I had been a little more careful, and not laughed so hard that I was in stitches, I definitely wouldn’t have been imprisoned by those three bitches!”

Laughed so hard… that he was in stitches? Ling Chen’s facial muscles tightened… what sort of excuse was that?!

“Back then, about 1,000 years ago, those three from the Moon God Clan found me and said that I had an orb that didn’t belong to me, and told me to give it to them. Psht, they think they can just fart a few times and I’ll just give them whatever they want? So since I was pretty unhappy about that, I used a ‘Lovey Lovey Curse’ on the moon goddesses called ‘Order’ and ‘Fate’, and then… aha… ha… ahahahahah….”

As if he could see the scene in front of him, Xiao Feng Chen began to laugh uproariously, laughing so hard that he bent over and leaned back over and over again. He suddenly stopped laughing, and continued talking in a serious tone, “Yep, that’s how I laughed back then. I was laughing so hard that I wasn’t even breathing, and choked. The one called ‘Freedom’ used something to restrain me, and after the other two recovered, they threw me in here. If it wasn’t because I was laughing so hard, how could those three even hope to catch me?!”

Chapter 264 - Profession Choice

This sort of story seemed quite unbelievable.

“Lovey Lovey Curse?” Ling Chen muttered. To be able to cause the moon goddesses to be so furious as to throw him into this place, the “Lovey Lovey Curse” must be incredibly terrifying.

“Uh,” Xiao Feng Chen rubbed his nose, “As long as you join the Feng Chen Sect, and learn the Feng Chen Curses, you’ll understand. When the time comes, you can mess with whomever you want!” Xiao Feng Chen then pitifully looked at Ling Chen, “Ling Tian bro, please join my Feng Chen Sect. I swear on my handsomeness that if you join my Feng Chen Sect, you’ll be the unrivalled in the whole Forgotten Continent!”

“Well…”

“Little master! Quickly agree! He’s not exaggerating at all. Wherever people of the Feng Chen Sect go, peerless experts all quickly flee-this is a completely true saying. There are countless people who want to learn the Feng Chen Curses, but are not qualified. However, with little master’s powerful spirit, learning the Feng Chen Curses will be extremely easy! Plus, apart from the rule that they must find a successor before they die, the people of the Feng Chen Sect are not restrained by any rules; whether they use their powers for good or evil does not matter. There are not any obligations, tasks or quests that you have to complete, so there are absolutely no downsides to you agreeing to his request. Quickly agree to him, little master!” Qi Yue hurriedly nagged Ling Chen inside his mind.

Qi Yue was very clear as to what sort of existence the Feng Chen Sect was-she was simply in awe of Ling Chen's luck. She had thought that the Feng Chen Sect had disappeared over the ages, but who would have thought there was a sect member right here in the Lunar Sky Hell!

Although it was impossible to leave here, it would still be good for him to learn the Feng Chen Curses.

Since Qi Yue seemed so eager for him to accept, Ling Chen had no reason to reject this offer. Moreover, looking at the old man in front of him, Ling Chen was certain that he would not give up until Ling Chen gave in. As such, Ling Chen nodded, "Alright, since you're so earnest, and you saved me, I'll join your Feng Chen Sect."

"R-really!!??"

Xiao Feng Chen's eyes shone, and his spit flew out as he yelled out. If Ling Chen had not dodged in time, his entire face would have been covered in spit again. Xiao Feng Chen jumped up and down excitedly like a child as he shouted, "Yahoo! Awesome, awesome! My Feng Chen Sect... finally has a successor! I can finally die in peace! Ahahaha, I've searched for 1,700 years! 1,700 years!! Haha... haha... hahahaha!!!"

Xiao Feng Chen was so overjoyed that he was speechless, and could only alternate between laughing and crying. His emotions were completely genuine, and his tears were definitely real. Although the sentence "I can finally die in peace" sounded almost

comical, it made Ling Chen feel a bit uncomfortable inside. After all, Xiao Feng Chen had begged him to learn this set of overpowered skills, and only Ling Chen had benefitted.

Come to think of it, ever since Xiao Hui had joined him, he had been incredibly lucky… well, apart from landing in Lunar Sky Hell.

After Xiao Feng Chen regained his composure, he wiped away his tears, then walked over, “Ling Tian, to be able to find a successor was my greatest wish, and now that I’ve completed that, I have no regrets. Even though I can never leave here, I’ve found a successor. As for the next successor, haha, that’s your problem. Now, let me get rid of the crap profession you have right now.”

“Cancel my profession?” Ling Chen was shocked, “What do you mean?”

“What do I mean?” Xiao Feng Chen grinned, “Every person can only have one profession-don’t you know this? If you have another profession, you can’t have the Feng Chen Sect profession, so quickly let me get rid of that profession for you. In front of the Feng Chen Sect’s power, everything else is rubbish.”

“So if I don’t cancel my current profession, I can’t learn the Feng Chen Curses?” Ling Chen asked.

“Of course. Surely you can’t be so dumb that you can’t even understand the basics.”

Ling Chen's expression changed as he frowned... his current profession came from the strongest War God in the Forgotten Continent a thousand years ago-it wasn't something that he could easily give up. Back then, he had survived many dangers to finally obtain this profession, and had named it after himself. Over all this time, he had invested a great amount of time and SP, gradually strengthening this profession.

Moreover, right now, although this War God's profession was still in its weakest stage, it was still incredibly powerful. It was many, many times more powerful than normal professions, and its potential was unlimited.

He definitely couldn't accept just giving up this profession so easily.

"Is it true that the Feng Chen Sect's profession doesn't have any actual battle power?" Remembering Qi Yue's introduction to the Feng Chen Sect, Ling Chen asked Xiao Feng Chen in a serious tone.

"It's not that it's non-existent, but that it's very weak. I've cultivated for almost 2,000 years, and I've only had a bit of achievements in actual fighting. I'm not going to teach you because it's pretty much useless." Xiao Feng Chen casually replied.

"Oh, in that case, I take back what I said before. I'm not joining the Feng Chen Sect." Ling Chen directly said.

"What!?" Xiao Feng Chen couldn't believe what he was hearing. He spluttered, "Y-y-y-y-you..."

“Right now, I have a very strong battle profession, and I refuse to give it up. If giving up on this profession is absolutely necessary to join the Feng Chen Sect, then I’d rather not join.” Ling Chen truthfully replied. It wasn’t just an issue with his profession, but he had skills like Heaven Wind Technique, Item Manipulation Technique, Soul Sacrifice and Soul Demise which would all be completely useless if he was not of a battle profession. At the same time, Ling Chen knew exactly how powerful the War God’s profession was, but the Feng Chen Sect’s profession… he had only heard the introductions by Xiao Feng Chen and Qi Yue-there was simply too much risk involved. If he could have both, then he would be overjoyed. However, if he was forced to choose one, his decision would definitely be the Ling Tian Battle Soul.

Seeing that his ‘prey’ was about to escape, Xiao Feng Chen was so worried that he began to start jumping up and down, “Battle profession, battle profession… I’ve already told you that all battle professions are nothing compared to our Feng Chen Sect!” He gnashed his teeth, “I’ve been in the Lunar Sky Hell for 1,000 years, and there have been many humans sent here apart from me. Out of the twenty or thirty or so of them, all of them were incredibly powerful-some of the could even easily defeat that big toad from before. If it was a normal battle, I wouldn’t be able to beat a single one of those people. However, only I’m alive out of all of the humans sent here-none of them could survive even one year. So how could I survive here for 1,000 years? Because the Feng Chen Sect’s power is goddamn strong! If I was like the others and had a battle profession, I would’ve died a long time ago! You think you’re even stronger than those who can easily beat monsters of the Heaven’s End grade?”

Hearing this, Ling Chen was unable to make any rebuttals. He

curiously asked, “Are the Feng Chen Curses really that strong?”

“Hah, let me tell you though, the Feng Chen Curses only work on humans, deities, humanoid demons, humanoid beasts, Fairies and Dwarves... they are effective on humans and other types of humanoids, but not monsters or evil spirits. But do you think my Feng Chen Sect only has the Feng Chen Curses?”

Ling Chen suddenly remembered what Qi Yue had said before. The Feng Chen Sect had two abilities that everyone knew of. One was the Feng Chen Curses, and the other was...

“What’s the other ability?” Ling Chen asked.

“Running away!” Xiao Feng Chen proudly said as he patted his chest.

Ling Chen: “……”

“That’s right! Running away! Heheh, you still remember how I saved you, right? If I want to run, there’s no one under the heavens who can catch up to me! Who cares if they’re super strong-if I run and leave them in the dust, what use is their strength? That’s right, it’s because of this ability I’ve been able to survive in here for over 1,000 years! If you learn this ability, in 10 to 20 years, you’ll be able to walk around in here with no worries at all!”

Ling Chen thought back to when he was rescued by Xiao Feng

Chen-Xiao Feng Chen's speed was completely outside of his expectations, and seemed to be as fast as wind, or even lightning... it was a speed that humans shouldn't be able to achieve. Indeed, with such a speed, one would be unparalleled in running away.

However...

Unable to fight and only being able to run away... no matter how good one was at running away, in the end, it was simply just running away. The Feng Chen Curses seemed to be a form of mental attack, and should thus be used stealthily... although powerful skills that could be used secretly were indeed useful, but they simply could not match up to the thrill and exhilaration one experienced when fighting openly with their life on the line. Moreover, only with strong fighting power could he protect those he wanted to protect.

Thinking to here, Ling Chen became resolved, "Perhaps it's because our viewpoints are different, but I don't want to give up on my current profession."

"Boy, you... why are you so dumb, arghhhhh!" Seeing that Ling Chen's answer had gone from agreeing to adamantly disagreeing, Xiao Feng Chen nearly went crazy. He pulled on his hair and scratched at his face-clearly, he was very, very annoyed. Seeing Xiao Feng Chen's reaction, Ling Chen continued to talk, "Well, it's not like we can leave, so it doesn't really matter if I join or not, right?"

"What the hell are you talking about!! Can you really not understand!" Xiao Feng Chen was furious, "Boy, you've lived for 30

years at most, whereas I've lived for more than 2,000 years!! Do you think that you're wiser than me?! All battle professions are like crap in front of my Feng Chen Sect! Alright, alright, alright, let's not talk about running away. Even if I was to fight someone 100 times stronger than myself, all it would take is one "Scaredy Cat Curse" and they'd be wetting themselves, running away from me. Apart from my Feng Chen Sect, who else would be capable of such a thing! Aiyo, my bro, my dear father, my precious ancestor... let me cancel your current profession-I'll promise you anything that you definitely won't regret it!"

Chapter 265 - Evil God's Mask

In order to convince Ling Chen to join the Feng Chen Sect, Xiao Feng Chen had completely and utterly given up on his pride and dignity. But then again, with how the people from the Feng Chen Sect were, their pride and dignity didn't mean much to them anyways. Xiao Feng Chen's begging made it hard for Ling Chen to refuse... despite the fact that there was someone begging him to receive so many benefits, Ling Chen simply could not accept. He did not want to give up the Ling Tian Battle Soul no matter what.

"I'm sorry, but I really can't give up my current profession." Ling Chen said as he looked at the pitiful Xiao Feng Chen.

"Arghhhh! How many times do I have to say it for you to understand?! With your current profession, how long do you think you could survive in here? Y-y-y-y-you... if you inherit my Feng Chen Sect's power, you won't have to worry at all about surviving in here!" Xiao Feng Chen shouted. He had decided that no matter what, he would convince this young man to join the Feng Chen Sect. Otherwise, he would not be able to rest in peace. After searching for so long, he definitely wouldn't let this potential successor run off. "Alright, even if you don't appreciate the power of my Feng Chen Sect, then at least fulfil this old man's final will. I mean, we're stuck in here forever, anyways, so it's pointless to keep that profession."

Ling Chen shook his head, "No, I'll definitely escape from here. Where there's a will, there's a way-someday, I'll definitely find a way out."

“Chehhhh~~~,” Xiao Feng Chen curled his lips, “This is a place that the Moon God Clan seals the worst monsters and spirits; ones that are more powerful than you by more than 10,000 times. If none of them could escape, what makes you think that you can escape? But I have to admit you’re right-usually where there’s a will, there’s a way. However, in this situation, you don’t just need ‘a will’; you need something else as well-something that even the Lunar Sky Hell cannot seal. However, that sort of thing would never appear in here, so it’s impossible to leave.”

“Something that the Lunar Sky Hell can’t seal? What is it?” Ling Chen walked forwards and hurriedly asked.

Xiao Feng Chen smirked, “You’re not part of my Feng Chen Sect, so why should I tell you? Plus, even if I tell you, there’s no use at all-do you think it’s something so ordinary that even you would have it? Aiyo, just have pity on this poor old man and just join the freakin’ Feng Chen Sect!”

“Qi Yue, do you know what the ‘something that even the Lunar Sky Hell can’t seal’ is?” Ling Chen asked in his mind.

Qi Yue thought for a while, but could only respond in the negative, “I have no idea. For something like this to exist that even I don’t know about, it must be incredibly rare.”

“How about… I’ll be your disciple? Or your peer? As long as you join the Feng Chen Sect, I’ll even be your son if you want me to!!”

After begging for such a long time, and being rejected again and

again, the old man's patience seemed to be wearing thin. Xiao Feng Chen clutched on to Ling Chen's clothing and furiously shook him, nearly dislocating many bones. Ling Chen expended much effort on getting him off, and tried to explain, "It's not that I don't want to join, it's just that..."

"It's just that? It's just that what?! My Feng Chen Sect is the best profession in the world! Even though the Feng Chen Sect has disappeared from the Forgotten Continent for a thousand years or so, but if you go out and mention the Feng Chen Sect, I'll guarantee you that there are still people who remember. Why? Because my Feng Chen Sect's goddamn strong! There were so many people hundreds and thousands of times stronger than you begging to become my disciple, but I just wouldn't accept them-so why are you so adamant on refusing?? Alright, what's it going to take to convince you? As long as you agree, I'll agree to any of your requests... how about this, if you join, I'll give everything I have on me to you. Ah, that's right, this is the most valuable treasure of the Feng Chen Sect that the Founder, the 'Hatred Sage' of the Three Sages of the Night Demon Clan, left behind: the Evil God's Mask. This is something even more valuable than my life! If you join, then this Evil God's Mask will be yours!!"

While talking, Xiao Feng Chen somehow pulled out an object shining with golden light. As soon as he saw it, Ling Chen felt that his gaze was stuck to it, and he was unable to pull his eyes away from it.

It was a mask that emanated a noble, yet somewhat evil, dark golden light. It was incredibly large, and could cover both the front, as well as sides of one's face. There were only two holes on the mask for the wearer's eyes to look through. There were many

complicated patterns on the surface of the mask, and there were many golden spikes of differing lengths and shapes stuck into it. Near the top of the mask, on both the left and right sides, were two spikes like golden lightning, about half a metre long, pointing backwards.

The mask looked incredibly strange and terrifying, but it was even more so dominating and overbearing!

“Evil God’s Mask!!” Ling Chen heard Qi Yue gasp in shock.

“How about it? This mask is pretty awesome, eh?” Xiao Feng Chen was very satisfied with Ling Chen’s reaction. He immediately began to promote the mask like an experienced salesperson, “This mask is the most valuable treasure of my Feng Chen Sect. Although it’s a mask, but it’s a Heaven’s End grade mask! That’s right, a Heaven’s End grade mask!! It’s not that hard to find Heaven’s End grade equipment in the Forgotten Continent, but to my knowledge, this is the only Heaven’s End grade mask! This is the strongest mask in the world, and even though it’s Heaven’s End grade, it’s even more valuable than some Mysterious God grade equipment! Look at this mask… look at how cool it is. Do you know how many men would get jealous over seeing you wear this mask? What’s more, it can save your life! Heheh, with this mask, as well as my Feng Chen Sect’s ability in running away, it’ll be pretty much impossible to kill you. Back then, there were many, many experts who took great risks to steal this mask from us, but none of them were able to succeed. So? So? Do you… want to join our Feng Chen Sect? If you do, this amazing, life-saving, treasure will belong to you!”

This mask, as well as Xiao Feng Chen's introduction to it, caused Ling Chen to be quite shocked.

Currently, Ling Chen had three Celestial grade equipment: Soaring Cloud Spear, Zephyr Blade and the Great Ravager. To be able to acquire so many Celestial grade equipment in the early stages of the game was already ridiculous, and caused a great commotion among the player base. However, even he did not expect that he would have the chance to acquire a Heaven's End grade equipment so early on. Heaven's End grade equipment were one grade higher than Celestial grade equipment, but their value and power were much, much greater. Such equipment would only appear in the late stages of the game, and even if an extremely ordinary player acquired a Heaven's End grade equipment, they would be able to dominate almost all other players. Although Celestial grade equipment were strong, but they were not as game-breaking as Heaven's End grade equipment!

Moreover, this wasn't any regular piece of equipment, but a mask! Masks were generally used to protect a player's identity, and were free in games. However, none of the masks Ling Chen had ever seen had bonus stats or effects. If this mask really did have special stats or effects, Ling Chen would have one more piece of equipment than every other player! Just like Xiao Feng Chen said, although this was a Heaven's End grade mask, it was worth much more than normal Mysterious God grade equipment.

Moreover, this Heaven's End grade mask was right in front of him. As long as he nodded his head, this incredible mask would belong to him, and he would have an extremely powerful profession.

With this sort of temptation, even if Ling Chen had a stone heart, his heart was still moved. To him, this mask was much more valuable than a profession that he knew very little about.

“Do you mind if I have a look at its stats first?” Ling Chen asked as he rubbed his hands together. He clearly understood how powerful Celestial grade equipment were, but this was the first time he had seen a legendary Heaven’s End grade equipment before. Seeing the dark golden light radiating out from the terrifying and overbearing mask, Ling Chen could almost feel himself start salivating.

Heaven’s End… this was a Heaven’s End grade equipment!! Moreover, wearing this mask was a thousand times more impressive than wearing that crappy tiger mask!

Seeing the light in Ling Chen’s eyes, Xiao Feng Chen saw some hope. He quickly put the Evil God’s Mask away, and said in a serious tone, “As long as you join my Feng Chen Sect, it’ll be yours. When that time comes, you can do whatever you want with it-boil it, roast it, give it to someone else, throw it away-it’ll all be up to you. What reason could you have to reject a Heaven’s End grade mask? Mm, seeing your expression, I can already tell what your answer will be. Come, come, let me get rid of that crappy profession for you!”

This mask was incredibly tempting to Ling Chen, but he was still quite unwilling to give up on his Ling Tian Battle Soul.

Ling Chen took a step back, and stood there in deep thought.

“What the hell?! You’re still not willing? Did you hit your head badly when you were young??” Seeing that even the Evil God’s Mask was not enough to convince Ling Chen, Xiao Feng Chen almost became crazy. He alternated between jumping up and down, stomping his feet and tearing at his hair, “Y-y-y-you…. I-I-I-I-I… My god! This! I’ll also give this to you! Even though I don’t know what it is, but it was because of this that those three bitches found me; it was because of this thing that I was locked up in here for 1,000 years. I’m sure that it’s something special, so I never threw it away. If you join my Feng Chen Sect, I’ll give… eh? W-what’s going on? Why’s this thingy glowing?”

Within the darkness, a gentle white light that seemed incredibly warm appeared. The light came from the object Xiao Feng Chen was holding in his right hand. It was an orb about the size of a ping pong ball. From where Ling Chen was standing, he could see that there was a mark on the orb that resembled two arcs curving towards each other with a horizontal line connecting them.

Chapter 266 - The Overpowered Pisces Orb

The shape, size and colour of the orb that Xiao Feng Chen took out were all so familiar to Ling Chen. The mark on the orb also looked especially similar to ones he had seen on other orbs...

At the same time, the Lunar Scourge on Ling Chen's right wrist began to glow. The illusion hiding the Lunar Scourge disappeared, causing the Lunar Scourge to regain its original appearance. The glow of light on the Lunar Scourge began to flash at the same frequency as the orb in Xiao Feng Chen's hand, as if they were calling out to each other.

"That's one of the Lunar Scourge's God Orbs!" Qi Yue yelled out in Ling Chen's mind. Her calling out was completely unnecessary- Ling Chen had long since concluded that this was definitely one of the Lunar Scourge's orbs! He immediately became excited... Ling Chen never expected that he would actually find one of the orbs in this sort of place!

"Quick! Little master, immediately agree to Xiao Feng Chen's request; don't let this opportunity go! Based on the mark on the orb, that orb should be the Pisces Orb! If you have the Pisces Orb, you'll be able to receive Xiao Feng Chen's profession, as well as keep the one you have now! The Pisces Orb allows one to have an extra profession!" Qi Yue quickly explained.

Have an extra profession? Ling Chen's eyes widened. Although he knew that the Lunar Scourge's Orbs were extremely powerful, but it was hard to believe that there could be such an overpowered effect. Dual-wielding was an incredibly powerful skill, but having

an extra profession... this was simply unbelievable!

Since Qi Yue had told him this, what she had just said was probably true. Ling Chen stood with his hands behind his back, so as to prevent Xiao Feng Chen from noticing the Lunar Scourge. He stepped forwards, and said to the emotional Xiao Feng Chen, “Alright, as long as you give me this orb and the Evil God’s Mask, I’ll join your Feng Chen Sect and become your disciple...”

“Really?!” Xiao Feng Chen, who was wondering why the orb had started to glow and flash, was exhilarated upon hearing this. He jumped almost 2 metres into the air, and yelled, “Really... holy frick, you’re not lying, right? No take-backs this time?”

“Yep, really, no take-backs.” Ling Chen nodded. Before, he had not kept his word because he didn’t want to lose his Ling Tian Battle Soul. However, if he didn’t have to get rid of his current profession, he had no objections to joining the Feng Chen Sect.

“Boy, you’re not very trustworthy. What if you change your mind again?” Although Xiao Feng Chen was overjoyed, he didn’t let down his guard.

“Don’t worry, this time I definitely won’t change my mind.”

“Good, good!” Xiao Feng Chen excitedly rubbed his hands together, then tossed the orb to Ling Chen. At the same time, he muttered to himself, “Looks like that orb was quite special-it seems that the boy only agreed because of the orb... well, who cares what it is. I only got thrown in here because of that damn thing, so it’s

good that it's his now."

After he finished talking to himself, he loudly exclaimed, "Hah! That orb is yours now! I'll help you get rid of that profession now, and after you've inherited the Feng Chen Sect's profession, I'll give you the Evil God's Mask. Alright, let's get started."

Xiao Feng Chen looked extremely eager and impatient. However, Ling Chen ignored him, and looked at the orb's attributes

> [Pisces Orb]: Type: Energy Orb, Grade: Mysterious God; Equipment Requirement: Can only be slotted in the Lunar Scourge. Effects: Allows the user to have a bonus 2 professions.

Ling Chen: "!!!!!"

Although he was mentally prepared, when he actually saw the Pisces Orb's attributes, his eyes widened. Just as Qi Yue had said, the Pisces Orb allowed one to have more professions... and it didn't just allow him to have a single extra profession, but two extra professions!

After equipping the Pisces Orb, Ling Chen would be able to have three professions!

What effects would this have??

Normally, every profession had its own characteristics. For example, Berserkers specialised in Attack, Shield Bearers specialised in Defence, Assassins specialised in Speed and Stealth, Archers specialised in Hit Rate and Range, etc. If a player could have three different professions, they would be able to benefit from the characteristics of three different professions!!

This was simply unbelievable!

Every time he found a Lunar Scourge Orb, Ling Chen would become incredibly excited, as every single Orb was extremely powerful. Ling Chen exhaled slowly, and put his hands behind his back, stealthily putting the Pisces Orb into its place in the twelfth socket of the Lunar Orb.

“Ding... Pisces Orb slotting successful. You can have an additional two professions. If the Pisces Orb is removed, only one profession can remain active; the other two will temporarily become inactive.”

“The hell? How do you expect me to give you this profession if you don’t get rid of the one you have now? Can you be a bit more logical?!” Xiao Feng Chen looked at Ling Chen as if he was an idiot.

“That only applies to normal people! Because my powerful mental energy, I’m able to have two professions at the same time.” Ling Chen casually replied.

“Go screw your grandmother! Your grandpa here has never heard of something stupid like that. Even those three bitches from the

Moon God Clan wouldn't be able to have two professions... that would be way too powerful!" Xiao Feng Chen rebutted. He didn't believe Ling Chen at all. To be fair, no matter who Ling Chen said that to, whether it was a player or a resident of the Forgotten Continent, no one would believe him.

Actually, if someone had told Ling Chen that same thing before he received the Pisces Orb, he wouldn't believe them either...

As such, Ling Chen could only helplessly reply, "If you don't believe me, you can try and see for yourself. Try to pass on to me the Feng Chen Sect's legacy without cancelling my current profession. If what I said is true, then I'll become your Feng Chen Sect's successor. If I was lying, you can just cancel my profession then pass on the Feng Chen Sect's power to me. There's nothing for you to lose."

Seeing that Ling Chen was so calm, Xiao Feng Chen looked at him suspiciously for a long time. He muttered to himself, "Could it really be that having incredible mental energy can let you have two professions? If that's true, then this brat is simply logic-defying..."

"Alright, I'll give it a go then." Xiao Feng Chen did not waste any words. He simply couldn't wait to pass on the Feng Chen Sect's legacy. "Now, stand properly and close your eyes!"

Ling Chen nodded, and closed his eyes.

Xiao Feng Chen didn't make any special movements. Instead, he also closed his eyes, and after about half a minute, he suddenly

opened his eyes. When he did so, his eyes had become completely white, and his lips started to move, as if he was chanting something. He slowly stretched out his finger, and pressed it against Ling Chen's forehead.

Ling Chen's body trembled, and felt that a mysterious flow of energy was entering his body from his forehead, filling up his mind...

Xiao Feng Chen's eyes gradually became normal again. He stared at Ling Chen in complete shock... The transfer of the Feng Chen Sect's power had gone completely smoothly, and had succeeded without any problems. However, he definitely hadn't cancelled Ling Chen's original profession. The only explanation was that what Ling Chen had said earlier was true-he really could have two professions at once!

This kid was truly a super monster! Although he was still quite weak, with this kind of potential, his future was unlimited. Before, he only had a battle profession. But now, he also had the Feng Chen Sect's power... combining these two powers, he would be unrivalled! Thinking to here, Xiao Feng Chen couldn't resist grinning... because this brat was already part of his Feng Chen Sect... it was just a pity that they could never leave from this damned place.

However, he was still relieved that he had finally accomplished his life's greatest wish. From now on, he could live his life without any burdens. Even if he was to die in this Lunar Sky Hell, he could do so without any regrets.

After a few minutes, when the transfer of the Feng Chen Sect's power had been completed, Xiao Feng Chen lowered his arm and took two steps back, staring at Ling Chen.

Ling Chen's eyes also opened, and he heard a system announcement.

"Ding... you have accepted the legacy of the "Feng Chen Sect", and have become a Feng Chen Curse Zanni", Constitution+20, Agility+30, Spirit+50, Basic Skills: [Feng Chen Technique], [Broken Shadow], acquired Unique Feng Chen Curses: [Complete and Utter Belief Curse], [Lovey Lovey Curse], [I'm a Sheep Curse]."

"Ding... because of your pet Xiao Hui's skill [Holy Spirit's Gift], [Feng Chen Technique], [Broken Shadow] have levelled up to LV3."

After successfully receiving the legacy of the Feng Chen Sect, Ling Chen now had two professions. He immediately opened his stats page, and looked at his stats. The Ling Tian Battle Soul profession was still there, but next to it was also [Feng Chen Curse Zanni].

The Pisces Orb was simply amazing!

"Hahahahahaha!!" After seeing Ling Chen's reaction, Xiao Feng Chen was certain that the passing on of the legacy had succeeded, "Good! Good! My Feng Chen Sect finally has a successor! Awesome! Hahaha... I have finally repaid the Feng Chen Sect and my deceased Master! Ling Tian, you should be able to use some of the basic skills now, quickly try them out! You'll immediately know

that becoming part of my Feng Chen Sect was the right decision, hahaha!”

Chapter 267 - Second Profession: Feng Chen Curse Zanni

Evidently, Xiao Feng Chen was already delirious with joy. Ling Chen nodded, and looked at his new profession.

[Feng Chen Curse Zanni]: A profession given by “Xiao Feng Chen”, originating from the Ancient Evil Sect “Feng Chen Sect”. This profession has no attack power, but its abilities in running away are unparalleled. The core ability “Feng Chen Murdering Heart Curses” can stealthily attack the target’s mind without them noticing or being able to defend against it, and is feared by countless people. Even the peerless experts in the Forgotten Continent who usually fear nothing quake when they hear the words “Feng Chen Curses”.”

Profession Bonus Stats: Constitution+20, Agility+50, Spirit+50. Every time you level up, Agility+1 bonus and Spirit+1 bonus.

Profession Skills:

[Feng Chen Technique]: Current level: LV3, Highest level: LV10, SP required to upgrade to LV4: 2,600. A technique unique to the Feng Chen Sect. After cultivating, the user’s body will become incredibly light and nimble, as if they are riding on a gentle breeze. It is said that when cultivated to the peak, the user can use the winds to walk in the sky and even falling from a cliff will not hurt them at all. Effects: Movement Speed+30, Evasion+30%, can decrease falling speed by up to 30% (can be

controlled).

[Broken Shadow]: Current level: LV3, Highest level: LV5, SP required to upgrade to LV4: 12,000. One of the Feng Chen Sect's ultimate escaping techniques. After activating, the user's body becomes like an illusory shadow, and will be almost impossible to stop or capture. Effects: Movement Speed+900%, Evasion+900%, effects last for 20 seconds. Can be used three times per day.

Ling Chen was already incredibly shocked by the Feng Chen Technique-at LV3, it already increased his Movement Speed by 30. That meant at LV10, it would increase his Movement Speed by 100, which was almost what normal players had as their base Movement Speed! Currently, there were only two professions that had passive skills which could raise one's Movement Speed: one was the Archer profession's [Gale Steps], which could add 20 Movement Speed at its maximum level, and the Assassin profession's [Rapid Shadow Technique], which could increase Movement Speed by 40 at its maximum level. However, this Feng Chen Technique was much, much superior to both of these skills.

As for the [Broken Shadow] skill, Ling Chen's jaw hit the floor when he saw it, and simply couldn't look away.

Movement Speed +900%..... Ling Chen looked at the number again and again, and confirmed that what he was seeing was real. That's right, it was indeed a 900% increase to Movement Speed, which meant that once he activated it, his speed would increase to 10 times his base Movement Speed! With Ling Chen's base Movement Speed, using this skill would cause his overall

Movement Speed to be above 1,000. If he used it while riding on a mount... his Movement Speed would definitely be above 2,000!

That was simply absurd!

No wonder Xiao Feng Chen had boasted that his Feng Chen Sect was unparalleled in running away. Indeed, with this sort of speed, even a god wouldn't be able to catch up to them. Apart from the Lucky Cat's ridiculous throwing-money-away escape skill, this was the most powerful escape ability Ling Chen had ever seen. What's more, this skill belonged to him now. However, because he just received this skill, he could only use it for 20 seconds at a time, and could only use it three times per day. In total, he could only use it for 60 seconds per day. However, he was still satisfied with this.

The other three skills had nothing to do with escaping, but were the Feng Chen Curses that supposedly made peerless experts run away in fear. Ling Chen looked at them eagerly.

[Complete and Utter Belief Curse]: Low Level Feng Chen Curse, can't be levelled up. Can be used on a target within the user's line of sight, and once hit, the victim will completely and utterly believe what the user says. The success rate is dependent on the difference in strength between the user and target's mental energy. The number of seconds the effect last for is equivalent to the user's Comprehension stat. Costs 10 MP, cooldown time: 100 seconds.

[Lovey Lovey Curse]: Low Level Feng Chen Curse, can't be levelled up. Can be used on two targets of the same or different gender within the user's line of sight, and once hit, the victims will be filled with surging desire for each other. The success rate is dependent on the difference in strength between the user and targets' mental energy. The number of seconds the effect last for is equivalent to the user's Comprehension stat. Costs 10MP, cooldown time: 100 seconds.

[I'm A Sheep Curse]: Low Level Feng Chen Curse, can't be levelled up. Can be used on a target within the user's line of sight, and once hit, the victim will believe that they are a sheep. The success rate is dependent on the difference in strength between the user and target's mental energy. The number of seconds the effect last for is equivalent to the user's Comprehension stat. Costs 10 MP, cooldown time: 100 seconds.

.....

Seeing the three Feng Chen Curses in front of him, Ling Chen's expression became extremely comical. The three Feng Chen Curses he had so far were only Low Level Feng Chen Curses, but they were enough to cause Ling Chen to become speechless, and he felt his whole body sweating as his heart rate sped up... now, he finally understood why Qi Yue said that countless experts were terrified of the Feng Chen Curses-he had never seen such sinister, cruel and brutal skills before!

Seeing Ling Chen's expression, Xiao Feng Chen began to roar out

in laughter, “Well? So amazed that you can’t speak right? Hahahaha, now you know that joining the Feng Chen Sect was the right decision, eh? Heheh, you’ve only just become my successor, so you only have one of the weakest skills. However, even though it’s one of the weakest skills, it’ll still help you completely dominate everyone. As for running away, I’m sure I don’t need to say anything about those skills. Come, come, come, let me see which Curse you have. You should have been able to receive a Curse from the power I gave you.”

Ling Chen sheepishly showed him the three Curses he had received.

“W-what?! Three?!! Holy frick!” Xiao Feng Chen was extremely shocked to see this, “As expected of the little monster who was able to counter by Deity Curse-you actually received three Curses from the beginning! Back then, it took me three years to unlock three curses! Not bad, not bad! With these three Curses, as well as your absurd mental energy, you’re going to be unstoppable.”

Xiao Feng Chen’s mood was terrific. Standing in front of Ling Chen, he began to enthusiastically explain, “The three Curses you’ve received are actually all very powerful Curses! For the [Complete and Utter Belief Curse], your victim will believe every single word you say-even if you tell an old man that you’re his father, he’ll completely and utterly believe you! Of course, you could also tell them that their wife has been violated by some other person, or his son has fallen into a pile of crap, or even that he’s a woman... anyways, no matter what you tell him, he’ll completely believe you. Anyone who dares to tell him otherwise, he’ll be completely furious at them!”

“As for the [Lovey Lovey Curse]… heheh…” Xiao Feng Chen gave a lecherous laugh, “This Curse is simultaneously used on two people. It doesn’t matter if they’re different genders or the same gender. They’ll completely fall in love immediately, and will be filled with indescribable ‘passion’ for each other. Once they’re affected by the Curse, nothing will be able to stop them as they display their overflowing passion and desire for each other… even if the sky falls down, they won’t stop. Ah~~~” Xiao Feng Chen rambled with a lascivious look on his face, “Back then, I used this Lovey Lovey Curse on two of those Moon Goddesses… I’ll never forget that scene of them desperately rubbing their breasts, asses and thighs together… those movements, those sounds… hahahahaha…”

Ling Chen: “⊙﹏⊙b”

To cause the renowned and revered Moon Goddesses to do such a thing… this guy was incredibly audacious! No wonder they threw him in this damn place. Come to think of it, if even these Low Level Feng Chen Curses could affect even the three Moon Goddesses, then what would the truly ‘powerful’ Feng Chen Curses be like?!

“Last but not least, the [I’m A Sheep Curse], also called the ‘Sheep Sheep Curse’. If you’re not happy with someone, you can use this Curse on him, and he’ll believe that he’s a sheep. What would he do? Act like a sheep of course-crawl around on his arms and legs and bleat like a sheep, as well as eat some grass. Think about it, if some expert offended you, and you used this on him, then he won’t be able to go out in public every again, heheh. To be able to ruin an expert so easily, and to turn his entire life upside-down with just a single skill-apart from my Feng Chen Sect, who’s able to do such a

thing? Say, my Feng Chen Sect... no, our Feng Chen Sect is super strong right? Right?"

"Strong, super strong!" Ling Chen nodded... indeed, this Feng Chen Sect's power was terrifyingly strong.

"Being strong is a must. Now, boy, if you can make it out of here, all you'll have to do is tell everyone that you're from the Feng Chen Sect for every expert to treat you with absolute respect." Xiao Feng Chen gleefully said, "However, even though your mental energy is ridiculously powerful, you've only just gained this power, so you need to wait a whole 100 seconds before you can use a Curse again. After 100 or so years of training, you'll be able to use them as frequently as you want, and you'll have more powerful Curses at your disposal as well.

"You need to be careful though, because the Curses aren't guaranteed to be effective against your target-if their mental energy is stronger than yours, then your Curse will likely fail, unless they're not mentally prepared. If their mental energy is especially strong, and they're prepared as well, your Curse could even be countered back to you... ahaha, just like how my 'Deity Curse' was countered back at me by you. Also, the Feng Chen Curses can fail or be detected not only if your target's mental energy is too strong, but also if their overall power is too strong as well. For example, even though you have incredibly strong mental energy, but if you tried to use the Feng Chen Curses on those three bitches, it definitely would have no effect."

Ling Chen nodded, and committed these things to memory.

Chapter 268 - Unexpected Hope!

“Also, just remember that the Feng Chen Curses can only be used on ‘humanoids’. This includes not only humans, but also ‘Gods’, Demons, Fairies, Dwarves, etc. The Curses can also affect beasts if they’re in humanoid form, but not if they go back to their beast form. Got it?”

“Got it.” Ling Chen replied. Within Ling Chen’s mind, he was considering countless possibilities of how he could use his new skills. This profession from the Feng Chen Sect was much more powerful and terrifying than he could have imagined. With the Feng Chen Technique and Broken Shadow, his escaping abilities would be unparalleled throughout the entire Forgotten Continent, and would be a great complement to his combat abilities. As for the Feng Chen Curses, they were completely useless for farming and levelling up, but to screw over people… they were simply perfect. Ling Chen clearly knew just how powerful his mental energy was. At his current stage, he wasn’t too sure about all existences, but he was confident that there was not a single person who could resist his Feng Chen Curses. If someone angered him… heheheh!

But the prerequisite was that he could make it out of this damn place…

Indeed, unintentionally coming to the Lunar Sky Hell resulted in him meeting the amazing Xiao Feng Chen, unexpectedly receiving the Pisces Orb and obtaining a powerful profession. Although he had suffered quite a bit, his gains were quite substantial. However, if he couldn’t leave this place, what was the point of having all those things?”

“En, so that’s pretty much the uses for all the Feng Chen Curses you have so far. Oh, by the way, how high’s your Comprehension?” Xiao Feng Chen suddenly asked.

“Twelve.” Ling Chen replied. This value was already incredible for a player.

“Only twelve? That’s way too low. The number of seconds the Feng Chen Curses will be effective for is dependent on your Comprehension, you know. With a Comprehension stat of twelve, your Curses will only last for twelve seconds. Moreover, just like other skills, with a higher Comprehension stat, you’ll be able to learn more Feng Chen Curses, and have a greater chance at obtaining higher level Feng Chen Curses… for example, the levelled up version of the Complete and Utter Belief Curse is the ‘Deity Curse’ I tried to use on you before, and the levelled up version of the Lovey Lovey Curse is the ‘Love Magnet Curse’… en, once you use the Love Magnet Curse, even if the target has an irreconcilable hatred with you, they’ll fall madly in love with you instantly, heheh. All in all, if you want to have better Curses and for them to be more effective, you’ll need to greatly increase your Comprehension.”

Ling Chen took this to heart, and started to ask something he had wanted to ask for a long time, “Senior Xiao, you…”

“Senior? What senior? Didn’t I tell you to call me big brother! Big brother!” Xiao Feng Chen once again jumped up and down in fury.

“Err, big brother Xiao,” Ling Chen couldn’t be bothered arguing with him, “You said that there was something that even the Lunar Sky Hell can’t seal. What is it?”

Xiao Feng Chen gave him a blank look, and shrugged, “You still remember that? Well those things can’t be sealed even by this damn place. Let alone this place, there’s nothing that can seal those things. However, it’s pointless to even talk about it-not even me or my master have even seen one after spending many years looking for them. Legend says that there are less than ten of them in the entire Forgotten Continent, and they never stay in the same place as they can move by themselves. Since they try to avoid living creatures, finding one is almost impossible, even for those three from the Moon God Clan. As for you… don’t even think about it.”

Never in the same place, can move by themselves… this thing seemed very similar to something he had. Ling Chen wouldn’t give up, “What is it exactly? Hurry up and tell me-if you don’t even tell me what it is, how do you know I don’t have it?”

“Cheh, if you have it, then I’ll cut off my head for you to use as a toilet!” Xiao Feng Chen smirked, “Alright, alright, it’s called… hmm, something like space stone… that’s right, Spatial Stone!”

“……”

“Spatial Stone?!?!” Ling Chen was so overjoyed that he almost jumped up. He actually did have a Spatial Stone! It was the one Xiao Hui had found, and he had personally dug out! [TLN: Chapter 232].

“That’s right, it seems like you’ve heard of it before.” Ling Chen’s reaction caused Xiao Feng Chen to look at him strangely, “Spatial Stones contain the purest spatial energy in existence, and are completely different to methods that use force to open up a space to escape. The spatial energy they contain is able to ignore all barriers and seals, and even though it is normally impossible to escape from a place sealed by the Moon God Clan, it is incredibly easy with a Spatial Stone.”

“So you’re saying that if we have a Spatial Stone, then we can leave here?” Ling Chen excitedly asked.

“Of course! Using the spatial energy within it, we would be able to be transported somewhere else… as long as we can leave this damn place, no matter where I’m sent, it’ll be impossible to trap me… or you.”

“Looks like fate is smiling on you.” Qi Yue sighed in admiration, “Indeed, if this old guy really knows how to use the Spatial Stone, there is a possibility you two can leave.”

Ling Chen immediately took out a plain-looking, fist-sized stone from his bag and showed it to Xiao Feng Chen, “…Big brother Xiao, what do you think this is?”

“Eh?” Xiao Feng Chen looked at the stone, then leapt into the air as if someone had kicked him from behind. His eyes widened to comical proportions, and he shrieked, “SPATIAL STONE!!!”

“That’s right, it’s a Spatial Stone! The thing that you said that could be used to escape from any place.” Ling Chen tightly gripped the Spatial Stone, his heart pounding in excitement. Being trapped in here forever would be terrible. However, it seemed that his luck had really pulled through this time. The thing that Xiao Feng Chen said was almost impossible to obtain was actually in his possession.

“Spatial Stone... Spatial Stone... it really is a Spatial Stone...” Xiao Feng Chen’s whole body trembled, and his eyes were misty. He had been locked in there for a whole 1,000 years... this sort of dark, smelly, dangerous place filled with monsters was pretty much a real hell. Ling Chen had no idea how much he had endured in this place, and definitely wouldn’t understand just how much this Spatial Stone meant to him... every day he had dreamt a legendary Spatial Stone would fall down from the heavens.

“It really is a Spatial Stone... Spatial Stone...” Xiao Feng Chen continued to mutter to himself. His hands hovered around the stone, as if he was afraid that it would shatter if he touched it. Finally, he rubbed his face and somewhat regained his dignity again. He stared at Ling Chen earnestly, asking, “Ling Tian, how did you get this Spatial Stone?”

“I found it inadvertently while passing through a deserted area. It was about a few days ago.” Ling Chen truthfully replied.

Xiao Feng Chen raised his face up to the heavens, and breathed out slowly, “It must be the heavens’ will! Could it be that the heavens pity me, and sent someone to finally take me out of this place...”

Seeing Xiao Feng Chen's actions from before, Ling Chen thought that perhaps he had already become accustomed to this sort of life. However, it seemed that this was not the case. In reality, what Xiao Feng Chen dreamt of every day was to see the outside world again. Then again, who in the world would be happy to stay in such a cruel and depressing place...

"Big brother Xiao, can we really leave using the Spatial Stone?" Ling Chen asked.

"Of course... as long as we can use even a tiny bit of its spatial energy, it'll definitely be enough." Xiao Feng Chen said as he vigorously nodded.

Ling Chen gripped the Spatial Stone in his hand. This stone looked incredibly unremarkable from its external appearance, so much that even if it was on the ground on a busy street, no one would even bother to look at it, and yet it was now his only hope, "Is this small piece of Spatial Stone enough...?"

"Small? This is small?" Xiao Feng Chen almost spat at Ling Chen, "You know Spatial Stones are incredibly rare right?! Even a Spatial Stone as small as a grain of rice would be priceless, and would spur countless experts to kill each other over it. This piece of Spatial Stone as big as a fist... its worth is simply immeasurable!"

"Then how do we use the spatial energy stored inside it?" Ling Chen asked. This was the most important question. In the description of the Spatial Stone, it was said that in order to use its spatial energy, one would have to have incredible forging skills-forging skills at a minimum of Heaven's End grade. He definitely

wasn't able to use the Spatial Stone, but seeing how ecstatic Xiao Feng Chen looked... could he be a super high-level Blacksmith?

Xiao Feng Chen regained his composure, and replied, "The process is neither complicated nor simple. Spatial Stones contain the purest form of spatial energy. If the spatial energy can be taken out and transferred into another object, incredible Spatial Equipment can be created-both attack and supporting type items. Using the spatial energy to create Transport Equipment can transport us to any place in the Forgotten Continent, even if it's from within the Lunar Sky Hell. However, the prerequisite is having extremely high level forging skills, and it is extremely hard to find a human with such skills. The only ones who are able to create items with the Spatial Stone to perfection are a race that has disappeared for a long time, and has even been thought to have gone extinct-the Dwarves. As for us two, neither of us are able to make such items with the Spatial Stone. However, what we can do is to forcefully extract a bit of the spatial energy within it to create a Spatial Rift, which we can escape through... as for where that Spatial Rift will lead to, who knows? But I'm sure it won't be as bad as the Lunar Sky Hell."

Ling Chen completely understood, and asked, "So how do we forcefully extract some of its spatial energy?"

Xiao Feng Chen looked at Ling Chen liked he was an idiot, "Simple! You hit it! Use your full force to hit it. As long as there is enough force, some of the spatial energy will leak out, and we'll be able to escape! Come, give the Spatial Stone to me. With your tiny bit of strength, I'm sure you won't be able to force out any spatial energy, so let me try first."

Chapter 269 - Escaping From Lunar Sky Hell

“Come, give this Spatial Stone to me. Even though my Feng Chen Sect’s primary abilities aren’t in attacking, but I’ve still lived for 2,000 or so years so I’ve got quite a bit of strength in me. Even if I fought directly against the monsters in here, it wouldn’t be so easy for them to kill me.”

Ling Chen handed the Spatial Stone over to Xiao Feng Chen, then moved back a few steps, watching how Xiao Feng Chen would extract the spatial energy from the stone.

Xiao Feng Chen put the Spatial Stone on the ground, and clenched his hand into a fist. He breathed in deeply, and smashed his hand onto the Spatial Stone while yelling.

Bang!!!!

This was the sound created by Xiao Feng Chen’s fist hitting the Spatial Stone. Just this sound showed how much destructive power that one punch had. If it was a normal stone, it would have been blown to smithereens, but the Spatial Stone was still completely fine… it was not damaged in the slightest.

“Gawd~~~DAMMIT!!”

Following from the massive sound of the fist hitting the Spatial Stone, Xiao Feng Chen leapt up and started jumping around, shaking his hand in pain. “Ow ow ow ow ow ow! Holy frick that hurt! ARGHHHH~~~”

Ling Chen: ⊙‿⊙b

“Err… are you alright?” Ling Chen cautiously asked. He looked down at the Spatial Stone and confirmed that it was not damaged at all.

“I-I’m fine, how could I not be alright. I just underestimated this stone, and didn’t use my full strength. Just a mistake, a mistake.” Xiao Feng Chen waved his hands furiously as he yelled out. However, when he turned around, Ling Chen could clearly see that there were tears of pain starting to come out from his eyes.

“Should… should I try?” Ling Chen asked.

“You?? I know you have ridiculous mental energy, but I can tell from your aura that your strength is pretty weak; even if you hit it for 100 years it’ll be pointless.” Xiao Feng Chen breathed in deeply, and stood in front of the Spatial Stone again, wiping away his tears, “Goddamit, I really underestimated this stone. Just then was… half… yep, half of my full strength, but it wasn’t enough to force any of the spatial energy out. I’m determined to use my full strength and force you to spit out some spatial energy!!”

“Hah!!” Xiao Feng Chen took a new stance in front of the Spatial Stone, and gripped both hands into fists. He began to gather his strength while shouting, “Oraaaaaaa…. Watch me smash it at full strength!”

Xiao Feng Chen’s teeth were gritted together and every muscle

on his body tightened. It really seemed as if he was going to every single bit of energy in his body for this one strike. He raised his fists, then smashed them downwards simultaneously.

BANG!!!!!!!

Just from hearing the massive sound, it was evident that this strike was at least twice as powerful as the previous one. Ling Chen could almost feel the ground trembling under his feet.

Ling Chen looked over and saw that there were tears flowing down Xiao Feng Chen's face again. However, he was gritting his teeth and did not let out any cries of pain. After everything had quietened down, Ling Chen looked over and saw that there was still no sign of damage on the Spatial Stone, much less any spatial energy leaking out... rather, the two fists on top of the Spatial Stone had become bright red, as if someone had just roasted them.

"Still not enough." Ling Chen said as he shook his head.

Xiao Feng Chen dejectedly sat on the ground, huffing and puffing, while gnashing his teeth, "It's indeed a Spatial Stone; looks like trying to forcefully extract some of its spatial energy won't be that easy. However, that's alright-with the Spatial Stone, we have some hope. Let me rest for a bit-I didn't prepare properly just then. I'll try again after a few hours."

"Let me try." After roughly calculating how strong Xiao Feng Chen's two strikes were, and considering his peak attack strength, Ling Chen still wanted to give it a shot.

“You? Cheh, even though my attack strength isn’t that great, but I’ve still trained for 2,000 years or so. Boy, you’ve only lived for a few years; do you really think your attack strength is superior to those two strikes just then?” Xiao Feng Chen asked with an expression of disdain.

Ling Chen couldn’t be bothered replying to him. Instead, he walked over and took the Spatial Stone and placed it in front of him. He equipped the Zephyr Blade and Great Ravager, causing Xiao Feng Chen’s expression to change, “Two pieces of Celestial grade equipment… heheh, boy, you’re pretty lucky. To have two pieces of Celestial grade equipment at such strength, back then I… wait a second, those two weapons should both be two-handed weapons; how are you holding them both at the same time? That doesn’t seem right! Ai, even if you have two Celestial grade equipment, it’s still going to be pointless. Don’t bother wasting your energy.”

Ling Chen didn’t pay any attention to Xiao Feng Chen’s ramblings. He slowly raised up the Zephyr Blade and Great Ravager. It seemed that there had to be enough strength in a single strike, so in that case…

“Soul Sacrifice!”

“Battle Soul Possession!”

The max level Soul Sacrifice could cause Ling Chen’s attack power to increase by five times! At LV3, Battle Soul Possession not

only increased damage by 100%, but also gave him Absolute Crit. With these two skills, Ling Chen's strikes were almost 10 times as powerful as they were normally!

When those two glows appeared on Ling Chen's body, and his battle aura surged, Xiao Feng Chen immediately stopped talking and stared at him in shock. He simply couldn't believe what was happening.

What was going on? His aura suddenly skyrocketed by so much! This boy, not only was his mental energy incredible, but his battle power...

Wait, this feeling... Battle Soul Possession?

Could he be that guy's successor?

No wonder he was so adamant in keeping his current profession; it really seemed like he had inherited that guy's power!

You and I were like enemies, yet also like friends back then; we've helped each other and fought each other so many times, and in the end we even chose the same successor. Haha, perhaps this was all fate.

"Ling Tian Burst!"

"Thousand Kilogram Rend!"

The max level Soul Sacrifice and LV3 Battle Soul Possession filled Ling Chen with power, giving him a feeling like his blood was boiling. Gripping his two weapons, he smashed them down onto the small Spatial Stone...

Please work!

BOOM!!!!!!

Under Ling Chen's full strength strike, the resulting sound almost caused Ling Chen's eardrums to burst. As a result of the shockwave, Ling Chen was forced to stumble backwards by a few steps, and caused him to stunned for a moment. Beside him, Xiao Feng Chen was completely dumbstruck. He was completely certain that that strike was able to split apart the earth. Suddenly, he saw that about three steps in front of Ling Chen, there was a jet black Spatial Rift about two metres tall, and was rapidly closing.

Success!! A bit of the spatial energy from the Spatial Stone had leaked out, forming a Spatial Rift!

"We've succeeded! Quick! Let's go!!"

At this moment, there was no time to hesitate. The Spatial Rift had suddenly appeared and was rapidly closing. Xiao Feng Chen leapt into action, and activated "Broken Shadow". He sped over and picked Ling Chen up, as well as the Spatial Stone on the ground, then charged into the Spatial Rift.

One second later, the jet black Spatial Rift had completely disappeared, taking all traces of Xiao Feng Chen and Ling Chen with it.

“Hahahaha, we’re out, we’re finally out! Hahahaha!!”

Xiao Feng Chen raised his head to the sky and laughed wildly for three whole minutes, until his throat was sore.

That’s right, they had indeed escaped. After going into the Spatial Rift, they were sent to a place where there were cool breezes, and plenty of sunlight. They definitely weren’t in the Lunar Sky Hell anymore. Xiao Feng Chen, who had not experienced sunlight or wind for 1,000 years laughed and cried non-stop. Ling Chen deeply breathed out, and did not disturb Xiao Feng Chen’s emotional outburst. Instead, he sat down, and took out the map to confirm where he was. He had only been in the Lunar Sky Hell for a fairly short period of time, so he had not truly experienced the terrors of that place, so his reaction was not as strong as Xiao Feng Chen’s.

“If I didn’t enter the Lunar Sky Hell, perhaps I would have never been able to find the Pisces Orb.” Ling Chen muttered to himself while looking at the Pisces Orb in the Lunar Scourge. It was simply impossible to understand how fate worked. Entering the Lunar Sky Hell should have been a terrible catastrophe for him... in fact, it should have been that he would have been stuck in that situation forever. However, what resulted was completely different.

From the map, it seemed that he and Xiao Feng Chen had been transported to a place in the north of the Forgotten Continent, a place called Wild Goose Valley. Just based on the name, it was clear that this was not a dangerous place. They had been transported to the top of a small hill.

Xiao Feng Chen had tired from laughing, and was incredibly happy, “The Forgotten Continent’s air is so fresh… I never thought I would be able to experience this air again in my entire life. Looks like I need to keep living for a long time; I can’t just come out after all this time to just die before enjoying myself. By the way, Ling Tian, where’s your master right now?”

“My master?” Ling Chen was confused, “I don’t have a master.”

“You don’t have one? Then where did your Battle Soul Possession come from?” Seeing that Ling Chen didn’t seem to be lying to him, Xiao Feng Chen asked with curiosity.

Ling Chen understood what Xiao Feng Chen was talking about and nodded, “My power is indeed the Battle Soul… but this power was inherited from a senior called the “War God”. As for that “War God”, he already died a thousand years ago.”

“Dead…?” Xiao Feng Chen’s mouth opened and closed, and an expression of sorrow flashed on his face, but was quickly replaced with his normal cheery smile, “If he’s dead, then he’s dead. At least he won’t have to face any problems anymore. Plus, it saves me the effort to go and find him.”

“Did you know him?” Ling Chen asked in surprise.

“Haha, I did. Back then, he was called the strongest human, and was the closest person to the Saint Destroyer level. As for me, I was the only person he feared. Moreover... Ai, forget it, those are all old things from a thousand years ago. You’re the inheritor of his power, so go and make this power known throughout all the land. He dedicated his whole life to his training, and his greatest desire was to reach the level of his ancestors. Looks like his wish will have to be accomplished through you.” Xiao Feng Chen wistfully said.

Chapter 270 - Evil God's Mask

"To be able to come out from that damn Lunar Sky Hell is pretty much like receiving a second life for me. What happened in the past is in the past, but from now on in future there's going to be an old demon causing people to flee at the sound of his name, heheh..." Xiao Feng Chen sinisterly laughed, then patted Ling Chen on the shoulder, "To be able to get out from that place is all thanks to you. However, I passed on my Feng Chen Sect's power on to you, and gave you so many goodies, so we're even; no one owes the other person anything."

Ling Chen: "....."

"Ah, here's your Spatial Stone. I definitely wouldn't forget to pick it up while leaving. This sort of amazing treasure can only be found every few thousands of years, so how could we just throw it away like that." Xiao Feng Chen took out the Spatial Stone and gave it to Ling Chen. When Ling Chen took it into his hands, he saw that there was a very small fracture on the surface of the Spatial Stone. The spatial energy that created the Spatial Rift from before probably leaked out from this fracture. He asked, "Since this piece of Spatial Stone has been used, is there still any spatial energy left inside?"

Xiao Feng Chen grinned, "With such a large Spatial Stone, it could be used more than a hundred times like that! Spatial energy isn't lost so easily; in future, if you're stuck in some place, just do the same thing and you'll be able to escape from there. If even the Lunar Sky Hell could not seal it, then there's no place in the world that you won't be able to escape from. Oh, and also, this Evil God's Mask is also yours now."

After taking out the dark golden Evil God's Mask, Xiao Feng Chen lovingly stroked it a few times before finally giving it to Ling Chen, "This is a priceless and unique treasure, and it's yours now. Take good care of it."

This was a Heaven's End grade piece of equipment-in fact, a Heaven's Grade Mask. Even if Ling Chen was an idiot, he wouldn't refuse this. He immediately accepted the Evil God's Mask, and looked at its stats... what sort of boosts would a Heaven's End Grade Mask give?

[Evil God's Mask]: Type: Mask, Grade: Heaven's End, Equipment Requirements: None. A mask forged from the corpse of an Ancient Evil God. It contains some of the hatred energy from the Evil God.

Attributes: When receiving lethal damage, the damage will instead be reflected. This effect has a 10 second cooldown.

The Evil God's Mask didn't give any bonus stats, nor did it give any special skills. It only had a single effect, which didn't seem quite right for a Heaven's End grade equipment. However, even though it was a single effect, Ling Chen was still incredibly shocked when he saw it.

Heaven's End grade Masks were incredibly rare, and Xiao Feng Chen said that this Evil God's Mask was the most powerful Mask in all of the Forgotten Continent. What was even more shocking was

that this Mask did not have any equipment requirements, meaning that literally anyone could equip it... a Heaven's End grade Mask without any equipment requirements-this could cause countless people to go crazy with envy.

The mask only had one attribute-reflect lethal damage! Just this one attribute justified the mask being of Heaven's End grade. This was potentially the most life-saving effect Ling Chen had ever seen... although it couldn't compare to Xiao Hui's "Holy Spirit's Shield", but it was far superior to any other defensive skill or effect.

"Watcha think, it's amazing right?" Xiao Feng Chen said smugly, "As long as the damage you take isn't enough to kill you, the Evil God's Mask won't react at all. However, as soon as there is damage that would normally kill you, the Evil God's Mask will react instantly, blocking the damage for you and reflecting it. Moreover, the cooldown time for the effect is only 10 seconds! With this mask, when facing powerful enemies, what you'll fear least is their ultimate skills that can instantly kill you... if they dare to use their ultimate skill against you, the one taking a massive amount of damage will be them. Moreover, the Evil God's Mask not only protects you from damage from enemies, but every type of lethal damage, including traps. Back then, I was able to pass through many traps that were able to kill me a hundred times over relying on the Evil God's Mask. Wearing the mask, even if you fall down a cliff that is many kilometres high, you won't have to worry about dying, because the lethal damage will be negated.

"No matter how powerful you are, or how much status or wealth you have, if you die, then all of that is worthless. The Evil God's Mask is one of the most powerful life-saving treasures in existence,

and is passed on from generation to generation within the Feng Chen Sect. It has saved members of our Feng Chen Sect countless times in the past. If it wasn't for this mask, I probably wouldn't be able to survive till today. Also, my master told me that the Evil God's Mask seems to also be hiding some sort of other ability or effect, but I've never been able to discover what it is. Throughout the ages, it has been greatly desired by countless people, but after I was sealed in the Lunar Sky Hell, it disappeared along with me from the Forgotten Continent. Thus, apart from those thousand-years-old monsters, pretty much no one should recognise it anymore. However, its appearance is still quite eye-catching, so don't just casually wear it around, otherwise if those thousand-years-old monsters find out you have the mask, they'll come to hunt you down.

Ling Chen nodded, and looked at the Evil God's Mask from various angles in a very happy manner. Indeed, this was an extremely powerful life-saving treasure. What's more, it wasn't just life-saving, but could also reflect damage! That meant for the ultimate skills of those super powerful monsters, not only were they useless against him, but could even be used by him to slowly kill those monsters!

"I've heard of this Evil God's Mask in the past, but I didn't think it still existed. Its life-saving effect is indeed unparalleled. The Evil God was a true god in the ancient era, and died in the war between the Gods and Demons. Today, the Moon God Clan are the only remaining descendants of gods, but their power is far from that of a true god. With the Evil God's Mask, you won't even have to fear the attack of a Moon God. With this mask, you'll never have to worry about being insta-killed every again." Qi Yue said in his mind, her voice full of admiration and envy. Going into the Lunar Sky Hell should have been an inescapable pit of despair for him,

but instead he obtained the Pisces Orb, became the successor of the Feng Chen Sect, received the Evil God's Mask and escaped that inescapable place... in just one short month, he had found the Gemini Orb, Sagittarius Orb, Cancer Orb and Pisces Orb... the Forgotten Continent was incredibly large, and all of these God Orbs were not in ordinary places. This guy's luck was simply... overwhelming.

"Little master, quickly ask him if the Heaven's Secrets Sect still exists, and where to find them!" Qi Yue told Ling Chen.

"Heaven's Secrets Sect?" Ling Chen asked.

"Back then, the Night Demon Clan had three infamous sages: the Heaven Sage, Hatred Sage and Earth Sage. The Hatred Sage was the founder of the Feng Chen Sect. The Heaven Sage was the founder of the Heaven's Secrets Sect. The Heaven Sage was the head of the Three Sages, and was said to know many divine and heavenly secrets, as well as predict the future. If you can find the Heaven's Secrets Sect, they might be able to help you find the other God Orbs and Saint Orbs. This way, it'll take a lot less time to find all of the Orbs." Qi Yue explained.

"Wait, so the Three Sages, as well as the Feng Chen Sect, are part of the Night Demon Clan?"

"That's right. However, after hearing that the Night Demon Clan was losing to the Moon God Clan, the Three Sages decided to leave. The Three Sages of the Night Demon Clan are very old names though; these Three Sages have long since died, and the only ones remaining are their descendants or successors, who do not belong

to the Night Demon Clan. As the successor of the Feng Chen Sect, perhaps Xiao Feng Chen knows something about the Heaven's Secrets Sect."

Ling Chen nodded, and put away the Evil God's Mask, and said to Xiao Feng Chen, "I'll definitely take good care of this mask, and won't hand it over to anyone or let it be stolen. By the way, big brother Xiao, before you were locked in the Lunar Sky Hell, did you know of a 'Heaven's Secrets Sect'?"

"Heaven's Secrets Sect?" Xiao Feng Chen looked at him with suspicion, "What do you want with the Heaven's Secrets Sect?"

"There are some things that I want to find that are scattered throughout the Forgotten Continent, so I want to find someone from the Heaven's Secrets Sect to help me locate them." Ling Chen replied.

"Ah..." Xiao Feng Chen looked into the distance, and said after thinking for a while, "Since my Feng Chen Sect has not perished, the Heaven's Secrets Sect should still be around as well. However, because there are too many people looking for them, wanting to know "Heaven's Secrets", they've hidden themselves from the rest of the world. Unless they want to be found, it's absolutely impossible to find them. Ai, who knows if that old codger is still alive. Since you're part of my Feng Chen Sect, I'll help you look for him. Perhaps he already knows that I've returned to the Forgotten Continent, and will come to find me... you three bitches from the Moon God Clan, just you wait until I find you and use the "Pleasure to Death" Curse on you for three days and three nights."

After cursing at the three Moon Goddesses, Xiao Feng Chen's expression became wistful, and said while sighing, "I wonder how the Night Demon Clan's doing now. When the Night Emperor died, his only descendant disappeared-potentially done in by the Moon God Clan. Having lost their leader, the Night Demon Clan gradually began to disperse, and in the end the remnants of their forces hid in the darkness, unable to fight against the Moon God Clan anymore. They could only hide defensively like a turtle, and would only launch sneak attacks on the Moon God Palace when the Moon Goddesses were not there. Heaven's Secrets Sect, Feng Chen Sect and Earth Fiend Sect also dispersed. It seems that right now, the Night Demon Clan is still hiding in the darkness, but sooner or later the Moon God Clan will probably destroy them once and for all."

"What is the Night Demon Clan like?" Ling Chen asked.

"The Night Demon Clan is... cheh, boy, why are you asking so much?!" Just as Xiao Feng Chen was about to reply to him, he decided against it, "The Night Demon Clan has nothing to do with me now, and has even less to do with you. Although it was once on the same footing as the Moon God Clan, now it's just a clan that's about to go extinct. I'll keep in mind your request about the Heaven's Secrets Sect. After being locked in that damn place for 1,000 years, I should go and properly explore the Forgotten Continent now, and visit some of those old monsters if they're still alive."

Xiao Feng Chen looked at Ling Chen seriously, before waving, "Boy, if fate ordains it, we'll meet again. I hope that by the next time I see you, you'll already have Intermediate Level Feng Chen Curses."

After he finished speaking, his whole figure turned blurry, and disappeared with a ‘whoosh’. Xiao Feng Chen had disappeared without even giving Ling Chen a chance to say goodbye.

Chapter 271 - Qi Qi's Lecture

With the Feng Chen Technique and Broken Shadow, even Ling Chen's Movement Speed was above 1,000-with those two skills, Xiao Feng Chen, that old monster who had lived for over 2,000 years, disappeared in a flash. Ling Chen looked around, but couldn't even see figure anymore. This speed was almost like that of the Lucky Cat's.

There were still many things that Ling Chen wanted to ask Xiao Feng Chen about, but it seemed that he had lost this chance. Who knew when he would meet him again. However, he believed that with Xiao Feng Chen's temperament, as well as the Feng Chen Sect's abilities, his name would soon resound across all the land.

His adventure in the Lunar Sky Hell did not cause him any loss, but instead resulted in him gaining much... the Pisces Orb, the Feng Chen Sect's profession and the Evil God's Mask. Opening the Equipment Rankings, the Evil God's Mask was, unsurprisingly, at the top. There were only four pieces of equipment on the Equipment Rankings currently-and they all belonged to him.

Although the entire China server was used to Ling Chen incredible feats, but the appearance of a Heaven's End grade equipment appearing at this stage of the game once again sent waves throughout all of China. After all, Heaven's End grade and Celestial grade were on a completely different level. It was already hard for the players to believe that Celestial grade equipment had appeared so early on, much less Heaven's End grade. However, Ling Chen did not care about any of this. After escaping from the Lunar Sky Hell, he had made up his mind about something-that there was no such thing as 'absolutes' in this world. After all, he

had escaped from the Lunar Sky Hell that was said to be inescapable in just half a day or so.

As such, he was even more determined about reviving Xi Ling. Even if it didn't seem like there was much hope, he would not give up no matter what.

Every second he wasted resulted in Xi Ling drawing closer to a permanent death. As such, he decided to stop dallying. He glanced at the Player Level Rankings, then immediately closed it. Until he reached the Vermillion Bird City, he would not be stopping to train. This meant that he would be left far behind on the Player Level Rankings... but how could something as trifling as levels compare to Xi Ling's life?

Ling Chen took out a teleport scroll for the Cloud River Town and shattered it.

Accidentally entering the Fairy Realm actually resulted in the distance between him and the Vermillion Bird City being cut in half. Although he knew that the Fairies did not have ill intent, and that their actions were spurred by their blind and absolute faith in Nature, before he had entered the Lunar Sky Hell, he was filled with anger towards them. However, after coming out from the Lunar Sky Hell, these emotions had disappeared-after all, he had received much from going into the Lunar Sky Hell. While thinking of the Fairy Clan, he couldn't help but think of Ying Xue...

According to the Fairy Clan's rules, because of him, would that Fairy girl really...

Never mind. Ling Chen decided that he would have nothing to do with the Fairies in future, so he wouldn't think about such things.

Ling Chen bought another mount at the Cloud River Town-a Cloud Stepping Mare, of course. Riding on the mount, he continued to speed towards the south. With the Feng Chen Technique, his Movement Speed had greatly increased, greatly reducing the time it would take him to reach the Vermillion Bird City.

A few days later.

Yawn~~~~~~

Xiao Qi got up from her bed, and lazily stretched, which accentuated her curves. She cupped her breasts in her hand, cheekily saying to herself, "Hehe, which lucky guy in future will get to enjoy you guys?"

Xiao Qi was still young, but her body was already quite mature. Her figure was comparable to Mu Bing Yao's, and she was especially proud of her breasts-they were large and perky, and greatly surpassed Su'Er's and Yun Meng Xin's. When she was older, perhaps they would be even bigger than Mu Bing Yao's. She knew how alluring her body was, and would often stand in front of the mirror admiring herself.

"It's nearly noon again, what should I eat? I'll go ask big sister Meng Xin and the others."

Right next to her room was Su'Er's room. When Xiao Qi walked in, she saw Su'Er sitting on her bed with a dark grey jacket spread over her legs-it was evidently a man's jacket. Her hands were on the jacket, and she was staring into space while thinking about something. When she saw Xiao Qi walk in, she hurriedly tried to hide the jacket behind her.

"Haha! Caught you!" Xiao Qi skipped over and rubbed Su'Er's bright pink cheeks with her hands, "Our little Su Su's thinking about that handsome and cool hero who descended from the sky to save her, right?"

"That... um... I... I just..." Su'Er's face became even more pink, and she lowered her head as she tried to say something.

Xiao Qi grabbed her hands and smiled, "You don't need to be so shy in front of big sister me. Look at you, ever since that day you've been spacing out often-even an idiot can tell what you're thinking about. You know, Su Su, if you're so enamoured with him, why don't you try to find him? You know what he looks like, so with your dad and uncle's authority, you should be able to find him."

Su'Er gently shook her head, hesitantly saying, "I-I'm afraid that I might disturb him."

Xiao Qi exasperatedly replied, "Su Su, you're being so dumb! Idiot! How could you think that! If you really like him and want to meet him, then go and find him. After spending some time with

him for a while... ah, it won't take very long, since our little Su Su's so cute-any man would like Su Su. And then, you can be with your beloved hero... wow! Wouldn't that be wonderful. But if you don't go to find him, and just think about it, then perhaps you'll never be able to be with him."

Su'Er bit her lips, and said in a small voice, "But, maybe he already has someone he loves... and there's also... also Xuanyuan Xue Yi."

"Aiya! Su Su!" Xiao Qi sternly cut her off, as if she was an adult lecturing a child. She put her hands on Su'Er's shoulders, and earnestly said, "If I were you, and found the person of my dreams, I would do everything I could to win his heart, but..." Xiao Qi gave a somewhat sorrowful laugh, "But I don't have that right, nor do I have any hope for that. Because if I went with my selfish desires to be with him, I would only hurt him. However, Su Su, you're different. You have that right, and you also have what I want the most-something I can never have, so what's holding you back? Even if that person already has someone, if you really like him, then just make him yours. Su Su's so pretty, cute and gentle, who can compare to our Su Su? Only idiots wouldn't want Su Su. Don't worry about Xuanyuan Xue Yi-look, Meng Xin's facing an even bigger problem, but she refuses to give in. You should be brave like big sister Meng Xin, alright?"

"Qi Qi..." Su'Er raised her head, looking at Xiao Qi through misty eyes, "En, I'll listen to you. I'll be brave... Qi Qi also needs to be brave. We're going to be good sisters forever."

"I've also been very brave. I enjoy my food more than anyone,

sleep better than anyone and laugh more than anyone, so I have the right to lecture you all." Xiao Qi laughed, "Alright, let's not talk about this anymore. Let's go get big sister Meng Xin and Mu Bing Yao and go out to eat together. I want to eat some yummy pork today! Let's go!"

Xiao Qi and Su'Er found that Mu Bing Yao's room was vacant, so they went to find Yun Meng Xin.Yun Meng Xin was sitting at her desk, and even though she was sitting, her figure looked as lovely as ever-she was slim at all the right places, and had curves at all the right places. She seemed to be writing something.

"Big sis, where's big sister Mu Bing Yao?" Xiao Qi asked as she walked into the room with Su'Er, and looked down to see what she was writing. In the room, Yun Meng Xin was only wearing a loose-fitting sleeping gown, which revealed her soft, supple curves.

"She just went out, and won't be coming back very soon. Are you hungry?" Yun Meng Xin asked as she put down her pen.

"Went out again... big sister Mu Bing Yao's quite mysterious, always disappearing. Ah, big sister Meng Xin, what were you writing?" Xiao Qi curiously asked.

Yun Meng Xin thought for a while, then replied, "I'll talk about this stuff with you in the game. Let's go eat first."

When Yun Meng Xin turned around, she had already put on a veil, and only her beautiful eyes could be seen. However, her eyes were then covered by a large sunhat. Covering up her face entirely

would seem strange to most people-most girls who were pretty wanted to be noticed and seen by everyone... however, being too beautiful could only bring trouble. When she was younger, she didn't notice anything, but she gradually became aware of the looks in men's eyes when they saw her. Afterwards, because of the situation with Long Tian Yun, her whole life had nearly been turned upside down. From then onwards, she always chose to cover up her face, despite people looking at her weirdly.

The three girls finished their preparations and prepared to leave. However, just as they reached the door, Xiao Qi suddenly stopped, and her face went pale, then bright red.

"Ah... Qi Qi, your hand's so hot... ah?!"

From when Xiao Qi's hand began changing temperature, her face already became terrifyingly red. She staggered, then fell backwards.

Chapter 272 - Hidden Profession Rankings

Yun Meng Xin and Su'Er hurriedly caught Xiao Qi and held her together. Her body was extremely hot, as if her blood was boiling. A human body should not be able to reach such a terrifying temperature.

Su'Er became incredibly distraught, and almost started crying, "Qi Qi, are you alright? Qi Qi..."

"We need to quickly take her to the bathhouse, her illness has flared up again, hurry!" Yun Meng Xin quickly assessed the situation, and decided what they should do. However, she felt great pain in her heart... the last time her illness had flared up was only half a month ago... before, it was only once every three to six months, could it be that...

Yun Meng Xin and Su'Er finally carried Xiao Qi to the bathhouse, and put the unconscious Xiao Qi into a bath tub. At this moment, Xiao Qi's body temperature was already so high that the sweat on her body began to evaporate into steam.

"Su Su, quickly go and get people to bring the prepared ice. Tell them to come as soon as possible!" Yun Meng Xin called out as she turned on the taps to their maximum.

Very soon, the people in charge of their protection rushed in, and opened several large storage containers and poured the ice inside into the bath tub. Soon, the water and ice covered every part of Xiao Qi's body below her head. The look of pain on Xiao Qi's face

gradually began to subside, and her face began to return to its normal colour. However, Xiao Qi still remained unconscious.

"Immediately tell her father and big brother." Yun Meng Xin ordered as she looked at Xiao Qi, surrounded by the ice in the water. Within her eyes, there was deep pain. Beside her, Su'Er's tears were pouring out, her hands stroking Xiao Qi's face, praying that her temperature would quickly fall.

Everyone else wordlessly retreated outside, leaving just Yun Meng Xin and Su'Er to look after the unconscious Xiao Qi.

Without anyone else around, Su'Er started crying out loud, "Big sister Meng Xin, Qi Qi, her... wuu... her illness is becoming more and more frequent... last time was only half a month ago... I'm afraid... I'm afraid that Qi Qi will... wuuu..."

Yun Meng Xin held Su'Er's hand, gently saying, "Don't worry, Qi Qi is a strong girl, so she'll be fine... she'll definitely be fine."

Yun Meng Xin closed her eyes and wiped away the tears gathering at the corners of her eyes. Luckily her illness had flared up before they had left; if this had happened while they were outside, and they couldn't bring down her temperature in time, the consequences would have been much worse... every time this happened, Xiao Qi was in mortal danger. No human would sustain their body being at such a temperature for more than a few minutes.

The temperature of the entire bathhouse was decreasing, and

Yun Meng Xin and Su'Er started to feel somewhat cold. Within the bathtub, Xiao Qi grimaced, and moved around uncomfortably.

"It hurts so much... big brother Ling Tian... save me..."

Xiao Qi unconsciously cried out. Her cries of pain caused Yun Meng Xin and Su'Er's hearts to ache, but the name she called out caused them to freeze.

Su'Er stared in shock, seeming to be lost in thought, then gently said after a long while, "Big sister Meng Xin, Qi Qi..."

"Shh, don't say anything." Yun Meng Xin gently shook her head. Under her veil, it was impossible to see what her expression was like.

After ten minutes or so, Xiao Qi's face had become completely pale. Yun Meng Xin reached over and felt her forehead, and found that her temperature had returned to normal. She let out a breath in relief, "Su Su, let's drain all the water."

After letting out all of the water, there were only some pieces of ice left. The two girls helped Xiao Qi take off her completely soaked clothing, and wiped her body dry. They put dry clothes on her, then carried her to her room, and placed in her in her bed. The two girls weren't in the mood for anything else, so they stayed by her bed taking care of her. After a while, a healthy glow returned to Xiao Qi's face, and she began to wake up.

“Qi Qi!!” Seeing that Xiao Qi had woken up, Su’Er called out with tears in her eyes.

“Are you feeling any better? Are you feeling hot or cold?” Yun Meng Xin caringly asked.

Every time Xiao Qi’s illness flared up, it would take her at least one week to recover. Normal fevers would cause people to become extremely weak, and this was much more so for Xiao Qi’s illness. Although it was not for a long time, but the harm it caused to her body was severe.

Xiao Qi shook her head, and her pale lips gently smiled, “I’m alright now, you don’t need to worry about me… I’m sorry, I’ve caused you all to worry about me again.”

“Qi Qi, it’s great that you’re fine now. You have to look after yourself.” Su’Er’s entire face was covered with tears, and sniffled as she grabbed Xiao Qi’s hand. Every time this happened, she would always cry like a child.

Xiao Qi smiled, “Don’t cry, Su Su, I’ll be fine. Look, I’m completely alright now.” She looked up at the ceiling, muttering, “Why… was it so soon this time… big sister Meng Xin, can you please keep this a secret from dad and big brother?” I don’t want them to worry even more about me.”

“I already sent people to tell them as soon as it happened, and they should be on their way.” Yun Meng Xin sighed, “Qi Qi, last time this happened was about half a month ago, right?”

Xiao Qi nodded

“Before, the shortest period of time was 3 months, why was it just half a month this time…” Speaking to here, Meng Xin’s heart began to ache again, and she was unable to keep talking. With the time in between each time this happened decreasing, that also meant that Xiao Qi was becoming closer and closer to death… when she was born, doctors said that she would not live past 20. Right now, Xiao Qi was almost 18 years old.

“Don’t tell Ruo Ruo or big brother Ling Tian about this, okay?” Xiao Qi weakly pleaded.

Yun Meng Xin knew what she was thinking about, and nodded, “Su Su and I won’t tell them. Don’t talk anymore; make sure you have a good rest. Su Su, let’s go make some porridge to help Xiao Qi get better.”

“En… Qi Qi, rest well. Uncle and the others will be here soon.”

Ling Chen opened the Player Level Rankings… as he had expected, his name was no longer on there. The new number 1 ranking was now the Sword Emperor, who was now LV22, while he himself was still LV20.

“As expected, one week without training at all has resulted in this.” Ling Chen wistfully said to himself. He closed the rankings

and took out his map, finding his location. He was now in the Southern Region of the Forgotten Continent. He was probably the only person in China who would be able to travel safely from Eastern Region of the Forgotten Continent to the Southern Region. Although he was just travelling through these regions, he had encountered many dangers. After all, these places were all territories of high level monsters.

With the Feng Chen Technique, the time it would take for him to reach the Vermillion Bird City had decreased significantly. In about another week, he would be able to reach his destination.

Xi Ling, hold on, I'm nearly there. When the time comes, even if I have to kill the Vermillion Bird, I'll revive you!

Ling Chen had fully committed his time to hurrying towards the Vermillion Bird City. Whenever he entered the territories of monsters, he would use the Cloud Stepping Mare to charge through as fast as possible. Whenever he saw that there was an extremely dangerous region marked on the map, he would activate his [Broken Shadow] and breeze through that place. It was impossible for the monsters lurking there to even catch a glimpse of his shadow.

With Leng'Er accompanying him, he didn't feel too bored. After all, every day he would wrack his brain to think of new stories for her to listen to.

Today, Leng'Er was hugging a white rabbit doll with long ears. She was sitting back to back with Ling Chen on his Cloud Stepping Mare, listening to his story with her eyes closed. One day, when

her favourability towards him rose to a certain degree, she probably would be willing hug onto Ling Chen from behind, instead of just sitting back to back with him.

"Today I'm going to continue to tell the story of Snow White and her three disciples who headed towards the West to retrieve the Buddhist Scriptures." [TLN: Ling Chen pretty much just combined Snow White and Journey to the West lol] Ling Chen cleared his throat, spent a few seconds plotting out this ridiculous story, and started to narrate, "Yesterday, we were up to when the senior disciple, Calabash Brother, killed the White Bone Demon who had turned into the Handsome Pan. Because of a misunderstanding, Snow White chased him away, leaving her with only the second disciple Ultraman and Rukawa Kaede..." [TLN: pretty much every character is from a different story]

"Big brother, big brother are you there?"

Just as Ling Chen started to tell the story, Shui Ruo's voice sounded out from the communication device. Ling Chen immediately replied, "What is it, Ruo Ruo?"

"Tian Tian said she's already LV10, so she'll be able to leave the Novice Village by the afternoon. Do you want to go and pick her up together? I'm afraid she might get lost by herself." Shui Ruo said.

"Alright. When you're there, let me know, and I'll head over immediately... oh and by the way, what's Tian Tian's in-game name?" Ling Chen asked. He suddenly realised he still didn't know Tian Tian's in-game know: Tian Tian had never told him, and whenever he asked her about her progress in the game, she would

always reply “not telling”. Come to think of it, Tian Tian had used much less time than he had in leaving the Novice Village. This was particularly surprising, because she was just a kid and her time in the game was restricted by him and Shui Ruo: at most, she would only play 10 hours per day.

“It’s ‘Tian Tian Tian Tian’.” Shui Ruo replied with an amused voice.

“This name…” Ling Chen didn’t know what to say.

“She originally wanted to use ‘Tian Tian’, but it was already taken. ‘Tian Tian Tian’ was also taken, so she had to go with ‘Tian Tian Tian Tian’.” Shui Ruo said while laughing, “Tian Tian’s already LV10, but she said that she still hasn’t finished a quest in the Novice Village, so she’s coming out after a few hours after she’s finished that. Oh, and something’s a bit strange-big sister Meng Xin and the others still haven’t logged on, even though we said we’d meet at 1:30pm.”

“Haha, maybe they all had a nap after lunch and overslept. There’s a town about 10 kilometres ahead; after I get the teleport scroll from there, I’ll come over. Wait for me.”

After talking to Shui Ruo, Ling Chen continued to head towards the town at his maximum speed. A minute later, a system announcement rang out.

“Ding… China Region Announcement! There are now three Hidden Professions that have been unlocked by players, so the

Hidden Profession Rankings will be released. Players will be able to look at the rankings momentarily."

This system announcement came as a shock to Ling Chen... Hidden Profession Rankings? There was such a ranking? Three Hidden Professions had been unlocked... two belonged to him, so who was it who had also unlocked a Hidden Profession?

"Ding... your hidden profession 'Feng Chen Curse Zanni' is ranked second in the China Hidden Profession Rankings, do you wish to hide your personal information?"

En, if the Feng Chen Curse Zanni was ranked second, then the top ranked hidden profession should be the Ling Tian Battle Soul. Ling Chen thought for a while, then replied, "Hide it."

Everyone knew of his Ling Tian Battle Soul profession, so he would only display his personal information next to that profession. By hiding the fact that he had two professions, he would avoid a lot of trouble and could surprise his enemies with his second profession when the occasion called for it.

"Ding... your hidden profession 'Ling Tian Battle Soul' is ranked third in the China Hidden Profession Rankings, do you wish to hide your personal information?"

This came as a massive surprise to Ling Chen... ranked third?!

Not first?!

If the Feng Chen Curse Zanni, second place, was ranked above the Ling Tian Battle Soul, third place, then what was the top ranked hidden profession? And who did it belong to?

“No need!”

Shortly after…

“Ding… China Region Announcement! The China Hidden Profession Rankings have been released. Players can now look at the rankings.”

Ling Chen immediately opened the Hidden Profession Rankings. He was very interested in the top-ranked profession, as well as the one who owned that profession.

The Feng Chen Sect caused many experts to tremble with fear, and Xiao Feng Chen had even claimed that the Feng Chen Sect’s profession was the most powerful one in the entire Forgotten Continent. The Ling Tian Battle Soul came from power inherited from the incredibly powerful War God, who was indisputably the most powerful out of all of the powers at the Hall of Heroic Spirits. Plus, the War God was the human who was closest to reaching the Saint Destroyer Level… and yet, a player had received a profession that was even stronger than both… what sort of profession was it? And who was it?

China Hidden Profession Rankings (according to the overall power of the professions):

Rank 1: Great Demon Queen (self-named), Owner: Tian Tian Tian Tian, Profession Type: Summoner

Rank 2: Feng Chen Curse Zanni, Owner: Information Hidden, Profession Type: Mental

Rank 3: Ling Tian Battle Soul (self-named), Owner: Ling Tian, Profession Type: Warrior

Chapter 273 - The Demon Queen Who Walked Out Of The Novice Village

The two hidden professions that Ling Chen had were indeed ranked second and third, and as he had expected, Yun Meng Xin, Su Er and Shui Ruo's three hidden jobs were not listed. Moreover, the name of the top ranked hidden profession left him dumbstruck.

If not for him talking with Shui Ruo beforehand, he would have been puzzled over the identity of this secretive expert who gave him or herself such a second-rated name, blatantly tarnishing such a hidden profession.

But, this name..... its obviously Tian Tian's nickname!

The top ranked profession... the profession named "Demon Queen" belonged to none other than Tian Tian!

This simply didn't make sense!!

"It's really Tian Tian's in-game name. Big brother, the list that you saw just now, Tian Tian was actually placed first! Her profession seems to be even better than big brother's professions, and the name of the job also seems to match Tian Tian's style. Tian Tian must have had a mysterious encounter when she was at the Novice Village." Shui Ruo laughed as she replied.

Indeed, the name "Demon Queen" indeed matched Tian Tian's

nature very well, and she had been self-proclaiming to be the Demon Queen ever since she met them. However, the ranking of this job was unexpectedly placed ahead of Ling Tian Battle Soul and Feng Chen Curse Zanni... What was going on? Was there some sort of mistake?

"Oh right big brother, why is it that mine, Meng Xin, and Su Su's job were not reflected on the list? Ours were indeed hidden professions."

"This is inevitable." answered Ling Chen, "It was stated very clearly in the system announcement that the hidden profession must be obtained by the player themselves. So to speak, if the hidden profession isn't obtained through hard work or one's own abilities, but through scrolls, they will not be recognised. The Ling Tian Battle Soul is the power that was refined and passed on, named by myself, and also my own unique job, while the power of Feng Chen Curse Zanni was also passed down to me, making me the successor of the Feng Chen Sect. But the scroll of yours, Meng Xin and the others were obtained from me and not through your own hard work, therefore not being recognised."

Returning to the topic, Sword Emperor's "Blade Spirit" profession was definitely a hidden profession, so why didn't it make it to the list then?

Could it be because her "Blade Spirit" is actually not a true profession? It's true that what she uses are not abilities from the game, but the real world's sword techniques.....

"Ahh, if that's the case..... it seems that I will need to put in

some hard work then. So that means, Tian Tian's job was also obtained by herself? She didn't even mention this to me before."

"Let's wait till later to properly interrogate her when it is time to pick her up."

Demon Queen... only Tian Tian would give a profession such a name.

In the meantime, while Ling Chen was still being puzzled and surprised, the name "Tian Tian Tian Tian" had already spread throughout all of China.

There were two hidden professions that all the people in China knew of: one was Ling Tian's 'Ling Tian Battle Soul', the other one was the Sword Emperor's 'Blade Spirit', so the 'Blade Spirit' not making it into the list caused an innumerable number of players to discuss among themselves. However, all this could not be compared to the wave of sensational reactions caused by the unfamiliar name with the top ranked profession... and the reason why there was such a big reaction was solely due to the name being that unfamiliar; if it was Ling Tian's Battle Soul being ranked number one, then nobody would be surprised. Similarly shocking everyone was how the terrifyingly strong Ling Tian, who completely defeated the Sword Emperor, his Ling Tian Battle Soul was only ranked third, and no one had even heard of the 'Feng Chen Curse Zanni' before.

A mere Hidden Profession Rankings had led players to deeply feel the existence of hidden talents in such a big country like China.

It was time for a “break” again. As Ling Chen finished up with his preparations, he returned to Azure Dragon City and found Shui Ruo who had been waiting for him for a long time.

“Meng Xin and the rest are not here yet?” Ling Chen asked as he was surprised to see that Shui Ruo was alone. It was already 4 in the afternoon, and during this time of the day in the past, there was never once where they were not online before.

“En, they’re not here yet; maybe something came up for them. Tian Tian said that she will be out of Novice Village soon, so let’s go over to the Azure Dragon Square to pick her up first.”

Suspicion aroused in his heart as he nodded after hearing what she said, pulling Shui Ruo’s hand. Wearing a normal mask, he said, “Let’s go. After we pick her up, I will interrogate her properly.”

Very soon they were at the Azure Dragon Square. While waiting, Ling Chen looked at Mu Bing Yao’s status..... she was not online either. After thinking for a while, he picked up the phone, dialed up a person, and asked in a low voice, “Where is Bing Yao?”

“Doing her normal weekend mission. Do you need her?”

“Contact her and tell her to go back to Yun Meng Xin’s side and quickly see if something has happened.”

“Yes!”

Just as the phone call ended, notifications of Yun Meng Xin, Xiao Qi, and Su'Er being online appeared almost at the same time.

"Big brother, big sister Meng Xin and the rest have come." Shui Ruo informed Ling Chen and immediately contacted Yun Meng Xin, "Big sister Meng Xin, why did all of you arrive here so late? Did something happen over at your side?"

"...En en, it's okay, me and big brother are at the Azure Dragon Square.A fter a while, we will be bringing back a new member for Heart's Dream. I'm sure all of you will like her. Ah, she is already out; wait for us, we will be heading back immediately."

Ending down the call, Shui Ruo pulled Ling Chen, smiling as she walked over towards a little girl who just appeared at the revival point and was currently glancing around.

Tian Tian was wearing a whole body of beginners' equipment..... that's right, beginner's equipment from head to toe, exaggeratingly plain and simple, with a light yellow butterfly mask on her face, and also cleverly concealed her name. However, Shui Ruo could still recognise her from a glance. Being together from dawn to dusk, she would always be hugging her while she goes to sleep. The way Shui Ruo treated her was the same as how a mother would treat her daughter. Tian Tian also noticed them, and it was obvious that she recognised them immediately. Of course, even if Shui Ruo didn't expose her face, the aura that she released could not attained by normal people.

“Big sister!” Tian Tian unhesitatingly jumped onto Shui Ruo, hugging her waist as she happily laughed. Shui Ruo smiled while saying, “Tian Tian, how did you know it was me, aren’t you scared that you will hug the wrong person?”

“That’s impossible!” Tian Tian replied confidently, “I will never be mistaken of big sister’s smell. Ah, and also big brother big bad guy, big sister told me that you are that Ling Tian who is the strongest, so you have to protect me in the future and not let anybody bully me-this was what you said.”

Ling Chen shrugged his shoulders, sarcastically replying, “Your Great Demon Queen Highness, it’s already very good if you do not bully other people; who would even dare bully you? Once you show your name, who wouldn’t revere you. I bet that the whole world already knows that you with name of “Tian Tian Tian Tian” has the most powerful job in the whole of China.

“Aiya!” Tian Tian got out of Shui Ruo’s embrace, slanting her head while saying, “I’m also a bit confused. Before, the voice told me that I owned the strongest job …… how strange! It even allowed me to give my own job a name. But all of this differed from what big sister told me; she said that I must go over to Azure Dragon City to choose a profession, and that there are only warrior, archer and so on, up to seven types of professions. However, when I just reached LV10 and still had not left the Novice Village, my profession appeared by itself, and the name was also different from what big sister had mentioned. Big sister, why is it like that?”

Ling Chen and Shui Ruo were both stupefied.

Ling Chen glanced around him, and lowered his head as he asked, “So this profession of yours, how did you get it? Was it because you received some special mission, or because some special person gave you this profession to change to?”

“Nope,” Tian Tian shook her head, “It really just appeared suddenly by itself. It was not long when I reached LV10, a voice told me that I already changed to a special job and allowed me to name my job, after that, I just name it “Demon Queen” because I really am a Demon Queen!”

“……”

Ling Chen was unable to understand and accept what she had just said. The normal rule was that one had to go to a main city or Royal City’s Class Change Hall to undergo a change of profession. As for special and hidden professions, both required a medium-either an event or a NPC-to do the job change. It was impossible that a hidden profession would appear automatically once a certain level is reached. If that were the case, then hidden professions would be extremely common all over the world.

“Try to recall, when you received your hidden profession, what were you doing? Was there anything special that happened in your surrounding? Or when you were at the Novice Village, did anything special happen?” Ling Chen asked as he frowned.

Tian Tian thought about it serious, but after thinking for a long time, she still shook her head, “I was fighting goblins, but I never

left the place because I needed more than 100 goblins to complete the mission. After a short while, I received my current job. As for anything special that happened, there was none. I always follow what big sister tells me to do; if she doesn't allow me to go certain places, I would definitely not go there."

"En, Tian Tian is so obedient" Shui Ruo smiled lightly as she stroked Tian Tian's face.

"Hehe, of course, I listen to big sister the most." Tian Tian's eyelashes curled up as she started laughing.

This is strange, I have never heard of someone automatically receiving a hidden profession, furthermore this profession is actually stronger than my Ling Tian Battle Soul and Feng Chen Curse Zanni; no matter how I think about it, it is just not possible. What's going on? Could it be that the creator of Mystic Moon has suddenly gone mad? Or could it be that Tian Tian hit the jackpot unknowingly?

"Tian Tian, I will bring you over and introduce to you the few big sisters that I have told you about, they are all very pretty and gentle. Tian Tian will surely like them, and they will surely like Tian Tian as well." Shui Ruo smiled lightly as she held Tian Tian's little hand. The Azure Dragon Square was bustling with noise, so Shui Ruo didn't like this place, and she was also afraid that the overly dense crowd would knock the little Tian Tian over, so she hoped to leave this place as soon as possible.

"En, sure, sure." Tian Tian would never reject anything that Shui Ruo says, even if it's bringing her to meet unfamiliar people.

Ling Chen and Shui Ruo were walking on both sides of Tian Tian, protecting her as they continued down the path, with Ling Chen staying in a state of deep thought throughout. Once they reached the residential area of the north district, the place was more quiet, and Ling Chen finally stopped in his tracks, unable able to hold it in anymore, “Tian Tian, can you show me your profession?”

Chapter 274 - Demon Queen

"Okay okay!" Tian Tian did not oppose one bit after hearing Ling Chen's sudden request and even seemed eager to show Ling Chen and Shui Ruo her profession. She brought out her stats panel and shared it with Ling Chen and Shui Ruo, "Big sister, big brother, see it for yourself, this profession is so fun!"

Both Ling Chen and Shui Ruo looked towards Tian Tian's bizarre profession that was filled with mystical colours simultaneously.

[Demon Queen]: Player "Tian Tian Tian Tian" exclusive profession, this special profession was awakened through player Tian Tian Tian Tian's innate potential and was subsequently named by her. It is a powerful Summoner and Support class profession. No previous records regarding this profession was found in China.

[Profession Bonus Stats]: Spirit +20, Luck +20

[Profession Passive Abilities]: 1 Strength = 1 Attack Power, 1 Constitution = 10HP + 1 Defence, 1 Agility = 1 Accuracy + 1 Evasion, 1 Spirit = 20 Magic + 5 Magic Attack Power. With every increase in level, HP +10, MP +20, +5 AP, bonus Spirit +2.

"This special profession was awakened through player Tian Tian Tian Tian's innate potential..... no previous record regarding this profession was found in China" ..... This sentence nearly blinded Ling Chen. In terms of potential, Ling Chen felt that the number of

people who could contend with him were very few. Even so, his innate potential did not awaken a hidden profession, yet Tian Tian..... Other than having an extremely big appetite and being extremely playful, she was just a little girl who didn't have any special traits. Just by relying on her "innate potential", she obtained a special profession that was far above his strongest professions. Moreover, there were no records of this profession in China.....

This defied all logic!

Right now, Ling Chen was extremely sure that the creator behind Mystic Moon was definitely mad!

Additionally, what made Ling Chen astonished was the profession's bonus stats and passive abilities. In actual fact, in terms of the bonus stats, this profession was not considered a lot as compared to his Ling Tian Battle Soul and Feng Chen Curse Zanni which gave far more stats. However, among the bonus points for the profession bonus, half of it went to Luck..... a surprising total of 20 points!

A normal player would not be able to attain such an amount of Luck in their entire lives!

Even for him, he only had 12 points right now even after equipping his Insignia, bonuses from special missions, and bonuses from Holy Spirit's Aura.

Furthermore, for the profession's passive abilities, although the

strength value was lower than other professions, but the effect of the Spirit stat was actually more than 2x compared to the other professions: one point of Spirit could have a bonus of a full 20 MP and 5 points of Magic Attack Power. For a normal Mage profession, they would only receive 10 MP and 2 points of Magic Attack Power! At the same time for every increase in level, there would be 2 additional points on the Spirit bonus. So as to speak, with this profession, even if Tian Tian's Spirit was only half of what a normal Mage profession had, her Magic Attack Power would exceedingly make up for this.

Just the profession description, profession bonus stats and profession passive abilities had already caused Ling Chen to feel secretly astonished. He swallowed a mouth of saliva as he looked towards the profession's abilities..... With a glance, the profession that had only just awakened was already surprisingly filled with many profession abilities.

[Summon Little White]: Special ability, can't be levelled up. Summons Little White to concentrate its attack to strike a single target or disperse the attack to strike multiple targets. Little White has very strong attacking power, and is able to blast enemies away. The number of simultaneous summons is equivalent to level/5 (rounding down to the nearest whole number: levels 5-9 can summon 1, levels 10-14 can summon 2, levels 15-19 can summon 3..... level 100 can summon 20..... level 500 can summon 100..... rank 1000...etc...), disappears after one attack. The attack power is directly proportional to the Summoner's Magic Attack power, the amount of MP consumption is the number of summons x 50, Cooldown time: 10 seconds.

[Summon Little Red]: Special ability, can't be levelled up. Once Little Red appears after the summon, Little Red will start dancing a beautiful dance, and in the process of dancing, a certain amount of HP will be recovered and all abnormal conditions and debuffs will be eliminated. One Little Red can only focus on one target; once the dance finishes or it gets attacked, it will disappear immediately. The number of simultaneous summons is equivalent to level/5, the strength of recovery is directly proportional to the Summoner's Magic Attack Power. The amount of MP consumption is the number of summons x 50, Cooldown time: 10 seconds.

[Summon Little Green]: Special ability, can't be levelled up. Summons Little Green to concentrate its attack to strike a single target or disperse the attack to strike multiple targets. Little Green's attacking power is comparatively weaker, but it will release a frightening poison fog when it attacks which will cause the target to have a high probability of being poisoned. The number of simultaneous summons is equivalent to level/5, and disappears after one attack. The attack power is directly proportional to the Summoner's Magic Attack Power, the amount of MP consumption is the number of summons x 50, Cooldown time: 10 seconds.

[Summon Little Blue]: Special ability, can't be levelled up. Summons Little Blue to run around the Summoner in circles; all the damage inflicted to the Summoner will be transferred

Little Blue. The amount of damage that it can withstand is the amount of HP Little Blue has x the number of Little Blue. The number of simultaneous summons is equivalent to level/5, Little Blue's HP is directly proportional to the Summoner's Magic Attack Power. The amount of MP consumption is the number of summons x 120, Cooldown time: 30 seconds

[Summon Big White]: Special ability, can't be levelled up. Summons Big White to appear, and only one can be summoned at a time. Attack power unknown, summoned duration unknown. It is best not to summon unless in dire straits, or else the consequences will be severe. MP Consumption 12,000, only one can be summoned per day.

Little White..... Little Red..... Little Green..... Little Blue..... Big White.....

Ling Chen's forehead was filled with sweat as he saw the names of the few abilities. Moreover, the effectiveness of the abilities had caused his heart to be unable to not feel appalled. Judging from the abilities, this was no doubt a Summoner profession. With Tian Tian's current level, this profession did not seem to be that strong because out of all of the Summoning abilities that Tian Tian had currently, she could only at most summon two simultaneously..... But the most shocking thing was that the number of summons was directly related to Tian Tian's level, and that an additional one more could be summoned every 5 levels. It did not seem that impressive currently, but once she reached a higher level she could summon a large group all at once. When she reached level 100, a

single ability could even have 20 summons at once..... Furthermore, it was obvious that the summoning abilities did not clash with each other, enabling them to be utilised simultaneously. Therefore when Tian Tian's level became higher and she used all her summoning abilities together, then that scene.....

In addition, the cooldown time for her summoning abilities were ridiculously short – just a short duration of 10 seconds for most of them. Her summons also covered a variety of functions: attack, healing, support and control, which made even Ling Chen feel ashamed.

The last two abilities made him even more surprised.

[Elegy of the Gods]: Special ability, can't be levelled up. When you die, you can choose one target from your surroundings to be in an invincible state where no damage could be inflicted onto them for 60 seconds. Additionally, Physical Attack Power, Magic Attack Power, Attack Speed, Movement Speed, Hit, Critical Hit Rate and Pierce Hit Rate will all be raised by 100%.

[Fury of the Gods]: Special ability, can't be levelled up. The target that kills you will have their level forcefully lowered by three levels and current HP and MP will be reduced by 50%.

These two..... just what abilities are these?

“Haha, how is it, my profession is very fun right? Those summoning abilities are really, extremely fun, next time when we are in the wilderness I will summon Little White, Little Red, Little Green and Little Blue for both of you to see, it’s really very fun.” Tian Tian raised her nose and proudly exclaimed as she saw Ling Chen and Shui Ruo’s shocked expressions. Moreover, she had no idea at all that the profession that she had and the abilities of the profession were extremely astonishing.

“Big brother, Tian Tian’s profession is so powerful. Oh god, it’s really too powerful.” Shui Ruo exclaimed in admiration. Let alone Shui Ruo, even Ling Chen was deeply shocked.

Ling Chen nodded his head while he was still in a state of shock. He now truly understood why this profession was placed above his two professions in the Hidden Profession Ranking. Even though the abilities that this profession had were obtained in its initial stages, yet there were already seven abilities which did not need to be levelled up. The most shocking part was the last two abilities..... Summoner-type professions had the weakest health points among all the other professions and thus would naturally have life-saving abilities such as blink or substitution. He initially thought that Tian Tian’s life-saving ability was the summoning of “Little Blue”, but only when he read till the end did he realise that Tian Tian’s strongest life-saving ability was actually [Fury of the Gods]. Killing her would cause the other party to drop three levels and lose 50% of their current HP and MP; if people knew about the existence of this ability, who would still dare to kill Tian Tian?

Furthermore, Elegy of the Gods and Fury of the Gods..... The names of these two abilities were just too..... too excessive. All the summoning abilities had rather dull names, but the names of the

last two abilities had the word “god” in them, which didn’t make sense. Abilities with this kind of name should only appear on the descendent of a god’s race

No matter from what perspective one looked at it, there was nothing about this profession that was normal.

“En, it’s a very powerful profession. Tian Tian, remember to display your abilities for us to see later. For now, let’s bring you over to meet a few beautiful big sisters.” Ling Chen did not enquire further and brought Tian Tian to continue walking ahead even though he was still filled with doubts. There was only one explanation that he could think of no matter how long he thought about it..... The creator of Mystic Moon was definitely mad!

Ling Chen decided to stop thinking about this and judging from Shui Ruo’s expression, she would definitely get Tian Tian to join Heart’s Dream. Having an oddball who unfathomably had the most powerful profession in China, adding to the fact that such an adorable little girl would be joining, the girls in Heart’s Dream would definitely welcome her with open arms. He just hoped that Tian Tian would not be too playful and mischievous when the time came. As Ling Chen was contemplating in his mind, Qi Yue’s voice sounded out abruptly, “Young master, the little girl that you are pulling along is...?”

Qi Yue’s tone seemed to be quite cautious and suspicious.

“She is another family member of mine, her name is Tian Tian.” Ling Chen answered casually.

“Oh? Your family member…… then I must be thinking too much. I thought that you picked up another impressive little girl from god knows where again. In that case I shall continue with my sleep and not interrupt young master from being intimate with all his close female friends, keke……”

Ling Chen: “……”

In the Lunar Scourge, Qi Yue closed her eyes as she muttered softly to herself, “The humans that came from Earth are the most ordinary kind of life forms; it is not possible for them to possess ‘Godhood’. Ever since the battle of the gods and demons in ancient times, only the Moon God race and Night Demon race possess the bloodline of gods. The ones who possess Godhood had already ceased to exist since a long time ago, I must have sensed wrongly.”

Chapter 275 - Little White, Attack!

Returning back to the small house of Heart's Dream, Yun Meng Xin, Xiao Qi, Su'Er and Mu Bing Yao were all there. When the door opened, Tian Tian popped her head in, taking a glance at the few girls nervously before running in to the equally surprised girls who were looking at her and shouted, "Hello big sister Meng Xin, hello big sister Bing Yao, hello big sister Qi Qi, hello big sister Su Su. I'm called Tian Tian!"

Tian Tian had correctly shouted out the names of all four of the girls and this was of course the credit of Shui Ruo. She had already told Tian Tian the names and characteristics of Meng Xin and the rest beforehand, and had also ingrained it deeply in her memory, so she was not too nervous even when this was the first time they met.

"This unruly little brat, who was so haughty before, has indeed become more likeable after being trained by Shui Ruo." A slight smile surfaced at the corner of Ling Chen's mouth as he thought silently.

Ling Chen could clearly see that the expression of those girls had turned warm and gentle after being greeted by Tian Tian, especially Xiao Qi and Su'Er where their pupils brightened up even more than when they first met Cai'Er. Xiao Qi immediately welcomed Tian Tian, reaching out to her using both her hands, but retracted back. As one could tell, she probably wanted to hold Tian Tian up or clasp her cheeks but was afraid to scare this little girl, so she bent her waist and sized her up intently. She was liking Tian Tian more and more as she looked at her. "So you are that Tian Tian. Ruo Ruo had often told us about you, and furthermore,

you're even cuter than what your big sister described you to be. Can you take off your mask to let us big sisters see your face?"

Tian Tian shook her head, "Big sister said that I can't."

Xiao Qi's lips gave a wry smile as she got a little frustrated and said, "You three siblings are too much, always being so secretive."

Shui Ruo smiled gently as she said in an apologetic manner, "I'm sorry Qi Qi, if one day big brother agrees to it then me and Tian Tian will definitely let you see our faces."

Listening to what Shui Ruo had said, Xiao Qi got embarrassed, "Ah? It's okay. I have already known that big brother Ling Tian is very powerful and has such a big conflict with the Yan Huang Alliance, that's why all of you definitely can't reveal your identities. However, even if I can't see what all of you look like, I can totally confirm that Ruo Ruo is definitely as pretty as a fairy and Tian Tian is definitely extremely cute; only super cute girls would have such a nice voice, am I right, Tian Tian?"

"I have always been the cutest and the most obedient child who listens to her big sister." Tian Tian, who had never been taught how to be humble, immediately agreed, of course. At the same, her favourable impression of this big sister who had praised her had also increased.

Young girls like Tian Tian would always be easily accepted and well-liked by other people because these kind of girls usually didn't possess any malice in them, which was why they would naturally

have an intimate and likeable aura. Even though Tian Tian had her face covered, but just by looking at her overall appearance, one could tell that she looked just like a cute doll. Even Shui Ruo was easily conquered by her previously and liked her so much that she couldn't bear separating from her, let alone the rest of the girls in Heart's Dream.

Tian Tian was encircled by the girls like a little princess, who asked her all sorts of questions while Ling Chen was left forgotten at one corner without anyone paying attention to him. He pondered for a while before pulling Mu Bing Yao to one side and asked softly, "What happened over at their side this afternoon? Why did they only come online just now?"

Mu Bing Yao used a voice that only Ling Chen could hear and said, "I was on a mission so I wasn't there this afternoon. When I came back, Xiao Qi's father and older brother had just left. Xiao Qi is currently ill and bed-ridden and her body is very weak now. Meng Xin said that Xiao Qi had a high fever and needs to rest for a few days, but I feel that they seem to be hiding something."

If it's like this……

Ling Chen immediately stood up and walked over to Xiao Qi and asked, "Qi Qi, I heard that you fell sick?"

"Ah?" Xiao Qi who was initially playing around with Tian Tian revealed a panic-stricken face when Ling Chen asked her that question, but she immediately returned back to normal and gave a nonchalant smile, "I accidentally caught a cold when I was bathing this afternoon, causing me to have a fever. It's nothing serious, I

just need to lie down for a day to get better."

"Ah? Qi Qi you're sick?" Shui Ruo immediately stood up and asked, feeling deeply concerned.

"I already said that I'm fine, it's only a light fever. The fever has already subsided and I'm perfectly fine. If you don't believe me you can ask Su Su and big sister Meng Xin. You really don't have to worry, I'm not that weak." Xiao Qi was still explaining nonchalantly.

Ling Chen could accurately tell at one glance if a person was lying, but he would also not dig deeper if Xiao Qi did not want to say any more, so he just nodded his head, "Then rest well, and don't overexert yourself."

"En, got it." Xiao Qi stuck out her tongue as she replied. She was elated deep inside knowing that Ling Chen cared about her so much.

"Well, let's all welcome our newest member who is joining Heart's Dream today." Ling Chen changed the topic and redirected the focus back onto Tian Tian. He stood in front of Tian Tian and said sternly, "Tian Tian, big sister must have already told you that Heart's Dream is the number one guild in the whole of China. Although we don't have many members, but our goal is to become the strongest guild in the whole of China and only the most talented people can join Heart's Dream. Once you join our guild, you must listen to all the big sisters and work hard together with them, so you cannot be mischievous and act on your own accord. Do you understand?"

“I understand, I understand, big bad guy is lecturing people again, hmph!” Tian Tian pouted and mumbled to herself as she agreed. It was obvious that his words were not as effective as compared to Shui Ruo.

“Big bad guy?” The girls burst out laughing after hearing the nickname.

Three black lines surfaced on Ling Chen’s forehead as he helplessly said, “Alright, since you’re so obedient, I will let you join Heart’s Dream. From now on, you are Heart’s Dream’s seventh member and also the youngest one. In the future you will have to listen to all your big sisters and follow them wherever they go, and you are not allowed to run around on your own.”

After saying all that, Ling Chen did not wait for Tian Tian’s reply and sent an invitation to her.

Very soon, every member of Heart’s Dream received a notification simultaneously,

“Ding..... player ‘Tian Tian Tian Tian’ has joined Heart’s Dream.”

“Tian Tian Tian Tian!?” The girls were astounded when they saw the name.

“Isn’t this the name that was ranked number one on the Hidden

Profession Rankings just now? Don't tell me that the person..... is actually Tian Tian?"

The girls had the same reaction as Ling Chen when they saw the name 'Tian Tian Tian Tian' at the top of the rankings; seeing that this person was right in front of them, their faces displayed shock and incredulity. Everyone had been trying to guess who this mysterious expert, whose profession was ranked even higher than Ling Tian's, was. However, nobody would ever believe that this person was actually a little girl around ten years of age.

"Yes, yes that's me! I'm very powerful right?" Tian Tian answered energetically as she beamed at the girls. From her ignorant self in the past to now, she was beginning to understand what it meant for her to possess such a profession. However, it was clear that she still did not understand the idea of being low-profiled, and seeing the exaggerated reaction from the big sisters that she just met, she became increasingly pleased with herself – although she still did not know why the profession had suddenly appeared.

"Ling Tian, is this for real?" Yun Meng Xin asked in shock. Indeed, this was really too unbelievable.

"Correct, it's indeed Tian Tian. Moreover, it was not me who gave her this profession. After all, one must obtain the profession with his or her own ability or hard work for that profession to be placed in the Hidden Profession Rankings." Ling Chen had already anticipated that they would have this kind of reaction. Tian Tian having this profession was the most inconceivable thing that he faced ever since he entered into the world of Mystic Moon. No

matter how hard he thought, the only reason he could come up with was that the creator of the game was mad. “Let’s go, we will head over to the wilderness together and take a look at Tian Tian’s profession’s abilities.”

As the average level for players was nearing LV20, the number of players in the Plains Region District One gradually fell, and before long, they found an area with nobody around.

LV10 Sheep Monsters tended to roam around the outskirts of the Plains Region. They were the weakest monsters in the Plains Region and possessed a gentle nature and would not take the initiative to attack. The members of Heart’s Dream stood in front of a few Sheep Monsters and Ling Chen took a glance towards these sheep, “Tian Tian, try to use your summons to attack these sheep.”

“Okay, let me show you!” Tian Tian was already itching to try them out as she took a step forward, pursing her lips with a serious expression and began the summon, “Little White, come on out!”

Under the delicate yell, two streaks of white light flashed in front of her as two Little White summons appeared in an instant. Seeing the appearance of the Little Whites, Ling Chen almost spat out his saliva.

Round chubby body, four short legs, one short tail, red coloured eyes, a segmented mouth with two long and sharp big buck teeth, shoulders carrying a half meter long carrot that was as tall as them. That’s right, the two summons were actually a buck-toothed rabbits that were as fat as a rubber ball and were standing on their

feet, each carrying a big carrot!”

Tian Tian extended her fingers and pointed impressively towards the sheep, “Little White, attack!”

Receiving the orders to attack, the two fat buck-toothed rabbits stepped forwards with their two short legs..... even though these two rabbits were as fat as a ball, their speed and jumping strength were terrifyingly strong. Under Tian Tian’s command, they leapt out as if there was a spring in their bodies and in a blink of an eye, they each flew in front of a sheep and accurately and mercilessly whirled the carrot, smashing onto the sheep before landing on the ground.

Bang! Bang!

-530, -542 !

When the carrot had smashed down, the damage points that it inflicted shocked the girls. Under the attacks of both Little White, the Sheep Monsters with only 300 HP at most were killed instantly ..... and that wasn’t all. The Sheep Monsters that were twice as large as the Little Whites were violently smashed by the carrots and flew out to around 10 meters before dropping down, becoming dead sheep. At the same time, both Little Whites disappeared into thin air after completing their attack.

“Haha, they’re strong, aren’t they?” Tian Tian put her hands on her hips while bursting with delight, feeling very proud of herself. Before she obtained this profession, she would need to spend a

large amount of effort to defeat one normal LV10 monster, but now she could effortlessly kill two in an instant. Thus, she understood that she had a pretty impressive profession

"So strong, its damage can even be compared to mine!" Xiao Qi nodded as she exclaimed in shock. She was currently a LV20 Ice Mage and would only deal 500+ damage if she attacked this sheep using her strongest ability. Tian Tian's summon had used two attacks just now and both attacks had damage of over 500. Furthermore, Tian Tian's level was only LV10!

Ling Chen was dumbfounded. He remembered that Tian Tian's Little White summons could concentrate their attacks to strike one target or disperse their attacks to strike multiple targets. If they concentrated the attack to strike one target, then the damage they could deal could reach over 1000. And this was when Tian Tian could only summon two; if she could simultaneously summon 8 or 10 of them at the same time and then concentrate their attack on a single target, then the damage points..... would definitely be too terrifying. Furthermore adding on to the damage, there was even a strong effect of sending the target flying.

Chapter 276 - Meng Xin's Decision

"What about your other skills? Let's see all of them." Ling Chen was very interested in Tian Tian's skills now. This profession was already quite powerful, and had quite a bit of potential. Tian Tian, with this profession would become incredibly powerful in future. Before today, he never would have expected that the little brat that he and Shui Ruo had found would have such achievements in the game."

"Alright, here I go! Little Blue, come out!"

The second skill Tian Tian displayed was Summon Little Blue. All of her summoning skills, apart from "Summon Big White", could only summon a maximum of two at a time. After giving out the command, a blue light appeared, and two 'Little Blues' appeared... although he was somewhat mentally prepared, seeing these two 'Little Blues' stupefied Ling Chen.

These two Little Blues were two penguins!!

The two penguins... no, Little Blues, half-waddled and half-ran towards Tian Tian, just like penguins in the real world. Ling Chen recalled that Little Blue's effects were to take damage that Tian Tian would have sustained. The amount of damage that could be taken for Tian Tian was equivalent to Tian Tian's Magic Attack Power and the number of Little Blues. Moreover, the cooldown time for summoning Little Blue was only 30 seconds. If one couldn't get rid of these two meat shields within 30 seconds, then it would be impossible for them to hurt Tian Tian. If, in the late stages of the game, Tian Tian could summon more than ten of

these Little Blues...

Ling Chen finally understood why this profession was ranked above the Ling Tian Battle Soul and Feng Chen Curse Zanni.

“Little Pink... go and dance for the big sisters!”

The Little Pinks were two pink rabbits. Although they were also rabbits, they were much cuter than Little White. At least they weren’t fat and didn’t have buckteeth. After being summoned, one ran in front of Shui Ruo and the other ran in front of Su’Er. They began to dance, and a balls of light floated from their bodies towards Shui Ruo and Su’Er... of course, since Shui Ruo and Su’Er were at full health and did not have any debuffs, it didn’t have any effect.

“Come out, Little Green!!”

If Ling Chen wasn’t wrong, the two green things that had just been summoned by Tian Tian should be two large moles! On their backs, they seemed to be carrying massive wooden mallets.

“Little Green, attack!”

As soon as Tian Tian gave the command, the two moles rushed over and smashed their giant wooden mallets on a sheep monster’s head.

After being hit by the two mallets, the sheep monster didn’t

immediately die. Their Attack Power seemed to be only one quarter of that of Little White's, but those two wooden mallets immediately exploded, and released a large cloud of green gas. The green gas covered a five metre radius around the Little Greens, enveloping 7 or 8 sheep monsters, and a green glow appeared on their bodies.

-184, -190, -188, -187...

The two large moles disappeared, but the green gas still remained. Within the gas, damage numbers continuously arose from the sheep monsters' bodies, once per second. After 5 seconds, the green gas dissipated, and all of the sheep monsters had died... they had all been poisoned to death.

"Are you able to summon Big White?" Ling Chen asked as he gulped down a mouthful of saliva. Each of the summons was more impressive than the previous one. The girls could only stare in shock.

Tian Tian shook her head, stating matter-of-factly, "Of course not. Big White costs 12,000 MP to summon. Right now, my maximum MP is only 1,000 or so, so it's impossible."

Indeed, it was simply impossible for the current Tian Tian to expend 12,000 MP to summon Big White. It wasn't quite clear what this 'Summon Big White' would do, but Big White seemed quite powerful. However... 'only 1,000 or so'?! To have 1,000 MP at LV10 was already astounding!

“No less than expected from the top ranked profession. It simply exceeds anything we could have imagined.” Yun Meng Xin said in awe as she sized up this girl called Tian Tian. She was certain that no one would believe that the top ranked profession would belong to a little girl like her. Everything happens for a reason-such a strong profession wouldn’t just be given to a little girl like her for no reason. Did she have some sort of fortuitous encounter? Or…

“Tian Tian, you’re so awesome! You’re only LV10 but you’re way more powerful than me or Su’Er!” Xiao Qi loudly exclaimed. She blinked, and cheerfully said, “I suddenly realised how amazing our Heart’s Dream is now. Even though we only have 7 members, but we have the publicly acknowledged number 1 player, the top rankings in the Equipment and Pet Rankings, and we’re even the top ranked Guild. Big sister Bing Yao is also on the Heaven Rankings, and big sister Meng Xin and Su’Er also have special professions. Today, Tian Tian, who has the top ranked profession, also joined our guild! Wah! This is almost like a dream!”

“So, even though we only have 7 members, we should have faith that we’ll be able to become the strongest guild, right?” Ling Chen asked smilingly.

“Yup yup!” Xiao Qi nodded vigorously, and clenched her fists, “I’ll work even harder and not be a burden to everyone.”

“Also, let’s keep Tian Tian’s circumstances a secret from the public. The circumstances under which she received her profession were quite special, and she’s still quite young. Moreover, her profession hasn’t developed yet. If people knew about her, then it would bring her a lot of trouble.” Ling Chen reminded everyone.

“Don’t worry, big brother, I’ll help protect Tian Tian’s secret. Plus, Tian Tian’s very smart and obedient. She knows what to do and what not to do.” Shui Ruo quietly said.

“Right, right, big sister Meng Xin, you said that you were going to tell us something. What is it?” Xiao Qi curiously asked as she suddenly remembered that Yun Meng Xin seemed to be writing something when they walked into her room. Everyone turned to look at Yun Meng Xin.

Yun Meng Xin thought for a while, then calmly replied, “I’ve thought about it for a long time, and decided to give up on my battle profession.”

“Ah?!” Apart from Tian Tian, who didn’t know anything, all of the girls looked at Meng Xin in shock, even Mu Bing Yao. Xiao Qi rushed over, and anxiously said, “Big sister Meng Xin, what are you saying? Give up your battle profession? Why would you do this? Back then, in order to level up, you spent so many days training without sleeping. After getting to Azure Dragon City, we worked hard together for so long. We all know that you’ve been working harder than any of us-when we’re resting, you secretly train by yourself. It’s taken you so much effort to get to this stage, so why would you give it all up?!”

“Big sister Meng Xin, big sister Qi Qi’s right… plus, your special profession was given to you by big brother Ling Tian, so how can you just give it up?” Su’Er worriedly said. All of the girls simply couldn’t understand why Meng Xin would make such a decision.

Ling Chen didn't say anything, but instead just smiled mysteriously.

Yun Meng Xin held Xiao Qi and Su'Er's hands, and said to these girls who had always been there to support here, "Qi Qi, Su Su, I said that I want to give up my battle profession, not that I would give up on Heart's Dream or give up on my bet. Before, I didn't have any support. I only had my determination, and could only rely on my weak strength and hard work. However, now I have you guys, and there's also Ling Tian, and all of you have given me so much hope. As such, both my heart and mind have become calmer and more logical. I started to become more and more convinced that giving up on my battle profession was the right thing to do, because there's another path that suits me more."

"Big sister Meng Xin..." Xiao Qi and Su'Er looked at her in shock. She had never mentioned any of this to them before.

Yun Meng Xin looked at Ling Chen and continued to speak, "Our Heart's Dream is the top ranked guild in the Guild Rankings. This position gives us the right to quickly expand, but Ling Tian's refusal to do so has also reminded me of something. If Heart's Dream does not expand, then other guilds won't be threatened by our existence, and won't take any action against us. Moreover, Heart's Dream's existence was to satisfy my own personal goals. These days, I finally realised that Ling Tian making Heart's Dream become the 'number 1 guild' wasn't for us to expand, but to make everyone focus on our position as the 'number 1 guild' so that we could secretly develop in other ways. Thus, while others haven't taken too much notice of us, I want to use my own power to establish a solid foundation for Heart's Dream and after I've realised my dream in 2 years, even if they want to suppress us, they

won’t be able to do so.”

After saying this, Xiao Qi and Su’Er finally somewhat understood the reasons for her decision. Su’Er weakly asked, “Big sister, what are you planning on doing then? Are you not going to train with us anymore? And also… it would be such a pity to give up on the special profession that big brother Ling Tian gave you.”

Yun Meng Xin smiled, “Special professions are something that normal players can only dream of, and was something that took Ling Tian a lot of effort to obtain, so giving it up is indeed quite a pity. However, I believe that even though I’m giving this up now, I’ll be able to get much, much more in future. As for what I’m going to do, I haven’t completely thought it out yet, but please believe in me, alright? You’ve all done so much for me, so I definitely won’t let you down.”

Yun Meng Xin was just like a big sister to Xiao Qi and Su’Er, and was very close with them. Otherwise, they wouldn’t go out of their way to come and live with Meng Xin, as well as sacrifice so much for her. They had always had a feeling of trust and reliance towards Meng Xin. Hearing her say this, although they didn’t really know what she was going to do, they didn’t try to stop her, and simply nodded their heads. Xiao Qi smiled, “Why would we not believe in big sister Meng Xin? Since you’ve said this, I’m sure that you have your own considerations. Big sister Meng Xin definitely has marvellous plans that will give us a pleasant surprise.”

Chapter 277 - A Warm Coloured Night Sky

Ling Chen silently gazed at Yun Meng Xin while she spoke, listening to what she was saying. Yun Meng Xin looked over to him, and Ling Chen couldn't help but smile, and walked over to her.

"This is for you. I completely support your decision. I believe that you, who are so independent, will be willing to take hold of your future for yourself." After walking over to Yun Meng Xin, Ling Chen took out a thin paper scroll and gave it to Yun Meng Xin. He had completely expected her to make this decision sooner or later. At the same time, he had made preparations for this since a long time ago.

"All of this was possible because of you, Ling Tian. Otherwise, I wouldn't have such opportunities or courage." Yun Meng Xin said while smiling, her voice full of gratitude. She received the paper scroll, and carefully opened it. After looking through it for a few seconds, if one could see her without her veil, they would see her beaming with a brilliant smile, "Thank you, Ling Tian, I know what I should do now."

"Haha, didn't I already say that guildmates should take care of each other, so there's no need to thank me. Not asking us to take off our masks is enough thanks." Ling Chen laughed, then walked away. However, he could still feel Yun Meng Xin's gaze on him.

"What is it? Let us see!" Xiao Qi Su'Er, brimming with curiosity, tried to look at the paper scroll that Yun Meng Xin was holding. When she showed them, they collectively let out a gasp of surprise.

“Big brother bad guy, I want to go back to Azure Dragon City! I haven’t played in the Azure Dragon City at all. The grandpa in the Novice Village said that there are lots of fun quests there.”

“Alright, let’s go back to Azure Dragon City then. We’ll take Tian Tian to receive some quests, and then go around the main areas of the city so she doesn’t get lost.”

“Hmph! I’m so smart, so there’s no way I’d get lost. And there’s also big sister to stay with me-big sister, you’re definitely stay with me, right?”

“En, of course.”

“…….”

Ling Chen, Shui Ruo and Tian Tian ended up logging off later than usual. By the time they logged off, it was already dark outside.

After eating dinner, it was already 8pm. After eating an astonishing amount of food, Tian Tian put down her bowl and chopsticks, yelled out “I’m full!” then ran into the bedroom.

“Ever since Tian Tian came, we’ve been making enough food for six people every meal. Sooner or later, we’re going to go broke because of that little monster.” Ling Chen joked as he leaned back on his chair.

Shui Ruo laughed, “It’s not that bad. Don’t let Tian Tian hear you calling her a little monster, otherwise she’ll start calling you big bad guy again.”

Ling Chen put down his bowl and chopsticks, and wiped his mouth, “I’m also full. I’m going to see why Tian Tian was so eager to run back to the bedroom.”

Ling Chen got up, and stealthily walked towards the bedroom.

Within the bedroom, Tian Tian was lying face down, enjoying the feeling of the soft blanket. She flipped herself over, and stretched out her right hand towards the gaming gear on her left hand. Just as she was about to activate it, her right hand was caught by Ling Chen’s hand.

“Didn’t I tell you to rest up at night? Also, it’s not good for your body to sleep right after eating.”

Tian Tian struggled for a bit, before arguing back, “But I just got to Azure Dragon City, and didn’t get to spend enough time there. Big brother, just let me play for a bit longer, alright?”

“No!” Ling Chen resolutely shook his head, “If you keep insisting, I’ll have to smack your bottom.”

“You…” Little Tian Tian angrily frowned, and yelled out, “You don’t play with me or let me play much, but you always play until so late, and always smack my bottom… all you do is bully me, big

bad guy! Big bad guy! Big bad guy!”

“Alright, alright.” Ling Chen pinched her little nose, “Video games and Mystic Moon aren’t the only things to play. En... there have been quite a few things to take care of, so we haven’t taken Tian Tian to go out and play in a while. How about this-today big sister and I will take you outside to play, alright?”

“Really? Where?” Little Tian Tian’s dissatisfaction disappeared immediately. She excitedly sat up on the bed, as she asked with eyes full of expectation.

“It’s somewhere your big sister and I used to go all the time. You’ll know when we get there. We’ll leave as soon as you get changed.”

The Summer night sky was full of stars. The moonlight beamed down on them, and the cool wind blew against them as they walked.

“Wah! Stars! So many stars! There are even stars falling down from the sky!”

Hearing Tian Tian’s words, Ling Chen and Shui Ruo couldn’t help but smile at each other. Shui Ruo gently said, “Those aren’t stars; they’re fireflies. They’re a type of bug that can fly and give off light. Hasn’t Tian Tian seen any before? We’ll get big brother to catch one for you.”

“Eh? Bug? How can bugs give off light?” Tian Tian asked as she looked at the fireflies dancing with both curiosity and surprise.

A firefly flew by them, and Ling Chen stretched out his left hand and caught it. He carefully opened his hand in front of Tian Tian, “Tian Tian, look, this is what they look like. These sorts of bugs sleep during the day, and come out during the night. En, don’t worry, these bugs don’t bite people.”

“Wah, it really is a bug, and its bottom is giving off light! So there are these sorts of bugs as well. I’ve never seen one before.”

“These types of fireflies are very easy to catch. After catching a few, if you put them together, you can make a very pretty lantern. Tian Tian, let’s have a competition and see who can catch more fireflies. Afterwards, we’ll use the fireflies to make a lantern, alright?”

“Okay, okay! I’m really good at catching bugs. I’ve caught bugs with mummy since I was small, I definitely won’t lose to you… light bugs, I’m coming for you!”

Looking at Tian Tian running while chasing fireflies, Ling Chen looked and Shui Ruo looked at each other and smiled. They thought back to those peaceful, blissful years. Each summer, they would come here at night to catch fireflies. They would often have competitions to see who could catch more, and every time Ling Chen would lose to Shui Ruo. Of course, Shui Ruo knew that Ling Chen was always losing to her on purpose, but she always enjoyed the feeling of him being so loving towards her.

Afterwards, Shui Ruo was infected with the Isrock Disease and became incredibly weak. They had never come to this place since then… because Ling Chen didn't want Shui Ruo's weak body to get worse from the cold wind, so they rarely went out at night.

"We haven't come here in such a long time, and yet there are still so many fireflies. I was a bit worried all the fireflies would be caught by other people." Ling Chen said while looking at Tian Tian, who was still chasing after fireflies.

Shui Ruo gently laughed, "Other people aren't as evil as us, always coming here to kidnap these fireflies."

Ling Chen turned and looked at the girl beside him. Under the moonlight, Shui Ruo looked exceptionally beautiful.

Feeling Ling Chen's gaze on her, Shui Ruo looked over to him, and gave a gentle smile, "Big brother, aren't you going to catch any fireflies? If you don't start soon, you're definitely going to lose to Tian Tian."

"Then is Ruo Ruo going to help big brother or Tian Tian?"

"Definitely… Tian Tian! If you lose, you have to piggyback me home like before, hehe!"

After saying this, Shui Ruo ran towards Tian Tian. Of course, she was worried about Tian Tian running too far away and getting

lost, “Tian Tian, big sister will help you.”

Although they were having a ‘competition’, Ling Chen stood there, gazing at the two girls, listening to their laughter. Within his memory, he hadn’t been able to enjoy this sort of scene in a long time, and this time there was an additional playful, cheerful little girl.

Happiness was quite simple-only the most natural and normal things could give one that natural sense of joy and happiness.

“Looks like instead of Tian Tian, the one who has been too hooked on gaming was myself. I should take them to go out and play more.” Ling Chen quietly said to himself. He laughed, and started to catch fireflies as well.

Ever since virtual gaming had become part of peoples’ everyday lives, there were less and less people coming out during night time. After all, everything within the virtual world was simply perfect. Even the air inside the game was incredibly clean and pure. Moreover, within the game, people would be in a half-sleeping state, so they could more or less rest while they played. As such, people started to prefer spending time within the game than in the real world. Although Ling Chen and company played outside for a long time, no one came to disturb them.

The result of the competition was, of course, Ling Chen’s crushing defeat.

Chapter 278 - Tian Tian's Wish

On the way home, Tian Tian lay comfortably on Ling Chen's back, with one hand around Ling Chen's neck and the other holding a small lantern. Inside the lantern were the fruits of their labour from the competition. Tian Tian also swung her legs around, accidentally kicking Ling Chen now and then.

Tian Tian's body was extremely light, and it almost felt like Ling Chen didn't have anything on his back. Despite this, Tian Tian's kicks were still quite annoying, which he couldn't stand. "Tian Tian, stop moving around. It's hard enough carrying you like this, and you've kicked me at least 20 times!"

The little Tian Tian passed the lantern to her other hand, and the warm glow of the fireflies illuminated her delicate face. She retorted back in a self-satisfied tone, "It was you who challenged me to a competition, so you have to be punished since you lost. So be good and carry me home. No more complaints from you."

"There were two of you and just one of me. This is way too unfair." Ling Chen replied.

"Who told you to always bully me! Big sister's always so good to me, so of course she would help me." She leaned forward and laughed, "Apart from mummy, no one has piggybacked me before. To have the right to piggyback this Demon Queen is your glory. Even if... even if I'm not a great Demon Queen right now, as my big brother, you should treat me well like big sister does. I'm so tired after playing, so you should be piggybacking me home anyways."

Ling Chen was speechless... he didn't know that this girl was capable of saying such things.

Shui Ruo covered her mouth with her hand, and secretly smiled. Seeing Tian Tian lying on Ling Chen's back, she could almost see herself lazily lying on his back in the past. Even after they got home, she was never willing to get off, and sometimes even fell asleep on his back. Despite the fact that he intentionally walked slowly, she still felt that those walks went by so quickly.

After walking through a street, they saw many paper lanterns encasing tongues of fire rising to the sky. Looking up, they could see many fiery dots in the sky. Tian Tian's eyes widened, and shouted, "Look! Fireflies! Those fireflies are so big!"

Ling Chen and Shui Ruo laughed. Shui Ruo explained to Tian Tian, "Tian Tian, those aren't fireflies. Those are lanterns called sky lanterns. After lighting the fire inside it, the lantern will rise up into the sky. We usually use these sorts of lanterns during festivals. Normally, you can also make one and write a wish on it, then let your wish fly high into the skies. Legend says that the higher a sky lantern flies, the more likely the wish on it will be fulfilled.

"Sky lantern... wish..." Tian Tian repeated to her as she gazed at the sky lanterns. Her voice was filled with curiosity and expectation.

"Ruo Ruo, let's go buy a few sky lanterns." Ling Chen said while smiling. It was always incredibly easy to tell what Tian Tian was thinking through her expression and voice. She was obviously

incredibly interested in the sky lanterns.

After buying three sky lanterns, they wrote their wishes on the sky lanterns... however, Tian Tian adamantly wouldn't show Shui Ruo and Ling Chen what she had written, no matter what. Afterwards, they taught Tian Tian how to light the sky lanterns, and lifted the sky lanterns into the air, watching them rise into the boundless night sky.

"Wow! Flying, they're really flying! They're flying so high!" Tian Tian excitedly exclaimed as she jumped around.

"Big sister, big brother, can sky lanterns really grant wishes?" Although the sky lanterns were almost out of sight, Tian Tian continued to stare into the sky.

"Our sky lanterns flew so high, so our wishes will definitely be fulfilled." Shui Ruo said as she gently smiled.

"En!" Tian Tian vigorously nodded her head. She gently closed her eyes, "My will definitely come true, and everything will be perfect. Definitely!"

Although they didn't know what Tian Tian had written, seeing how earnest and serious she was, it must have been something important and wonderful.

Finally, the sky lanterns completely disappeared into the night sky. After staring for a while longer, Tian Tian looked down and

lifted up the fireflies lantern up, “Big sister, big brother, let’s release all of these fireflies, alright? They were definitely scared when we caught them, and if we take them home, their family will definitely be worried about them.”

“Hahaha!” Ling Chen couldn’t help but laugh out loud. He stroked Tian Tian’s hair while saying, “Tian Tian, did you know that since a long time ago, your big sister and I often come here to catch fireflies. We always catch a lot, but your big sister always set them free at the end of the night. What you said sounded a lot like what she would always say.”

“Tian Tian’s such a good girl. I agree that we should let them go. They all have their own lives, and we shouldn’t keep them locked up.” Tian Tian’s words caused Shui Ruo to feel incredibly happy, and she could feel herself liking Tian Tian more and more. She helped Tian Tian open up the lantern, and watched as the spots of light flew out like a stream, and dispersed.

“Fireflies, quickly go home. I’ll come and play with you guys next time, so try not to get caught again… goodbye… goodbye!” Tian Tian waved them goodbye and called out to them, sad to see them leave.

After spending more and more time with her, Ling Chen gradually found that there were likeable sides to Tian Tian. Seeing how she was behaving, Ling Chen chuckled inwardly… how can a little girl like you, who’s so unwilling to see fireflies leave, possibly conquer earth?

When they got home, Tian Tian was already sound asleep on

Ling Chen's back. She was sleeping especially peacefully, just like Shui Ruo back then... what was also similar was the large patch of saliva on his back. Ling Chen gently opened the door when they got him, and gently put Tian Tian on her bed without waking her up.

Ling Chen looked at the clock and saw that it was around 10pm. They had never come back so late before. After tucking Tian Tian in bed, Ling Chen gently said, "Ruo Ruo, I'm sure you're tired too, so sleep early."

"En." Shui Ruo replied, lovingly gazing at Tian Tian. The feelings she held towards Tian Tian were becoming more and more like that of a mother to her daughter, although they were only six or so years apart in age.

Ling Chen knew that it was definitely too early for him to sleep. He quickly showered, then walked onto the balcony. He looked up into the night sky, and went through many things in his mind. Every day, he would have to consider not only his own future, but the future of many other people around him.

Just who was Tian Tian really? Ever since meeting her, Ling Chen felt that there was something mysterious about this girl. Although she could be mischievous, arrogant and short-tempered, she was still a very cute and kind girl. Moreover, now that Shui Ruo loved her so much, it should be fine to keep her around... plus, even Ling Chen himself wasn't quite willing to let Tian Tian leave anymore.

In the distance, a dark shadow fluttered, drawing closer to where

he was.

That was...

Ling Chen looked over, and under the moonlight, he saw something very familiar-looking made out of paper. He suddenly realised it was a sky lantern. After flying for a while, the flames inside sky lanterns would go out, and the sky lanterns would fall back down. Who knew who this sky lantern belonged to?

As if it knew that Ling Chen was looking at it, the falling sky lantern fell closer and closer to where he was. Finally, it fell onto the balcony, close to where he was standing. He walked over and picked it up... what sort of wish was written on this sky lantern?

Looking at someone else's wish wasn't a very honourable thing to do, but since it had fallen right on his balcony, he might as well have a look.

There were three lines of writing on the sheet of paper, representing three wishes. The writing was quite messy, and it was evident that the writer was still quite young, and wasn't very good at writing. However, Ling Chen could tell that every single word was written with utmost earnestness and sincerity.

I wish that mummy and big sister and big brother will always be safe.

I wish that big sister and big brother will always love me.

I wish that I can quickly become a Demon Queen and conquer the earth.

Ling Chen stared at the paper in surprise, and couldn't help himself from smiling. Before, he had planned to throw away the lantern after looking at the wish. However, seeing what was written on it, he carefully folded it and put it inside a drawer.

He was really quite curious what the future held for Tian Tian.

It was a normal night for him, but what was different was that he was standing on the balcony, as opposed to doing things in the game. What happened tonight wouldn't become a significant memory to him. He felt that it was a pity that he only had a single back; because he was carrying Tian Tian on his back, he wasn't able to carry Shui Ruo like he used to.

However, what he didn't know was that in the very near future, the girl he had carried on his back would be using her own small body to carry and drag his body for a whole night, until she collapsed. Only then would he realise that he would have to carry this girl's whole life on his shoulders.

Chapter 279 - Black Flames Xuan Feng

The top ranked player on the Player Rankings had already reached LV23, and seeing his own level which had been stuck at LV20 for a while, Ling Chen felt slightly annoyed. However, he wasn't in a rush-after a few days, he would be able to reach the Vermillion Bird City. There, he would be able to level up while looking for the Vermillion Bird. If he focused on levelling up again, he had confidence that he would be able to rise to the number 1 position again within 1 or 2 months.

Yun Meng Xin had decided to completely give up on her battle profession, as well as all of the hard work she had put into it. It seemed that she was planning on choosing a 'lifestyle profession'. These days, she had been deep in thought as to what she should do.

As for the other girls of Heart's Dream: Shui Ruo played a support role, and was absolutely critical to the team. The main source of damage came from Mu Bing Yao and Yun Meng Xin originally. Xiao Qi didn't have a Hidden Profession, but even with all of the equipment Ling Chen had given her, her ice magic wasn't very powerful. Seeing how much damage her ice magic dealt, Ling Chen frowned, but didn't say anything. Apart from Mu Bing Yao, Xiao Qi was the only one who didn't have a special profession. He was afraid that if he said anything, her confidence would be lowered. Perhaps it was because ice magic also had crowd-control abilities, so its damage was comparatively lower. As for Su'Er, although she had a special profession, but her battle sense and reaction speed were far inferior to Mu Bing Yao, who didn't even have a special profession. After Meng Xin leaving the battle team, the main source of damage was left to Mu Bing Yao. However, Tian Tian had filled this big gap that Meng Xin had left behind. After she had all of her LV10 equipment sorted out, her summons would

be a big help to the team. Although she was still a kid, her profession was unmatched in all of China!

As such, the girls all viewed little Tian Tian as a treasure-not only was she incredibly cute, but was also an important member of their battle team.

After coming to a fairly remote area, the Ling Chen's map indicated that the region ahead was called the "Seven Mile Slopes". It was a mountainous region that extended for about seven miles, and contained monsters around LV65-70. Moreover, travelling through it was quite difficult, and there was even a possibility of encountering traps.

As such, when entering the Seven Mile Slopes, Ling Chen slowed down, and focused on his surroundings. Any of the monsters that appeared here could easily destroy him. This sort of place, where it was difficult to walk, as well as contained high level monsters, was his least favourite type of place.

"Big brother! Big bad guy brother! There are people bullying big sister, quickly come!"

After entering the Seven Mile Slopes, Tian Tian's voice suddenly erupted from the communication device. When he was alone, Ling Chen always set the settings so that anyone who called him would be able to reach him directly. He lifted up the communication device, and asked, "Which baddie has the guts to dare to bully your big sister? You should be rushing over to protect your big sister."

“But… they have so many people. So, so many. They’ve completely surrounded us. With so many people, it’s impossible for me to beat them. We can even run away! Big brother, hurry up and save us!” Tian Tian’s voice was sounding more and more worried and desperate. At this moment, Ling Chen could clearly hear a man’s voice wildly laughing as he yelled, “Hahahaha, little brat, shout as much as you want. When you big brother gets here, he’ll crap himself when he sees all of us, hahaha…”

Ling Chen immediately opened up the Guild Page, and saw where they were located.

“Haha, looks like something interesting’s going to happen. I want to see which idiot doesn’t want to live anymore.” Ling Chen coldly laughed as he took out a teleport scroll. After crushing it and arriving in the town, he rushed out of town and charged in the direction Shui Ruo and Tian Tian were, while saying in a low voice, “Broken Shadow!”

Ling Chen’s body blurred, and he shot away with a gust of wind following behind him.

Plains Region District 3

There were at least 300 people gathered together, all wearing similar clothing and every person had a tattoo of black flames on their right arm. This tattoo showed their status-members of the Black Flames Alliance. There was not a single person in China who didn’t know of this guild, which was one of the 10 largest guilds.

The 300 people had grouped together in a large circle, with five girls surrounded in the middle. Using this many people to surround just 5 girls seemed to be quite excessive. However, the person in charge didn't think that this was excessive at all. He looked at the girls with an immoral expression while his arm was wrapped around another woman. His eyes looked up and down each of the girls continuously... these 5 girls were simply too exquisite. The ones who weren't wearing masks were all exceptional beauties who could take any onlooker's breath away and make them burn with desire.

He had seen quite a few beauties, but it was the first time he had seen such astoundingly stunning girls. What made his heart beat even faster was that two of the girls hadn't even matured yet, but already had amazing bodies-after they grew up, their looks would simply transcend that which was humanly possible. As for the 2 girls who were wearing masks... the tiny one was definitely out of the question, but the older one was definitely a goddess-class beauty, even though her face was covered.

He had certainly struck gold today! The man could feel his heart beating faster and faster, and was already starting to imagine them as his possessions. He spoke to the girls with an arrogant tone, "Our Black Flames Alliance doesn't want to bully a few girls, so we won't pursue the issue of you coming onto our territory. The only thing is that my woman wants that piece of clothing you're wearing, so name a price and we'll buy it off you. I promise on my honour as the young master of the Black Flames Alliance that we'll let you go as soon as you agree."
The young master of the Black Flames Alliance was only around 22 or 23 years old. He was slightly skinny, had a pale face and a lustful personality. Above his head hung the name "Black Flames Xuan Feng". The piece of clothing he had referred to was the one Shui

Ruo was wearing... the [Moon God Light Dress] that Ling Chen had obtained from the Moon God Ruins.

Back then, when Ling Chen gave the Moon God Light Dress to Shui Ruo, the beauty and magnificence of the dress caused Xiao Qi, Su'Er and Meng Xin to gasp in admiration. Even Mu Bing Yao, seeing Shui Ruo wear the dress, revealed an expression of admiration and envy. This Moon God Light Dress was definitely hundreds, if not thousands of times more beautiful and valuable than even the most beautiful dress in the Azure Dragon Tailor Shop. Moreover, it even had bonus stats.

Shui Ruo knew how dazzling this dress was, so she usually wouldn't wear it around. However, when she was wearing it while training, a female player called "Pink Rosa" charged over like a madwoman and demanded to buy it. This Moon God Light Dress was something that Ling Chen had obtained with great difficulty from the Moon God Ruins, and had once belonged to a Moon God Representative. No matter how much money she was offered, Shui Ruo definitely wouldn't sell it. As such, "Pink Rosa" called for backup-her husband, the young master of the Black Flames Alliance: Black Flames Xuan Feng.

Everyone who knew him knew that Black Flames Xuan Feng was an extremely lustful and licentious fellow. However, he was extremely caring towards his wife, and would always try to fulfil her wishes. When he saw Shui Ruo and the others, his heart nearly exploded. He immediately got his people to surround them, to prevent them from running off. Before meeting them, his goal was to get the dress for his wife, but now he also had other plans.

“Rubbish! We’ve been training here from yesterday to today; if you want to lie, at least make the lie believable!” Xiao Qi angrily retorted.

Black Flames Xuan Feng chuckled, and looked up and down her body. His eyes tended to always stop and pause on her bountiful breasts. Xiao Qi was only 16 or 17, but her body had matured quite early on, and could make almost any man fall for her. He spoke, “Didn’t you know that the area within 2 kilometres of here all belongs to my Black Flames Alliance? You’ve all intruded on our territory for a whole day, but we won’t blame you if you just sell us the dress.”

Black Flame Xuan Feng’s words sounded quite generous and magnanimous, but only he knew what he was truly thinking.

Chapter 280 - Suffering A Heavy Loss (1)

“I won’t sell this dress to anyone!”

Although Black Flames Xuan Feng’s words seemed to be quite magnanimous, the way he looked at her and the other girls disgusted Shui Ruo. She also knew that even if she sold the dress to them, he still wouldn’t let them go. This was the first time she had despised someone in the game so much-he had actually gone to such lengths to use so many people to surround just a few girls.

“My big sister’s pretty dress will never be yours! Hurry up and get out of here, otherwise when my big brother comes, he’ll teach you guys a lesson.” Tian Tian stood in front of Shui Ruo, doing her best to protect her, as she shouted at the people surrounding them.

Another member of the Black Flames Alliance, Black Flames Wild Bow, stepped forwards, and arrogantly laughed, “Hoh, this little brat is pretty fierce. You intruded on our territory, and our young master is generously giving you guys a chance to redeem yourselves. Our young mistress likes that dress, and we’re only asking to buy it, rather than take it by force. Not only do you not thank our young master, but respond in such a way. Aren’t you guys provoking us… to take it by force, heheh.”

“You guys wanted to take it by force from the very beginning,” Xiao Qi said as she coldly laughed, “Even if you want to take it by force, we’re not afraid of you guys! You’re all just a bunch of trash who rely on numbers to bully a few women. The Black Flame Alliance’s reputation is definitely going to be destroyed by this dog crap young master!”

“You... you actually dared to insult our young master!” Black Flames Wild Bow’s face immediately darkened. It was almost as if Xiao Qi had just insulted his parents.

“Pei! All your so-called young master has is backing from his dad. With his character, without his dad, he’d be even worse than a beggar! I look down on these sorts of people the most.” Xiao Qi didn’t hold back as she insulted Black Flames Xuan Feng again and again. Xiao Qi only admired men who had their own strength- those who simply relied on their parents were simply trash to her. Moreover, she especially despised men who liked to take advantage of and bully women. Today, Black Flame Xuan Feng’s actions caused her to view him as something lower than trash. When she saw the way he looked at her and the other girls, she wanted to rip out his eyes.

As one of the 10 largest guilds, the Black Flames Alliance was quite famous. Xiao Qiu Feng had told her about the Black Flames Alliance in the past. The Alliance Master was a very powerful and capable individual, but his son was absolute scum.

“Wah! Big sister Qi Qi’s amazing! Insult him to death!” Tian Tian voiced her support as she clapped in delight.

“You...” Black Flames Xuan Feng never thought he’d receive this sort of treatment from the girls. Even Long Tian Yun gave him proper respect whenever they met. It was the first time Black Flames Wild Bow had heard his young master being insulted in such a way. He immediately asked Black Flames Xuan Feng, “Young master, this woman actually dares to insult you. Would

you like me to capture her so you can punish her?”

Normally, if he was insulted like this, Black Flames Xuan Feng would fly into a fit of rage. However, being insulted like this by Xiao Qi, he actually felt a sense of satisfaction… she was so young, and had not only a fiery body, but even her voice when insulting others was so pleasant… she was simply a treasure! He was determined to make this girl his, otherwise he would definitely die with regrets!

Hearing Black Flames Wild Bow’s words, he narrowed his eyes, and slowly replied, “It seems that you want to take advantage of that girl. Aren’t you afraid you’ll use the system lightning to strike you?”

Black Flames Wild Bow grinned, “With that sort of body, if I can grope for a bit, being hit by the system lightning would be worth it. Plus, that chick over there who hasn’t spoken yet, I don’t think I’ve ever seen such a beautiful woman… apart from the young mistress, of course. If I can grope that woman even once, dying a hundred times would be worth it. The only thing is that I keep having this feeling like I’ve seen that chick somewhere before.”

Pink Rosa was indeed beautiful, but in reality, she couldn’t compare to any of the girls of Heart’s Dream. The sort of dignity and refined air about them was something she could never possess. Pink Rosa grabbed on to Black Flames Xuan Feng’s arm as she asked in a sultry voice, “Hubby, if they don’t want to give it to us, then just take it by force. I really, really want it… don’t you want me to wear it for you?”

Black Flames Xuan Feng was extremely loving towards his wife- this was one of his only good points. Of course, this was also to do with his wife's background with the mafia. How could he, the young master of the Black Flames Alliance, find an ordinary woman to be his wife?

"Alright!" Black Flames Xuan Feng clicked his fingers, and arrogantly looked at them, "I'll pretend I didn't hear you guys insulting me just then. This young master won't stoop to your level. I'll give you guys one last chance: give us the dress that my wife wants, and I'll let you go. Otherwise, if we take action, we won't hold back. As for your big brother, you can yell as much as you want. If he wets himself when he gets here, we won't be giving him any diapers, hahaha!"

"Hmph! You bad guys! My big brother's going to be here soon. Big brother's the most powerful guy in the world. He'll destroy you all in just a few seconds!" Tian Tian was still standing in front of Shui Ruo as she yelled in fury. The response she got from the Black Flames Alliance was just raucous laughter.

"Laugh all you want. When my big brother gets here, we'll see who'll be wetting themselves." Xiao Qi said as she pulled Su'Er behind her.

"Oh? Which b-b-b-b-big hero is your big brother? Could he be someone on the Earth Rankings, or even the Heaven Rankings?" Black Flames Xuan Feng once again burst into laughter, as did the other members of the Black Flames Alliance.

"That stupid head of yours actually guessed correctly. My big

brother's the Cold Magistrate, Xiao Qiu Feng." Xiao Qi said confidently.

As soon as she said this, the members of the Black Flames Alliance fell silently, then once again erupted into laughter.

"Haha... haha... hahahaha..." Black Flames Xuan Feng laughed with his face raised up to the sky, "Xiao Qiu Feng is your big brother? If that's true, I'm Xiao Qiu Feng's dad! Are you trying to say you're the princess of the Battle Alliance? Hahaha... why would the princess of the Battle Alliance be training herself? The super experts in the Battle Alliance would all be fighting to boost her up. No matter where she goes, she'd have at least a hundred or so experts protecting her. Go and call the Battle Alliance for me to see, hahaha."

All of the Black Flames Alliance's members took this as a complete joke. Xiao Qi lifted up her communication device, and said, with a slight hint of delight, "Big brother, did you hear that? These people are insulting us! Hurry up and teach them a lesson!"

"....."

"Aiyo, so it's Your Highness, the princess of the Battle Alliance! No wonder your looks are so... tantalising." Black Flames Wild Bow's words became even more daring. He definitely wouldn't believe the princess of the Battle Alliance would train by herself, and wouldn't be surrounded by an army of bodyguards. He wolf-whistled, then turned to Black Flames Xuan Feng, "Young master, it seems that we'll have to start using some force. How about I go and invite the esteemed princess of the Battle Alliance over?"

“Don’t be too rough on her; bring her individually to me first.” Black Flames Xuan Feng said as he grinned.

Black Flames Wild Bow immediately agreed, and laughed inwardly. Taking advantage of women gave him great delight. He raised his hand and 10 or so people began to advance with him towards the girls. The other Black Flames Alliance members all grinned, and began to shrink down the circle.

However, what disappointed them was that none of the girls looked scared at all. Instead, they all seemed to have a slight look of derision on their faces. When they were about 5 metres apart, Mu Bing Yao stepped forwards. As she looked into their eyes, it was almost as if a cold blade had been stabbed into their eyes, causing their entire bodies to feel cold.

The Black Flames Alliance members all stopped laughing, and looked at Mu Bing Yao in shock. A single movement had caused such a disturbance in their hearts. Even their Alliance Master, Black Flames Savage Gale, wasn’t capable of releasing such an aura. Seeing this extremely cold beauty release such an aura, they no longer dared to laugh or even mock the girls. They could only stare in shock and fear. Even idiots would be able to tell that this woman was incredibly scary.

Black Flames Wild Bow, who was at the front, felt the effects the strongest. The cold aura Mu Bing Yao had released made it hard for him to even breath. He looked at her with trembling eyes... Suddenly he remembered why she looked so familiar to him.

“S-s-she… she’s the Frozen Hearted Man-eater! The Frozen Hearted Man-eater on the Heaven Rankings!!”

Black Flames Wild Bow dashed backwards, as he pointed to Mu Bing Yao and yelled out.

The Plains Region District 3 was a prime zone for training. As such there were many players around, who came over to watch the show. What Black Flames Wild Bow had just shouted was almost like a bomb going off in the ears of all the onlookers.

Chapter 281 - Suffering A Heavy Loss (2)

Heaven Ranking experts were all legendary existences. They all stood in a place that normal players could only look up to, but could never get close to. Every single player on the Heaven Rankings was known by almost every player in China, and were not existences to be trifled with. When the name “Frozen Hearted Man-eater” was yelled out, all of the Black Flame Alliance members all stared with wide eyes, and started to let out cold sweat.

Once fifth-ranked, now sixth-ranked, Frozen Hearted Man-eater: Mu Bing Yao!

Indeed, only the Frozen Hearted Man-eater could release such an icy and stifling aura. All of the spectators became more and more excited, and quickly told other people that the Frozen Hearted Man-eater had appeared in the Plains Region District 3. Gradually, the crowd of spectators increased to the point that they outnumbered the Black Flames Alliance members.

Black Flames Wild Bow retreated to where Black Flames Xuan Feng was, and asked, while wiping the sweat off his forehead, “Young master, what should we do? This person is definitely the Frozen Hearted Man-eater! I’ve met her before, but didn’t recognise her just then.”

“Frozen Hearted Man-eater? So what? She’s just a single woman, but we have 300 people. Are you saying we should be afraid of her?” Black Flames Xuan Feng’s expression did not change in the slightest as he nonchalantly replied.

Within the Black Flames Alliance, Black Flames Xuan Feng was like a god. Everything was according to his whim, and his father never put him in charge of anything... because he simply had no talent in anything. As such, he had developed an incredibly self-centred and self-absorbed personality since he was young, and only viewed the Heaven Ranking experts as 'players who were stronger than other players'. In light of his Black Flames Alliance, which had more than 100,000 people, any Heavens Ranking experts could be destroyed in an instant. As such, he did not have much of a reaction when he heard Frozen Hearted Man-eater's name.

Black Flames Wild Bow quickly replied, "Young master, of course our Black Flames Alliance isn't afraid of her. However... it's not best to offend a Heaven Ranking expert. Otherwise, we might bring trouble on ourselves.

In the early stages of the game, the Heaven Ranking experts didn't have much of an advantage over normal players. After all, everyone started at the same point and they hadn't had much time to develop yet. However, after upgrading their profession at LV50, they would become incredibly powerful existences. When that happened, the Ranking Competition for Earth and Heaven Rankings would be arranged again. For a Heaven Ranking expert, defeating a hundred people by themselves wouldn't be a very difficult task. If one offended a Heaven Ranking expert, that expert would be able to get revenge even if that person had hundreds of people protecting them. Moreover, how was it possible for someone to keep hundreds or thousands of people around them constantly as bodyguards? Furthermore, every Heaven Ranking expert had countless fans and admirers. As the highest ranking (publicly known) female on the Heaven Rankings, more than half of all female players were her fans and admirers.

As such, Heaven Ranking experts definitely couldn't be offended-this was something that all players knew. However, this self-absorbed young master of the Black Flames Alliance wasn't able to comprehend such a thing.

From the reactions of the other Black Flames Alliance members, Black Flames Xuan Feng could clearly tell that they were all quite afraid of this 'Mu Bing Yao'. Seeing that there were more and more spectators, he gritted his teeth, and said in a low voice, "A bunch of trash. A single woman can scare you all like this! I'm the young master of the Black Flames Alliance, and we have more than 100,000 players in our guild-are you all going to retreat because of this woman? We would become laughingstocks!

"No, no, no, of course not." Black Flames Wild Bow quickly shook his head, "I just meant that because she's the Frozen Hearted Man-eater, we should use some gentler methods, so as to avoid conflict." He swallowed a mouthful of saliva, and he said in a soft voice, "Young master, you haven't paid much attention to outside affairs, so you might not know how scary Heaven Ranking experts are. You definitely must not view her as an ordinary woman. Three years ago, in the Third International War, she killed over 500 Russian players in an hour in the Western Battlefield. On average, that's about 1 player every 7 seconds, and she maintained that for 1 hour... this was the highest record for number of players killed in the Western Battlefield, and it hasn't been broken ever since. Even though we have 300 people, maybe... it won't be enough.

Actually, Mu Bing Yao was only LV21, and had not developed much yet. Against 300 players, she definitely had no chance of

victory. However, Black Flames Wild Bow knew that invoking the wrath and hatred of a Heaven Ranking expert over such a trivial matter definitely wasn't worth it, so he tried to urge Black Flames Xuan Feng to resolve things peacefully. He continued to speak, "Also, everyone knows that the Frozen Hearted Man-eater is part of a mysterious guild called Heart's Dream, and the creator of Heart's Dream is Ling Tian, who doesn't take even the Yan Huang Alliance seriously!"

"Heart's Dream... Ling Tian? So they're all part of Heart's Dream?" No matter how self-absorbed and ignorant Black Flames Xuan Feng was, he wouldn't not know Ling Tian's name. His father had very seriously warned him before that under no circumstances was he to offend Ling Tian.

Against someone who even his father took seriously, even he wouldn't dare to act too arrogantly.

"Goddamit, I knew that women of this quality definitely wouldn't have simple backgrounds. They're actually part of that guild that dad told me not to offend... could they be Ling Tian's women?" Thinking to here, Black Flames Xuan Feng's eyes burned with jealousy. However, Ling Tian's name was enough to keep him in check. After all, he wasn't that much of an idiot. He smiled, and said, "So it's the famous Frozen Hearted Man-eater. To be able to meet such a legendary figure is my fortune. If I had known it was Frozen Hearted Man-eater earlier, we definitely wouldn't have had this misunderstanding. Since this was all a misunderstanding, I hope these beauties won't take offence."

Afterwards, he made a signal and all of the players surrounding

the girls moved back behind Black Flames Xuan Feng.

Seeing that Black Flames Xuan Feng was going to let these girls go so easily, Pink Rosa was incredibly displeased, “Hubby, are you going to let them go just like this? What about my dress? They’re just 5 girls, but we have so many people, and there are so many people watching. If we just let them go like this, won’t people laugh at us… hubby, you’re the young master of the Black Flames Alliance.”

Of course, Black Flames Xuan Feng wasn’t willing to let them go like this either, but he had to endure, “I’ve got no choice. Dad told me that Ling Tian is way out of our league, and that I wasn’t to offend him no matter what. These women might all be Ling Tian’s women… but don’t worry, I’ll try to get that dress for you in future.”

With Mu Bing Yao being recognised as the Frozen Hearted Man-eater, the Black Flames Alliance decided to back off. The girls finally let out a sigh of relief. Xiao Qi looked at Mu Bing Yao in admiration as she said, “Big sister Bing Yao, you’re so incredible. You didn’t even fight or even speak, but still scared them stiff. No less than expected from the woman big brother respects the most! Heheh, if I didn’t already have a sister-in-law, I’d definitely get big brother to chase you.”

Mu Bing Yao: “……”

“Let’s go,” Shui Ruo held Tian Tian’s hand as she patted her chest, “Luckily things turned out well. I’ll let big brother know that we’re fine.”

The girls quickly left together, but the anger within their hearts wasn't so easily quelled. Moreover, their prime training area was now going to be the Black Flame Alliance's. However, they had to silently endure because they didn't want to risk what had just happened happening again.

"Let's go!" Black Flames Xuan Feng called out as he reluctantly watched the girls leave. Just as he finished speaking, a cold voice rang out, causing everyone to fall silent.

"Go? Ha... you're not going anywhere."

This voice... Xiao Qi suddenly turned around, and excitedly said, "Big brother! Ah! And also sister-in-law!"

The crowd of spectators parted, and a man carrying a large, bronze sword slowly walked in. The man was tall and strong-looking, but his looks were average. Apart from the massive sword he carried on his back, there wasn't much else exceptional-looking about him. However, his eyes were as sharp and cold as an eagle's.

Behind him was a troop of around 1,000 people. Although there were so many of them, they marched in orderly rows in perfect unison. Furthermore, all of these people gave off an aura that made it clear that none of them were ordinary players.

The man stopped walking, and without requiring any further orders, his subordinates got into formation, blocking off any escape for the Black Flames Alliance. Seeing the emblem of the

group, the spectators started to yell out, “It’s the Battle Alliance!”

Black Flames Wild Bow stared at the man at the front, and thought back to what he had said not too long ago, and his face instantly paled.

It was obvious that this group didn’t carry good intentions for them. The Black Flames Alliance only had 300 people here, but were facing off against more than 1,000 people. Moreover, all of the Battle Alliance members were part of the Battle Alliance in the real world, and a large portion of them were connected with the mafia. As such, no one was willing to get into conflict with the Battle Alliance. If the Black Flames Alliance wanted to go against the Battle Alliance, the result would be the complete annihilation of the Black Flames Alliance. Black Flames Xuan Feng went up and greeted them, “I am the young master of the Black Flames Alliance, Black Flames Xuan Feng. There doesn’t seem to be any grievances between us, so I’m not quite sure what your intentions are.”

“No grievances?” The eagle-eyed man coldly laughed, his piercing gaze caused Black Flames Xuan Feng to inwardly shudder, “You bullied my little sister, then insulted me, and yet you say there are no grievances between us?”

“H-h-he’s the Heaven Rankings expert, the Cold Magistrate who kills without blinking, Xiao Qiu Feng!” Black Flames Wild Bow retreated behind Black Flames Xuan Feng as he babbled, “It’s over… just then, that chick… she was really Xiao Qiu Feng’s little sister! It’s possible that her communication device was on the whole time and he heard what we were saying!”

“Xiao… Qiu Feng?” Black Flames Xuan Feng’s face sank, and his mouth twitched.

It seemed that this time he was going to suffer a heavy loss!

“Goddamit, quickly summon people, as many as possible!” Everyone knew about Xiao Qiu Feng, the ‘Cold Magistrate’. Black Flames Xuan Feng knew that the outcome of today’s events wouldn’t be a peaceful one.

“Big brother, you finally came!” Xiao Qi skipped over to him, with the other girls following behind her. She pointed at Black Flames Xuan Feng, “We’ll introduce you guys… he’s the one who was bullying us! Especially that person over there, he also insulted big brother! Plus, the way he looked at us… I wanted to rip his eyes out.”

Xiao Qiu Feng nodded as his face darkened. He raised his hands and took out the massive sword, and dragged it on the ground as he slowly walked towards Black Flames Xuan Feng.

The crowd instantly fell silent.

There was no fury, no questioning, no ridiculing. It was just a single man silently dragging a massive sword towards Black Flames Xuan Feng.

Black Flames Xuan Feng immediately knew that this sort of silent advance was even scarier than being mocked or ridiculed, or

having Xiao Qiu Feng charging at him while yelling. As Xiao Qiu Feng expressionlessly walked closer and closer, Black Flame Xuan Feng's face remained unchanged, but his heart began to beat faster and faster.

When the Cold Magistrate wanted to kill someone, he wouldn't hesitate in the slightest or waste any words.

Only after a few steps, Black Flames Xuan Feng felt like his heart was about to explode. He had never felt so suffocated by the pressure from a Heaven Ranking expert. As he watched Xiao Qiu Feng walk closer and closer, he felt that his feet weren't walking on the ground, but rather on his heart. This sort of terrifying feeling caused him to want to turn around and run immediately. However, under the gaze of the crowd, he gritted his teeth and endured it. He inhaled, then yelled, "Alliance Master Xiao, I think there might be a misunderstanding between us."

If Xiao Qiu Feng replied, no matter what he said, the pressure would definitely decrease. However, Xiao Qiu Feng stayed silent, and continued to walk forwards. Black Flames Xuan Feng began to sweat, and reached his limit. He yelled out, "Goddamit! My Black Flames Alliance isn't afraid of your Battle Alliance! Go, destroy this Xiao Qiu Feng for me!"

Wanting to destroy Xiao Qiu Feng, who had more than a thousand players behind him was simply ridiculous. The spectators all sniggered among themselves.

The Black Flames Alliance members had no choice but to comply. The raised their weapons and charged forwards. At this moment, a

violent gust of wind blew past, causing many players to cry out in shock. When the wind stopped blowing, a person was standing in front of Xiao Qiu Feng. He was facing away from Xiao Qiu Feng, and stretched out his hand, “This idiot wanted to cause trouble for my Heart’s Dream, so I’ll be the one to deal with him. After I’ve dealt with him, it’ll be Alliance Master Xiao’s turn. How does that sound?”

The Plains Region District 3 exploded with noise. Countless players started screaming and shouting...

“Ling Tian!!!!!”

Chapter 282 - Complete And Utter Belief Curse

Ever since his conflict with the Yan Huang Alliance, the name “Ling Tian” was filled with volatility. As such, when Ling Tian appeared, the reaction from the crowd was simply phenomenal. The news spread instantly, and all the spectators madly took photos as fast as they could... today was a day full of surprises. First it was Mu Bing Yao, then Xiao Qiu Feng, and now Ling Tian... all of the legendary figures seemed to be making appearances.

“Big brother!”

“Big brother Ling Tian!”

When Ling Tian appeared, the girls of Heart’s Dream all jumped up in excitement, and rushed behind him. Their faces no longer contained expressions of anxiety, but rather joy and excitement. Even Xiao Qi rushed over to Ling Chen, causing Xiao Qiu Feng’s face to slightly twitch. However, after remembering how he had annihilated the Flame Emperor and defeated the Sword Emperor, as well as killed Long Tian Yun twice, he could only endure.

“Huff... huff... am I late?” Yun Feng came charging over with his own thousand-man troop. As soon as he saw Ling Tian, his eyes lit up and muttered to himself, “Looks like there’s no need for me to get involved... if I knew so many big figures were making appearances, I could’ve just come by myself.”

“Big brother, it’s these people who bullied us! They wanted to

take our training area and big sister's dress! You need to properly teach them a lesson!" Tian Tian angrily said as she pointed at Black Flames Xuan Feng.

"Yeah, yeah! They surrounded us and wouldn't let us go, and the one in charge kept looking at us with dirty eyes. Oh, and they were also mocking you! You've already heard it all through the communication device." Xiao Qi said with her hands on her hips. Inwardly, she was secretly happy. Maybe she would get to see her big brother Ling Tian in action again.

The tense atmosphere Xiao Qiu Feng had created was completely destroyed by Ling Chen's entry. If anyone else said the words that Ling Chen said, he would've ignored them... however, hearing those words come from Ling Chen, a hint of interest flashed across his eyes, and he put away his sword. He returned to where his troops were and crossed his arms, waiting to see how Ling Chen would deal with the Black Flames Alliance. Yun Feng walked over and said in a low voice, "Ay, Xiao bro, what a coincidence. Are you here to watch a good show as well?"

"En." Xiao Qiu Feng replied.

Ling Tian's appearance caused Black Flames Xuan Feng to have a massive headache. His dad had told him that in the entire Mystic Moon world, the person that he must not anger was Ling Tian, the one who could trample on the Yan Huang Alliance singlehandedly. He was someone who did not take even the Yan Huang Alliance seriously, so the Black Flames Alliance would be like nothing to him. Even the Yan Huang Alliance's Long Tian Yun was killed by him twice, even under protection from his army. Killing him, the

young master of the Black Flames Alliance, would be a piece of cake.

As for the spectating players, half of the players had pale faces out of shock, but most of them had expressions of awe and admiration. This was so even for the woman in Black Flames Xuan Feng's arms.

"Y-y-young master! It's Ling Tian..."Black Flames Wild Bow could only stutter. Even before Ling Tian had risen to national fame, he had seen Ling Tian destroy 30 or so people in the Novice Village. That was back in the Novice Village... now, Ling Tian was countless times more powerful than he was then!

"Shut up! Am I blind?" Black Flames Xuan Feng angrily retorted. His hands were covered with cold sweat, and he had a sick feeling in his stomach. If he knew that those girls were in Heart's Dream, he definitely wouldn't have bullied them like that. However, he was lucky that things had already calmed down by the time Ling Tian had arrived. There probably wouldn't be a big confrontation.

"Black Flames Xuan Feng? Young master of the Black Flames Alliance?" Ling Chen looked at the name above Black Flames Xuan Feng's head as he casually spoke. No one knew what his expression was like under his mask.

Black Flames Xuan Feng managed to give a smile, and nodded, "Indeed, that's my name. The name Ling Tian, on the other hand, is incredibly famous, and even my dad pays great respect to you. I never thought that I would have the fortune to meet you in person. Today's events were all a big misunderstanding, but being able to

meet you was quite a pleasant surprise."

This guy's quite good with his words, Ling Chen thought to himself. However, this made things harder for him. If he acted arrogantly towards him, Ling Chen would be able to immediately go and strike him down. But leaving things as they were wasn't his style either.

Because of Ling Tian's appearance, there were more and more players gathering. Soon, there was a sea of people surrounding them. Looking around, Shui Ruo felt a bit anxious. Currently, the Yan Huang Alliance completely hated Ling Tian, and would do anything to kill him. If the information about him being here was being spread, then the Yan Huang Alliance's people would soon come and attack them. The longer they stayed here, the more dangerous it would be for them. She quietly said, "Big brother, we're fine. They let us go, so let's just put this behind us."

Hearing what Shui Ruo said, Black Flames Xuan Feng immediately nodded, and amicably agreed, "That's right, it was really just a misunderstanding. As they say, it's always better to have a friend than an enemy. Our Black Flames Alliance is very willing to become friends with your Heart's Dream."

Of course, Ling Chen knew what Shui Ruo was worried about. Hearing what Black Flames Xuan Feng had said, he started to laugh, "Hahaha, very well, what young master Black Flames said is correct. Having a friend is always better than having an enemy, and since it was all a misunderstanding, let's forget this all happened."

“Something… seems a bit off.” Yun Feng said as he stared wide-eyed.

“Indeed.” Xiao Qiu Feng nodded. He hadn’t met this Ling Tian many times before, but he definitely wasn’t someone to forgive and forget so easily.

“Ahhhhh! How can you just let this go! He bullied us just then, big brother, big brother…” Tian Tian stared to protest as she pulled on Ling Chen’s clothes. Shui Ruo quickly ran over and said in a soft voice, “Tian Tian, if big brother stays here any longer, we’ll be in danger.”

Black Flames Xuan Feng was overjoyed and let out a long sigh of relief. He knew that Ling Tian was probably afraid of being caught by the Yan Huang Alliance, and thus wasn’t willing to stay longer than necessary. Black Flames Xuan Feng quickly said, “Ling Tian’s character is refreshingly straightforward. Our Black Flames Alliance welcomes you all to come and visit any time. So…”

“So, can I ask young master Black Flames a question?” Ling Chen suddenly interrupted him, speaking with a pleasant tone.

Black Flames Xuan Feng’s heart skipped a beat as he asked, “What is it?”

“From what I was told, it seems that you wanted my little sister’s dress?” Ling Chen looked towards the Moon God Light Dress that Shui Ruo was wearing.

“Haha…” Black Flames Xuan Feng dryly laughed, and replied, “Indeed, my wife fell in love with her beautiful dress, and wanted me to buy it for her. I always try to fulfil her wishes, so perhaps I was a bit rash with my actions. This was the source of the misunderstanding, and I hope that you’ll be able to let this go.”

“Haha!” Ling Chen laughed, “So it was such a small thing. Indeed, it was just a small misunderstanding. Wow, young master Black Flames is very loving towards his wife, this is very admirable. It’s just a pity though…” Ling Chen said as he looked at Pink Rosa and shook his head.

“Pity? Brother Ling Tian, what do you mean by that…?” Black Flames Xuan Feng asked.

Ling Chen looked right into Black Flames Xuan Feng’s eyes, and a strange light flashed in Ling Tian’s eyes as he replied, “It’s just a pity that young master Black Flames’ wife has been having an affair with Black Flames Wild Bow. Such a pity…”

As soon as he said this, the sea of spectators began to clamour.

“What?!” Anyone with even half a brain would think that this was Ling Tian mocking and ridiculing Black Flames Xuan Feng. However, hearing this, Black Flames Xuan Feng acted completely contrary to what everyone expected. His rage was evident as his face became redder and redder. He pushed away the woman in his arms, and slapped Black Flames Wild Bow. His voice trembled with fury as he spoke, “You… you dared to seduce my wife!”

“No… I didn’t! I didn’t!” After being suddenly slapped, Black Flames Wild Bow covered his face as he desperately protested.

“Hubby, don’t listen to him. How could we possibly…”

“Piss off!” Before Pink Rosa could even finish her sentence, Black Flames Xuan Feng once again pushed her away and slapped Black Flames Wild Bow again, “You actually dared to seduce my wife!!”

“I didn’t, I really didn’t…”

“Hahahaha!” Ling Tian began to laugh uproariously, “He didn’t just seduce your wife; he also seduced your mum!”

“What!!” Black Flames Xuan Feng’s eyes nearly popped out their sockets as he stared at Black Flames Wild Bow, who was cowering with his hands over his head. His expression was just like that of a maddened wild beast’s, “You… you dared to seduce my mum! I’ll kill you… I’ll definitely kill you!!”

Black Flames Xuan Feng took out his weapon, and slashed towards Black Flames Wild Bow.

Black Flames Wild Bow desperately dodged, as he screamed, “Young master… young master, please calm down! Your esteemed mother… she already died 3 years ago!!”

“You dared to seduce her even though she was dead… I’ll kill you!!” Fury and humiliation was written all over Black Flames

Xuan Feng's face as he once against furiously chopped towards Black Flames Wild Bow.

By now, Ling Tian was bent over laughing. The spectators watched with their mouths wide open... was this young master of the Black Flames Alliance an idiot?

Chapter 283 - Lovey Lovey Curse

The entire sea of spectators watched in silence as their mouths hung open in absolute shock. Ling Chen had casually said that his right hand man was having an affair with his wife, and yet Black Flames Xuan Feng had immediately believed this, and became completely infuriated... what's more, he even believed that his right hand man had actually seduced his mother. Before, most players had all respected him because he was the young master of the Black Flames Alliance, but now, they all looked at him like he was a complete idiot.

"Is this guy acting? It doesn't seem like it. Plus, his old ma was killed a long time ago, wasn't she?" Yun Feng tapped on his chin as he watched with interest.

"He's either an Oscar-level actor or an absolute fool." Xiao Qiu Feng coldly said.

"Oscar-level actor? What's his motive for putting on such a show? There doesn't seem to be any benefit to him-I mean, I doubt he would do such a thing just so we can have a good laugh. I'd actually respect him if he was willing to trample all over his dignity just to let the masses feel happy, hehe." Yun Feng laughed.

"Young master, please calm down, calm down!" All of the other Black Flames Alliance members came up to restrain Black Flames Xuan Feng. There was one member who hurriedly said, "Young master, Wild Bow is completely loyal to young master. He definitely wouldn't seduce the young mistress. Plus, the young master and young mistress are always together. Even if someone

wanted to seduce her it'd be impossible. Young master, please don't believe Ling Tian's words."

Seeing Black Flames Xuan Feng's expression and actions, he definitely wasn't acting. It seemed that he actually believed what Ling Tian had said... these things that even an idiot wouldn't believe, he had actually completely and utterly believed! The Black Flames Alliance members felt that the collective IQ of the Black Flames Alliance had been singlehandedly dragged down by this young master. With so many people watching, their Black Flames Alliance's reputation had hit rock bottom.

After being restrained by the other Black Flames Alliance members, Black Flames Xuan Feng yelled for a few seconds longer before settling down. He quickly looked around him, and realised that he had been completely lost to his anger from just a few words from Ling Tian. He inhaled and exhaled, and said in a cold voice, "Forget it, we'll discuss this matter when we get back. We're leaving."

Ling Chen smirked. Black Flames Xuan Feng's behaviour obviously wasn't because he was an idiot. Rather, it was because Ling Chen had used a 'Complete and Utter Belief Curse' on him. The effects of this curse were quite strong-Black Flames Xuan Feng had even believed that someone had seduced his mother who died 3 years ago. However, it was a pity that the effects were quite short. After all, his Comprehension was only 12, so the effects only lasted for 12 seconds. The effects had already worn off on Black Flames Xuan Feng. However, he didn't seem to notice the Feng Chen Curse that had been used on him... at most, he probably thought that he had suddenly lost his temper.

Seeing that they were about to leave, Ling Chen slyly smiled to himself. He looked towards Black Flames Wild Bow and Pink Rosa, and his eyes once again shone with a mysterious light. A ‘Lovey Lovey Curse’ fell on both people-after all it could only be used on two people.

Just as she was about to leave with Black Flames Xuan Feng, Pink Rosa suddenly stopped, and turned around, gazing at Black Flames Wild Bow, who was still on the ground. Her eyes revealed a look of deep pain and sorrow, to the point that tears almost started to come out. At the same time, Black Flames Wild Bow raised his head and gazed into Pink Rosa’s eyes. As the Black Flames Alliance members watched in dismay, Pink Rosa shrugged off Black Flames Xuan Feng and threw herself towards Black Flames Wild Bow. When she got to him, there were tears in her eyes as she helped him up, looking at him lovingly, “Big Bow, let me help you up. Seeing you suffer so much, it felt like a knife was cutting into my heart. I just can’t help it anymore. Even if I’m laughed at by others, or thrown away, I want everyone to know that the person I’ve always loved is you. I don’t feel anything towards Xuan Feng. You’re the one I’ve always loved; I just can’t hold it back anymore.”

Whoosh.....

Many peoples’ mouths were now wider than their heads. All of the Black Flames Alliance members stared in complete shock, and Black Flames Xuan Feng’s face once again twisted with horror and anger.

Hearing Pink Rosa’s words, Black Flames Wild Bow stood up and

grabbed her hand. He deeply gazed into her eyes, and spoke as if they were the only ones in the world, “As long as I have you, even if I die, I’ll be content. You are the person I love most. To me, you’re even more important than my life. Even if you’re the young master’s wife, even if I have to give up everything, I still want to be with you.”

After speaking, the two of them tightly hugged together as their tears poured out.

Even Ling Chen’s expression was the same as every single onlooker-his jaw almost hit the ground… the effects of these curses were way too savage! The Lovey Lovey Curse had instantly created an adulterous couple who were deeply, madly, utterly in love with each other!

“Holy friggin crap, the world’s going crazy.” Yun Feng said with his neck stretched forwards and eyes as large as plates.

“So… moving… these two…” Even Xiao Qiu Feng’s eyes seemed to be a bit wet.

Instantly, a tabloid had already published this sensational story… the Black Flame Alliance young master’s most trusted man and his wife had been having an affair. What’s more, they had openly declared their love for each other in the Plains Region in front of masses of people… ah! What a story!

Ding, 12 seconds was up.

Black Flames Xuan Feng looked as if he had just eaten a thousand dead flies, and his entire face was dark green. Being cheated on by one's wife was one of the most humiliating things that could happen to a man. Moreover, his wife... his beloved wife had actually, in front of him, in front of so many other people, said such things to his most trusted man. This was the most humiliated that he had ever felt in his entire life. His head felt like it was almost about to explode. He screamed, got out his weapon and charged towards Black Flames Wild Bow and Pink Rosa.

At this moment, Black Flames Wild Bow and Pink Rosa were staring at each other. However, now, their stares were filled with shock and bewilderment. Neither of them understood why they had been filled with such desire for each other. They simply didn't know what to say. A wave of fear came over them, but it was too late.

"You adulterous couple, I'll kill you both!! Arghh!!"

Black Flames Xuan Feng charged over while madly yelling. Pink Rosa, who was scared out of her mind, grabbed onto his legs, "Hubby! Hubby, let me explain, just then... just then... ah!"

How could Black Flames Xuan Feng possible listen to her explanation? Before she could even finish her sentence, Black Flames Xuan Feng's flurry of attacks had already killed her, turning her into a ray of white light.

"Young master, I-I-I-..." Black Flames Wild Bow was so scared that he desperately tried to crawl and clamber away. He simply didn't know how to explain what had just happened.

“Die, you traitor!! Die!!”

Black Flames Xuan Feng charged up and wildly slashed down at Black Flames Wild Bow. A few moments later, Black Flames Wild Bow cried out, and also turned into a ray of white light.

After killing this ‘adulterous couple’, Black Flames Xuan Feng’s chest heaved as he breathed in and out. The surrounding Black Flames Alliance members all watched in shock and fear, while the spectating players muttered among themselves. Some were pitying Black Flames Xuan Feng, others were laughing, and others were watching in silence. All of this was completely unexpected. This humiliation suffered by the young master of the Black Flames Alliance was bound to spread like wildfire. The young master was soon to become a complete laughingstock.

Clang! Black Flames Xuan Feng threw his weapon on the ground, then turned and ran away. All of the other Black Flames Alliance members all quickly left as well.

“You’re not going to chase after them?” Yun Feng asked.

“Hmph,” Xiao Qiu Feng replied, “I wasn’t going to let them go no matter what, but after seeing how pitiful he is, I changed my mind.”

“Hoh, since when did this Cold Magistrate start having feelings? This is rare~ But then again, we didn’t come here for nothing-after all, we got to watching something very amusing.” Not only was

everything resolved for their side, but they also got to see a spectacular performance. Yun Feng was feeling incredibly refreshed. However, he suddenly realised that something was off, “Eh, where’s Meng Xin? It was her who called me here.”

A bit further away, the girls had surrounded Ling Tian and were laughing happily.

“Haha, big brother Ling Tian’s so cool. As soon as big brother Ling Tian appeared, the young master of the Black Flames Alliance’s face instantly went white as a sheet.”

“Seeing that funny scene made me feel so much better. That young master of the Black Flames Alliance is such an idiot. What’s more, his woman and his subordinate had an affair, and they actually… hahaha, so, so funny. Now that young master probably wants to live in a hole for the rest of his life. Well, as they say, what goes around comes around. Who told him to bully us?”

“But… but that young master was still quite pitiful…”

“Big brother, seeing as things have been settled here, you should probably leave. The Yan Huang Alliance definitely knows that you’re here, so if you don’t leave soon there might be problems.” Shui Ruo was becoming more and more worried as she looked around.

“They should arrive in 30 seconds at the latest.” Ling Chen casually replied.

“Ah?” The girls all stared at him in shock.

“If you stay away from here, they probably won’t go after any of you. Plus, if it’s just me, they won’t be able to stop me from escaping no matter what they do.” After saying this, Ling Chen turned around and walked in front of Xiao Qiu Feng and Yun Feng, “The rest of this is my personal matter, so I hope you won’t interfere.”

Before Yung Feng and Xiao Qiu Feng could even reply, a massive army of players rushed towards them like floodwaters from every direction, blocking all escape routes... they had evidently coordinated so that they would attack at the same time to prevent Ling Chen from escaping.

Chapter 284 - Armoured Cavalry And Heaven's Net Corps (1)

The Yan Huang Alliance simply had too many members. As soon as Ling Chen had appeared at the Plains Region, the headquarters of the Yan Huang Alliance had already been notified. They immediately began to order members to group together. Ever since the Yan Huang Alliance issued the kill-on-sight order for Ling Tian, they had never even been able to catch a glimpse of his shadow. The only possibility was that Ling Tian only went to advanced places where other players were not able to go. Now that he had finally appeared, how could they just let him go?

The army let out a deafening roar like rolling thunder. There were probably more than 10,000 players gathered in that army. The only ones who could gather such an number of people in such a short period time was the Yan Huang Alliance.

The sheer numbers of this army caused everyone to stare in fright-even Ling Chen stared in shock for a while... even for him, 10,000 people was a bit too much.

"There's got to be at least 10,000 people there! Long Tian Yun actually hates Ling Tian so much that he'd send out so many people just to kill him." Yun Feng said as he slowly inhaled.

"The only person in his entire life who was able to humiliate him so much was Ling Tian. How could he not hate him? This isn't strange at all." Xiao Qiu Feng said emotionless. He looked at Ling Chen, "Even though they didn't have much time to gather their people, the Yan Huang Alliance is the Yan Huang Alliance after all.

Unless Ling Tian forcefully breaks out of this army, there'll be no other way for him to escape. I want to see just how he's going to get out of this one."

"Get back as far as you can!" Ling Chen looked around and saw that there was space near the north. He quickly sprinted towards the people that were charging towards him from the north.

"Ah, big brother!"

"Stay here." Shui Ruo quickly grabbed Tian Tian and stroked her head, "Don't go over there. Big brother will definitely fine. If we go over there, we'll only be burdens to him."

Although she said this, seeing the Yan Huang Alliance's massive army, even Shui Ruo's hand started letting out cold sweat. This was the first time she had seen such an army in the virtual world.

All of the spectators quickly got out of the way. All of them held emotions of anxiety, mixed with worry and excitement as they watched Ling Tian being surrounded by the Yan Huang Alliance. A single person being surrounded by 10,000 people-they had never heard of, much less seen such a thing before. Ling Tian had officially become the first person to cause the Yan Huang Alliance to deploy such a large number of troops for a single person. Most of the spectating players were worried about Ling Tian's safety, but were also hoping that he would once again be able to create another miracle.

"CHARGE!!!!"

Ling Chen stopped running and stood his ground as the yelling came closer and closer. The Yan Huang Alliance members were coming closer and closer from all directions. 50 metres, 40 metres, 30 metres, 20 metres...

Leading the charge were the melee professions, such as Warriors and Assassins. There weren't any ranged professions like Mages or Archers-perhaps they were near the back of the army.

In a battle where one party was vastly outnumbered, using ranged attackers would always be more effective. Ling Chen felt that something was off, but he didn't have any time to think as the Yan Huang Alliance members were almost upon him. He held the Zephyr Blade in his left hand and the Great Ravager in his right, silently waiting for them to come closer. From above, one could see the gap between Ling Chen and the Yan Huang Alliance members slowly closing... before it altogether disappeared.

Bang!!

Any normal person being suddenly overwhelmed with so many people would be unable to fight back at all. Seeing this, the spectators all cried out in shock. However, from the centre of the encirclement came a large explosion and cries of pain. Ling Chen's "Four Corners Star Formation" had blasted all players within 10 metres of him away. Not only were the players that were hit instantly killed, but they flew at such a speed that they smashed into the players behind them as well. Because the army was charging at such a speed, none of the players could slow down in time, resulting in many of the Yan Huang Alliance players

collapsing and trampling on each other. Instantly, almost the entire army fell into chaos and confusion from just one attack from Ling Chen. The players at the front and middle were all tripping and collapsing over each other, while the players at the back who didn't know what was going on continued to charge forwards.

After Ling Chen attacked just once, the Yan Huang Alliance army's morale had already plummeted. Ling Chen coldly gazed at the players around him, and finally started moving. He charged towards the players in front of him, darting into their ranks and swung the Zephyr Blade and Great Ravager like the scythes of a deathgod.

Bang!!

Bang!!

-2503, -2500, -5002, -2508...

Another two explosions sounded out as Ling Chen sent out two Ling Tian Bursts. 11 players were simultaneously hit, and were sent flying as they were instantly killed. With so many players around him, instantly killing 11 players was as easy as stepping on an ant. Before the surviving players could adjust accordingly, Ling Chen continuously attacked, completely destroying the players around him. Ling Chen's Ling Tian Burst was already LV6, and could cover a range of 6 metres. With both hands sending out Ling Tian Bursts, he could instantly clear an area with a diameter of 12 metres each time. This meant that unless they were ranged professions, the players around him simply couldn't get close enough to even attack.

If Ling Chen only had one weapon, then he wouldn't be as scary. If he only had one weapon, he would only be able to send his Ling Tian Bursts in one direction, while players could swarm him from behind. However, being able to wipe both the front and back clear, with his attack power, it was simply impossible for any player to get close enough to him without dying.

Just like this, with the Zephyr Blade in his left hand and the Great Ravager in his right, Ling Chen charged like a tiger into a pack of defenceless sheep. With both of his weapons constantly attacking, there was always a large space around him. Before that space could even be filled with players by half, it would be completely cleared out again. The red damage figures that appeared caused all of the spectating players to watch in awe. Some of the Yan Huang Alliance players were so amazed that they even forgot to attack...

Against an enemy who could instantly kill all his targets, the melee professions were all cannon-fodder for his attacks. No matter how hard they tried, none of the Warriors or Assassins could do anything against him. Even the Assassins, who activated their stealth abilities could only be mercilessly destroyed by Ling Chen's attacks that dealt AOE damage.

"Wah!! Big brother's so strong!!" Tian Tian, who was originally quite anxious, yelled out in delight as her mouth formed a large 'O'. She began to jump up and down in excitement.

With his incredible Movement Speed, Ling Chen continuously dashed around within the ranks of the army. Wherever he went,

he would leave behind crowds of corpses. There was not a single player who could withstand even one attack from him. Moreover, he had not been hurt even once.

Back then, it was also in the Plains Region where Ling Chen killed Long Tian Yun twice despite being surrounded by thousands of Yan Huang Alliance players. However, that time, none of them had expected him to be so strong, and the Yan Huang Alliance was grossly underprepared. This time, there were many, many more people and they were much more coordinated. More and more players came to spectate what was going on. All of them had wide eyes and hanging mouths as they watched a single person wreak havoc within an army of more than 10,000 people.

1 minute, 2 minutes, 3 minutes...

As the time dragged on and on, Ling Chen still had not been hurt at all, whereas there were more and more corpses on the ground. Being able to cast the Ling Tian Burst about once every second, rushing towards him was tantamount to suicide.

“Ling Tian’s skills are way too OP! It has such a large AOE with such a short cooldown time!” Yun Feng exclaimed as he watched intently, his heart rapidly beating. Being able to do such a thing at only LV20 was simply legendary.

“True, his skills are very powerful. However, the skills themselves are not what makes him so scary. Because he can use two weapons simultaneously, he can use these skills twice at the same time, which puts them on a completely different level.” Xiao Qiu Feng slowly said. Normally, attacks with large AOEs had long

cooldown times. However, Ling Chen could use these skills with almost no cooldown time, and could also cast them from both weapons. It was simply terrifying.

"However, it's a bit strange," Yun Feng said while frowning, "With these sorts of skills, Ling Tian definitely wouldn't be worried about being surrounded. However, why are all of these Yan Huang Alliance players melee professions? Plus, after such a long time, they should know that just charging up is basically suicide. So why would they continuously charge at him? It's almost like..."

"...Buying time!" Xiao Qiu Feng said with a cold expression.

At this moment, Yun Feng and Xiao Qiu Feng simultaneously thought of something, and spoke at the same time, "Heaven's Net Corps!!"

Somewhere else.....

Long Tian Yun was sitting on a chair in a hall, expressionlessly watching the live recording of what was happening in the Plains Region. Beside him, Flame Shadow breathed in, and said, "Young master, this Ling Tian's capabilities are simply too monstrous. He's only LV20, so when he has fully developed, the consequences will be dire! With this level of power, perhaps he really is comparable to that God-level player in the West: Eve!"

"Hmph!" Long Tian Yun coldly laughed, "Then we just have to destroy him before he can fully develop. How long until the

Armoured Calvary and Heaven's Net Corps arrive?"

"The Armoured Cavalry is about to arrive, with the Heaven's Net Corps due to arrive shortly afterwards. Part of the Heaven's Net Corps is already waiting at the Azure Dragon City revival point. This time, it's going to be impossible for Ling Tian to escape." Flame Shadow replied.

Chapter 285 - Armoured Cavalry And Heaven's Net Corps (2)

Ling Chen body flittered through the ranks of the army, casually killing groups of melee players. Even if there were 20,000 people surrounding him, he wouldn't feel any pressure at all. However, he was becoming more and more suspicious-why were there only Warriors and Assassins, and not any ranged professions or Summoners?

Oh? Are they trying to buy time?

Using 10,000 people to buy time? How extravagant. Even if you have more people, it'd be useless.

At this moment, Ling Chen suddenly saw dust flying in the distance, and the sound of hooves beating the ground gradually filled the air. Hearing this sound, Yun Feng and Xiao Qiu Feng's faces changed. Yun Feng quickly turned on his communication device, and yelled to Ling Chen, "Ling Tian, be careful! It's the Yan Huang Alliance's Armoured Cavalry!!"

Armoured Cavalry? Ling Chen frowned.

The players around him simultaneously received some sort of signal or message, and all quickly retreated. Ling Chen didn't chase after them, but stood his ground. He wanted to see just how strong this Armoured Cavalry was.

“Ling Tian, immediately try to rush into the army of Yan Huang Alliance players. Otherwise, if you’re surrounded by the Armoured Cavalry, you’ll definitely be killed! The Yan Huang Alliance’s Armoured Cavalry are always the vanguards in any large-scale conflict, and can easily destroy an enemy force of the same number of people. This time, there are at least 2,000 of them!”

To be able to gather 2,000 Armoured Cavalry troops in such a short period of time-no less than expected from the Yan Huang Alliance. It was evident how much Long Tian Yun wanted to kill Ling Tian. Under the fierce attacks from the Armoured Cavalry, even a large force could be destroyed, much less a single person. However, even after hearing Yun Feng’s warning, Ling Chen did not move. Soon, a large troop of people wearing full-body armour, carrying shields and riding black horses appeared, surrounding Ling Chen. Their mounts were all the highest quality and most luxurious mounts from the Mount Shop... Cloud Stepping Mares!

Seeing himself surrounded, Ling Chen began to feel a bit of pressure from this Armoured Cavalry. His expression became serious.

“It’s the Yan Huang Alliance’s Armoured Cavalry!!”

“Using so many Armoured Cavalry players just to get rid of Ling Tian, is the Yan Huang Alliance crazy?”

“Of course they’re not crazy! Before Ling Tian appeared, Long Tian Yun had never failed at anything before. Ling Tian is the bane of his existence, so such action is justified by his immense hatred.”

“It’s over! Even if Ling Chen’s a god, he can do nothing against 2,000 Armoured Cavalry.”

“Crap… It’s the Yan Huang Alliance’s Armoured Cavalry! Big brother Ling Tian…” Xiao Qi and Su’Er both covered their mouths, “What do we do… What do we do?”

“Big brother, go and help big brother Ling Tian! With so many Armoured Cavalry, it’s way too dangerous for big brother Ling Tian!” Xiao Qi rushed over to Xiao Qiu Feng as she shouted.

Xiao Qiu Feng looked at the 2,000 Armoured Cavalry and shook his head, “The Yan Huang Alliance’s Armoured Cavalry is equipped with the best Armour, Shields and Mounts. With the people I have here, I won’t be able to do anything. Moreover, I have no reason to help Ling Tian-after all, the consequences would be incredibly severe for me.”

“But, but…” Xiao Qi knew what Xiao Qiu Feng said was right. However, apart from begging Xiao Qiu Feng, she didn’t have any other ideas. At this moment, the command to attack was finally issued.

“Attack!!”

“Charge!!”

Under the order, the thousands of horses charged

simultaneously. The thundering of hooves on the ground was deafening, and caused tremors throughout the ground. 2,000 Armoured Cavalry charged at Ling Chen from all directions. Cloud Stepping Mares were incredibly fast, and anyone seeing so many horses thundering towards them with the riders also clamouring would find it difficult not to be scared. In the centre, Ling Chen tightly gripped his weapons.

It seemed that this Armoured Cavalry was of pretty decent calibre.

Heavy Armour and heavy shields, combined with such momentum... even if it was him, being hit by any of these would result in him being smashed into the air. Once he fell down, countless attacks would be waiting for him...

He definitely couldn't afford being trapped!

Ling Chen deeply breathed in, then sprinted forwards. He himself was already quite fast, and with the Armoured Cavalry charging at him, the distance between them rapidly closed. Ling Chen swept out with his left hand, shooting out a Ling Tian Burst, sending all of the Armoured Cavalry players close to him flying. However, even though the horses lost their riders, they continued to charge towards Ling Chen. Ling Chen attacked with his right hand, instantly killing the riderless mounts. However, after launching these two attacks, the Armoured Cavalry behind sped forwards like lightning, maintaining the pressure on Ling Chen.

Against these Armoured Cavalry troops, Ling Chen evidently couldn't use the methods that he had used against the melee

professions. With their speed and momentum, launching two Ling Tian Bursts simply wouldn't be enough.

"Heavy Shield Rush!!"

While charging at him, the Armoured Cavalry nearby all raised their heavy shields. In an instant, more than 10 heavy shields bashed towards Ling Chen from all directions. Ling Chen's eyes narrowed, and he spun, sending out two Ling Tian Bursts. The riders were knocked off, but again, the Cloud Stepping Mares were fine as they couldn't be damaged while mounted. As such, they were able to continue to charge. Ling Chen jumped up, and pushed off the back of a riderless horse, jumping far away. With the "Feng Chen Technique", his air time was significantly increased, and was able to glide more than 3 metres in the air. As soon as he touched down on the ground again, he once again sent two Ling Tian Bursts towards the Armoured Cavalry...

Eight Armoured Cavalry players were swept off their mounts, and those behind them yelled, continuing their charge. With their speed, they would be able to attack him before he could attack again. Ling Chen didn't waste any time; he once against pushed off a Cloud Stepping Mare's body, jumped 3 metres away, and attacked. The decreased falling speed from the Feng Chen Technique helped him greatly-after all. although the speed and momentum of the Armoured Cavalry was terrifying, they couldn't charge into the air.

Jumping off a horse, attacking, jumping off a horse, attacking... after repeating this 7 or 8 times, Ling Chen still hadn't received any damage at all.

However… it wasn't just Ling Chen who could jump.

After repeating this more than 8 times, the Armoured Cavalry had already lost 50 members, but Ling Chen was completely fine, causing the remaining Armoured Cavalry to shout even louder in fury. When Ling Chen jumped off a horse for the ninth time, four Armoured Cavalry members unexpectedly also jumped off their mounts, swinging their shields at him.

I'll be damned! Ling Chen stared as the four shields smashed onto his chest.

Bang!

-55, -51, -52, miss.

Shield Bearers didn't have much damage to begin with, and with Ling Chen's absurdly high Defence, their attacks barely dealt any damage. However, what was the most problematic for Ling Chen was that he lost his balance, and was sent flying. Just as he was about to reach the ground, more shields came swinging at him.

Ling Chen was unable to do anything while falling, so he gritted his teeth and yelled in a low voice, "Leng'Er, hurry and come help!"

Just as Ling Chen yelled out, a black light appeared, and a small figure that only Ling Chen could see appeared. At the same time,

countless black chains appeared and bound themselves on all players within 15 metres of him.

"Ding... you have been restricted by the "Underworld Lock", you cannot use any active skills for 15 seconds."

All of the players who were bound by the black chains received the same announcement. The shields that they were swinging suddenly stopped, unable to attack.

Bang! Ling Chen fell heavily onto the ground. He rolled, and attacked immediately afterwards.

"Four Corners Star Formation!!"

All of the players within a 10 metre radius around Ling Chen were sent flying. Ling Chen finally took a long breath, and steadied himself again. The Yan Huang Alliance's Armoured Cavalry was indeed quite impressive-no wonder Yun Feng had shouted all those things so worriedly. After being rushed by such an army, any well-coordinated army would easily fall into disarray. It was going to be a bit too hard for him to deal with all of them by himself.

At this moment, Ling Chen suddenly thought of Xi Ling. If only Xi Ling was here, she would be able to decimate all of the Armoured Cavalry with a single Burning Fire Array.

After only having a few moments of breathing space, the Armoured Cavalry once again began to charge at him. Ling Chen

looked around him and muttered to himself, “Alright, you’ve forced me to do this.”

“Leng’Er!”

Leng’Er’s favourability towards Ling Chen was now 19, so she was willing to help him fight against his enemies. Hearing Ling Chen’s call, she obediently nodded, and reached out in front of her. Numerous chains once again appeared and wrapped themselves around all players within 20 metres of him.

“Ding… your pet Leng’Er has used ‘Sin Lock’ on 57 targets around you. For 5 seconds, these 57 targets will go into a berserk state, and will attack their nearest target ferociously.”

Chapter 286 - Armoured Cavalry And Heaven's Net Corps (3)

Although Leng'Er's 'Sin Lock' didn't do any damage, it was an extremely terrifying skill when used in large scale battles.

As soon as Sin Lock was activated, the eyes of the players within 20 metres of Ling Chen went completely red, and the howled like wild animals. They stopped charging forwards, but instead raised their shields and other weapons and began to attack the person nearest to them. All of a sudden, those at the front seemed to forget that Ling Chen even existed, and savagely attacked their comrades like demons. One by one, the Armoured Cavalry members began to die at the comrades' hands. The chaos resulting from this began to spread throughout the entire army.

The effects of Sin Lock lasted for a very short time, but its effects were devastating. Ling Chen coldly laughed, and dived into the chaotic army. He rapidly swung his weapons, killing large numbers of enemies with each swing. 5 seconds quickly passed, but the chaos continued. By this point, it was impossible for the Armoured Cavalry to get back into formation, and they could only helplessly struggle as Ling Chen killed them off.

Crash!

Long Tian Yun smashed a crystal cup onto the floor as his face darkened and he snarled, "What just happened?"

Seeing the Armoured Calvary fall into chaos, Flame Shadow was

also extremely shocked, but he had no idea what had just happened. He lowered his head, “Rest assured, young master, in order to kill Ling Tian, I’ve made meticulous plans. Even if the Armoured Calvary fail, we still have the Heaven’s Net Corps... 3,000 Heaven’s Net members have already moved past the Central District of the Plains Region, and will be there within 3... no, 1 minute.”

“Hmph, in order to deal with Ling Tian, we’ve even mobilised the Heaven’s Net Corps.” Long Tian Yun gnashed his teeth, “Today, Ling Tian must be kill until he’s LV0 again, so that he can never recover. Understood?”

“Yes!” Flame Shadow vigorously nodded, “No matter who it is, anyone who dares to go against our Yan Huang Alliance will regret it for their whole lives!”

By the time the Armoured Calvary had finally managed to get back into formation, they had almost been decimated by Ling Chen singlehandedly.

“My god, this is way too ridiculous. That’s the Yan Huang Alliance’s Armoured Calvary, for goodness’ sake.” Even Yun Feng, who knew how powerful Ling Chen was, could only stare in shock as he gulped. Xiao Qiu Feng also looked dumbfounded as he frowned in disbelief.

“Big brother Ling Tian is so strong!” Xiao Qi, who had persistently asked her big brother to help Ling Chen, covered her mouth with her hands. She was so in awe that her tears almost started to come out.

Apart from Ling Chen, no one else knew what had just happened. After all, only he could see Leng'Er.

The chaos that had just erupted definitely didn't happen for no reason. This mysterious incident once again decreased the Armoured Cavalry's morale. The Armoured Cavalry's leader was letting out cold sweat. If that happened one more time, all of the players here could be decimated. As such, the Armoured Cavalry warily surrounded Ling Chen once again, but left a large distance between them this time.

After hesitating for a while, the leader gritted his teeth and hollered, "CHARGE!!"

Immediately, the Armoured Cavalry army once again thundered towards Ling Chen.

"Leng'Er, Darkness Lock!"

The Sin Lock had a cooldown time of 60 seconds, so Ling Chen could only choose to use the Darkness Lock. The Armoured Cavalry were bound by Darkness Chains that lowered their Movement Speed. The Armoured Cavalry within 20 metres of Ling Chen suddenly slowed down, and no longer posed a threat to Ling Chen. This way, Ling Chen was able to use his Ling Tian Bursts without being overcome with the Armoured Cavalry charging behind the ones he just killed.

At this moment, the sound of marching could be heard coming

from the distance. Hearing this sound, the entire Armoured Cavalry army froze, and immediately retreated.

"Hm?" Ling Chen who was just about to attack looked around in surprise. He looked in the direction that the Armoured Cavalry had retreated to, and saw that another large wave of players who were wearing matching outfits were approaching.

"Crap!" This time, Yun Feng and Xiao Qiu Feng were both completely shocked.

"Ling Tian, get out of there immediately! This is the Yan Huang Alliance's Heaven's Net Corps. Once you're caught by the 'Heaven's Net', even Eve would not be able to leave alive!"

Yun Feng's warning was much more serious than the one he had given about the Armoured Cavalry.

Immediately, Ling Chen was able to see what this 'Heaven's Net Corps' was.

They were all wearing the same equipment and quickly surrounded him like the other groups had. When they were closer he could clearly see that all of these people were Archers. When they were within 50 metres of him, they slowed down, and took out their weapons... and fired!

After changing profession for the first time, Archers only had a maximum range of 30 metres. As such, where he stood, it would be

impossible for them to hit him. The net of arrows rained down, leaving only an area of 20 metres around Ling Chen empty. After hitting the ground, the arrows soon disappeared.

Ling Chen suddenly frowned.

Just as he expected, these Archers started to attack while advancing, slowly closing in the ring. The net of arrows drew closer and closer. The distance between Ling Chen and the arrows shrank from 20 metres to 15 metres, to 10 metres, 5 metres, 3 metres...

Ling Chen's reaction speed and reflexes were unparalleled among all the players. This was evident from his battle with the Sword Emperor. However, with this net of arrows that was slowly closing in on him, no matter how good his reflexes were, it would be useless. Unless he could fly, no matter which direction he moved in, he would be hit by countless arrows. Even if he stood his ground, sooner or later the net would be completely closed up and he would be hit regardless.

Evidently, Ling Chen was not able to fly.

Once someone was caught by the Heaven's Net, it would be impossible for them to escape. Ling Chen stood completely still, observing his surroundings.

"Big brother!"

“Big brother Ling Tian!”

The girls’ shouts were filled with worry and anxiety. With so many arrows flying through the sky, they found it hard to believe Ling Chen could escape this time.

“Ai,” Xiao Qiu Feng sighed, “All that struggling was pointless. However, being able to force the Yan Huang Alliance to use the Heaven’s Net Corps was already impressive. He shouldn’t have come today. The Yan Huang Alliance’s kill-on-sight orders aren’t just a joke.”

“The problem is... the revival point at Azure Dragon City definitely already has people lying in wait. After Ling Chen dies and revives there, as soon as he walks out, he’ll be killed again. As for the punishment for attacking players within the city, the Yan Huang Alliance doesn’t care about that!” Yun Feng said as he gritted his teeth.

Xiao Qiu Feng lapsed into silence, then expressionlessly said, “This is the consequence for offending the Yan Huang Alliance.”

The Heaven’s Net Corps were coming closer and closer to Ling Chen, and the arrows now landed just a few steps away from Ling Chen. In just a few moments, the arrows would start to land on him as well. Nonetheless, Ling Chen continued to stand his ground, watching as the arrows came closer and closer. Finally, he let out a breath and slowly said, “Well, I think it’s time I left now. Tell your Alliance Master Long Tian Yun that I’ll be returning the favour not too long in future.”

Ling Chen coldly smiled and raised his hand, and a green scroll appeared. It was the scroll he had obtained from the Giant Greedy Frog: the Power Scroll, Avarice Sound Wave [TLN: Chapter 34]. Looking at this scroll, Ling Chen felt a bit reluctant and pained to use it. However, it was his only choice.

“Enjoy!”

Ling Chen laughed and shattered a scroll. Instantly, and incredibly sharp and unpleasant noise filled the air, causing countless players to cover their ears in pain. The Heaven’s Net Corps surrounding Ling Chen all stopped advancing, and let out cries of confusion. Their entire bodies shook, and they began to wildly fire arrows at their comrades around them, causing their army to crumble.

“What… what’s going on?” Yun Feng and Xiao Qiu Feng looked around in bewilderment.

“Heh…” Seeing the Heaven’s Net Corps savagely killing each other, Ling Chen stretched out his right hand, and released a “Moon Flare”. Instantly, the blinding light caused countless players to once again cry out in pain and cover their eyes.

“Broken Shadow!”

Ling Chen’s body blurred, and disappeared.

After 5 seconds, when the Moon Flare had disappeared, no one could even see a trace of Ling Chen or where he had gone. The Avarice Sound Wave's effects lasted for 10 seconds, so the Heaven's Net Corps continued to attack each other in confusion. The Heaven's Net Corps that had once struck fear into every heart had become complete jokes.

Chapter 287 - Escaping Safely

“Bastards! Are you all crazy? Stop! All of you stop!” The Heaven’s Net Corps leader shouted from the back.

Finally the 10 seconds had passed and the effects of the confusion ended. The Heaven’s Net Corps members all looked around groggily, and some collapsed onto the ground. Ling Tian was already nowhere to be seen.

“You trash! We had 3,000 people surrounding a single person, and yet he still got away! And now everyone’s laughing at us! You useless idiots!” The leader completely lost his temper as he yelled at his subordinates. Although he knew that the confusion was definitely due to the scroll that Ling Tian had used, but his Heaven’s Net Corps not only wasn’t able to kill Ling Tian, but even suffered such a huge humiliation. This was something he couldn’t accept.

“Wait!” The leader suddenly thought of something, and his face became serious again, “Ling Tian has only disappeared for a few seconds... he can’t have escaped from here. He must have changed his clothing and hid among all of you. Immediately check those around you-if you see any unfamiliar faces, immediately attack!”

30 metres away from Ling Chen was the Heaven’s Net Corps and about 60 metres away was the Armoured Cavalry. Ling Chen had only disappeared for 5 seconds, so it was definitely impossible for him to have gotten out of the encirclement. Thus, it was only logical to believe that Ling Chen was hiding somewhere among the ranks of the Yan Huang Alliance players.

Immediately, every Yan Huang Alliance player warily looked at those around them... there were so many players in the Yan Huang Alliance that it was impossible to be familiar with every single face. After all that chaos, the ranks had all been moved around, and looking around, there were unfamiliar faces everywhere.

Long Tian Yun's faced turned extremely ugly, and beside him, Flame Shadow was sweating bullets... even after mobilising the Armoured Cavalry and Heaven's Net Corps, they were still unable to catch Ling Tian. This was simply ridiculous. Seeing Long Tian Yun's expression, Flame Shadow grabbed his communication device and ordered, "Idiots! Tell everyone to display their names!!"

Neither the spectating players nor Yan Huang Alliance's players left, as they all believed that Ling Tian was still hiding somewhere. Soon, all of the Yan Huang Alliance players revealed their names, and were checked by various leaders...

At this time, the girls of Heart's Dream all calmed down, their faces full of joy and relief. Xiao Qi ran over to Xiao Qiu Feng as she introduced everyone, "Hehe, big brother, this is Shui Ruo, Ling Tian's little sister, who I've mentioned many times. This little sister is called Tian Tian. Her IGN is Tian Tian Tian Tian, and is also Ling Tian's little sister."

"What? Tian Tian Tian Tian? Could she be..." Looking at the little girl whose face was covered by a mask, Xiao Qiu Feng's face revealed an expression of complete shock.

“Shhh!” Xiao Qi put her finger to her lips as she said in a soft voice, “That’s right, she’s the Tian Tian Tian Tian at the top of the Hidden Profession Rankings! Well? Our Heart’s Dream is pretty good, right? Make sure you don’t tell anyone about this! Alright, it’s time for us to go. There are way too many Yan Huang Alliance players here.”

“Go? Aren’t you afraid that Ling Tian will be found?” Xiao Qiu Feng asked, still unable to believe that ‘Tian Tian Tian Tian’ was this little girl in front of him. The entire Chinese player base were focused on this top ranked Hidden Profession, and no one would ever guess that it belonged to such a little girl.

“Let them waste their time. Big brother Ling Tian’s long gone. He’s probably in a place far, far away by now. Even if they search the entire Plains Region, they won’t be able to find him. We’re going now. Bye, big brother, sister-in-law.”

The ‘sister-in-law’ Xiao Qi talked to was a pretty woman around Xiao Qiu Feng’s age who had always been standing behind him. Above her head was the name ‘Wang Xiao Wang’. She was the well-known mistress of the Battle Alliance, who took care of the administration of the Battle Alliance and supported Xiao Qiu Feng extremely well.

After Xiao Qi and the others left, Wang Xiao Wang walked over and said with a smile, “It’s almost like you don’t want Ling Tian to be captured by the Yan Huang Alliance. Don’t forget that our Battle Alliance is a subsidiary of the Yan Huang Alliance, and still receives orders from the Yan Huang Alliance.”

Xiao Qiu Feng didn't nod or shake his head, instead wistfully saying, "Ling Tian is quite legendary. He's the only one who isn't afraid of the Yan Huang Alliance and doesn't take Long Tian Yun seriously. It's hard for me not to respect such a person. In fact, I'd even like to be friends with him."

"That's the reason?"

"One of the reasons. More importantly..." Xiao Qiu Feng paused, then slightly sighed, "You should know what sort of guy Qi Qi likes."

Wang Xiao Wang nodded, "Are you saying that...?"

"She has already fallen for Ling Tian. However, because of her situation, she's unwilling to express herself at all. All she can do is to watch him from behind and help him as much as she can. If Ling Tian suffers, the first person to also feel pain will be Qi Qi. As such, I don't want to see Ling Tian destroyed by the Yan Huang Alliance. I especially don't want to see Ling Tian disappear from the virtual world, otherwise Qi Qi won't be able to meet him anymore. Otherwise, with Qi Qi's personality... it'll probably be incredibly difficult for her to be happy again."

Wang Xiao Wang lapsed into silence, and nodded, her face revealing a pained expression, "Qi Qi..."

"Haha, don't worry, everything's going to be alright." Yun Feng said cheerfully, "See, even the Armoured Cavalry and Heaven's Net Corps were unable to capture Ling Tian. In future, it's going to

be almost impossible for them to kill him."

Surprisingly, Xiao Qiu Feng shook his head, "You're being too optimistic. Although the Armoured Cavalry were unable to kill him, they were able to trap him, whereas the Heaven's Net Corps were unable to kill him because of his items. In the end, Ling Tian is just a single person. Unless he can destroy the entire Yan Huang Alliance, it'll be impossible for him to continue to fight with them like this. Moreover, including himself, Heart's Dream has less than 10 members.

"That's true," Yun Feng nodded, "But in the end, he was able to escape from both the Armoured Cavalry and Heaven's Net Corps. Apart from him, who can do such a thing? I bet before today, you didn't think that anyone could escape from the Heaven's Net Corps, right?"

"Hahaha," Xiao Qiu Feng laughed, "Indeed, this Ling Tian is incredibly strong. This time he's once again going to make waves in all of China. I'd really like to see him fighting against Eve someday... his abilities have definitely already reached the god-level that Eve has achieved."

The Yan Huang Alliance members stayed at the Plains Region looking for Ling Tian until the sun had set, but received nothing for their efforts. In the end, they gave up and left, feeling extremely bitter and humiliated. Needless to say, the story of Ling Tian's battle with the Armoured Cavalry and Heaven's Net Corps was spread throughout all of China, causing countless players to worship him. Once again, the stepping stone for his fame was the Yan Huang Alliance.

“Melee Army: 313 deaths, all killed by Ling Tian. Armoured Cavalry: 132 deaths, half were killed by their own comrades. Heaven’s Net Corps: 392 deaths… all of them were killed by each other.”

Long Tian Yun silently listened to the report, his face incredibly terrifying. The Yan Huang Alliance’s high-ranking members all stared at the floor, afraid to even breathe.

“Bam!”

The completely silent hall shook as Long Tian Yun hit the table with his hand, causing everyone’s hearts to skip a beat. He slowly stood up, and said in a low voice, “Is there anything else you have to say?”

“Young master… Ling Tian… before Ling Tian escaped, he said…”

“What did he say!?”

“He said that in future, h-he would…”

“He would be returning the favour with interest?” Long Tian Yun expressionlessly asked.

“…Yes.”

“Hmph!” Long Tian Yun looked up, a piercing look in his eyes, “Looks like I underestimated Ling Tian. Issue out my command, cancel the kill-on-sight order for Ling Tian tomorrow.”

“Ah?” Everyone in the hall was surprised to say the least. Long Tian Yun’s hatred towards Ling Tian was unquenchable-after what happened today, why would he do such a thing?

“Just because I’ve cancelled the kill-on-sight order for Ling Tian doesn’t mean I’ve forgiven him. I’m just changing over to a more direct method.” Long Tian Yun walked to the middle of the hall, and turned on the projector. On the screen was Ling Tian’s picture. Everyone looked at the screen, waiting to see what Long Tian Yun’s ‘more direct method’ was.

“From tomorrow onwards, concentrate your efforts on finding Ling Tian’s real life identity. For now, limit the search to Beijing.” Long Tian Yun slowly said.

“Young master, are you saying that… Ling Tian is living in Beijing?”

“That’s right.” Long Tian Yun nodded. He flicked his wrist, and there appeared a picture of 3 people on the screen-1 male and 2 females. The male was Ling Tian without a doubt, and the other two were Shui Ruo and Tian Tian. However, their faces could not be seen due to their masks.

“These two women are Ling Tian’s little sisters. Remember the features of their bodies, and investigate his entire family. I want to see results within 2 weeks!” Long Tian Yun ominously said as he stared down all the players in the hall.

Chapter 288 - A Pair Of Beauties

“Leng’Er, you helped a lot this time. Without you, I would’ve been in a lot of trouble.” Ling Chen said as he patted Leng’Er’s head.

Leng’Er happily smiled as she hugged the doll in her arms. This was the first time she had helped her master, and the feeling she got from being praised was quite satisfying. Since she had been with him, her favourability towards Ling Chen had always been rising, and had never fallen. After all, Ling Chen was much too good to her, spoiling her as if she was his own daughter.

“Ling Tian, are you alright? Where are you?”

This was Yun Feng’s voice. Ling Chen replied, “Of course I’m alright. If I want to escape, no one can stop me.”

“Mhmm, that’s good. There’s something I want to tell you-Long Tian Yun has cancelled the kill-on-sight order on you. Even the teams patrolling around in Azure Dragon City have been recalled.”

“Oh?” Ling Chen was instantly suspicious, “This doesn’t seem right. What are his reasons behind this?”

“I’m not too sure about that. However, I heard that Long Tian Yun finally obtained a Guild Creation Token, so I’m guessing he wants to concentrate his efforts on officially establishing the Yan Huang Alliance. By today, the Yan Huang Alliance will be officially established, and within 10 days, it will be fully up and running.

When that happens, the Yan Huang Alliance within the Mystic Moon will develop even faster. Once it has fully developed, it'll definitely be the largest guild in the world, and will be unstoppable. Long Tian Yun isn't a good-natured fellow. Once the Yan Huang Alliance has developed, he'll definitely start hunting you down again, and when that time comes... I'm afraid that you won't be as lucky as you have been, so please be careful."

Although Ling Tian had defeated the Yan Huang Alliance a few times, in the end, he was still a single person, and was like an ant compared to the Yan Huang Alliance. The current Yan Huang Alliance was like a pile of sand, but once it had fully developed, it would become an unbreakable steel board. When that time came, escaping from them would be countless times more difficult.

After talking to Yun Feng, Ling Chen lapsed into silence.

"What's wrong? Feeling some pressure?" Within Ling Chen's mind, Qi Yue's soft voice sounded out.

"A little bit," Ling Chen replied, "In the end, a single person's unable to stand up against such a massive power. Up until now, all I've done is make Long Tian Yun waste some money and damage the Yan Huang Alliance's reputation. However, it's impossible for me to actually hurt the Yan Huang Alliance. Back then, I tried to kill Long Tian Yun in the real world, but I was unable to, and almost died. It seems that trying to take away everything from him in this world will also be quite difficult."

"That's not necessarily true," Qi Yue said, "If little master can find all of the orbs of the Lunar Scourge, even destroying the Yan

Huang Alliance would be incredibly easy."

Ling Chen shrugged, helplessly saying, "I got it, I got it, I'll do my best to find them."

"Hehe, looks like little master completely and utterly hates Long Tian Yun. But then again, almost killing my little master makes him deserve the worst punishment." Qi Yue giggled.

Ling Chen: "....."

"I hope that Xiao Feng Chen really can help me find the Heaven's Secrets Sect. That way, finding the orbs will be much easier. However, right now, my top priority is saving Xi Ling. In about a week, I'll be able to get to Vermillion Bird City." Ling Chen said as he looked into the distance.

"Finding the Vermillion Bird is as hard as reaching the heavens. Getting the Vermillion Bird to give up its own rootless flames is pretty much impossible. The Vermillion Bird is the guardian beast of the Vermillion Bird City, and is almost worshipped like a religion by the Vermillion Bird City's residents. How can the Vermillion Bird, who is in charge of protecting the Vermillion Bird City, be willing to give up its life for another creature? Is little master still going to go ahead with this?"

"How do we know it's going to be impossible if we don't try?" Ling Chen resolutely replied as he spurred his mount onwards.

The Li family financial group was something that everyone in China knew about. After all, its head was someone who could shake the whole world, the richest man in China, Li Yun Ze. No one knew how rich Li Yun Ze really was. His Li family financial group was a behemoth even in world finances. The one controlling the Li family financial group wasn't just Li Yun Ze, but also his 23 year old daughter... the incredibly famous "Loulan Queen" Li Xiao Xue.

In the high class society, there was a rumour that the Li family financial group was able to increase its finances by 5 times over the past 5 years because of Li Xiao Xue. This rumour caused countless people to be completely shocked, and most people were simply unable to believe it. They couldn't believe that a woman could have such looks and figure, and yet be even more capable than her father. She was simply perfect.

Three and a half years ago, Li Xiao Xue had officially entered the virtual world, and had expended a fortune on creating her exclusively-female guild, "Snow Moon Loulan", from which she received her nickname "Loulan Queen". Although she was on the Heaven Rankings, but her main focus wasn't on fighting, but on finances. Three and a half years ago, she made an agreement with her father that he would control the assets in the real world, whereas she would focus on the assets in the virtual world. Since a long time ago, the average amount of time people spent in the virtual world already exceeded the time they spent in the real world. The business opportunities in the virtual world now far exceeded those in the real world. She had joined Mystic Moon as soon as it had opened, so as to further develop her Li family financial group in the virtual world.

At the southern part of the Azure Dragon City, within a luxurious teahouse, in a VIP room, Yun Meng Xin sat by herself, waiting for someone. When the door finally opened, Yun Meng Xin stood up and smiled at the person who opened the door. It was a woman who was around her age, whose beautiful face also held a degree of dignity and prestige. She was wearing an extremely beautiful purple dress-it was the most expensive dress available at the Azure Dragon Tailor Shop, and was worth around the amount of money an average person would earn in their life time.

Standing on the same ground, she was about half a head taller than Yun Meng Xin, and her proud figure could make anyone gaze in awe. Her curves were enough to mesmerise any man, and with such a body and temperament, she could make any man hers.

“Meng Xin, sorry for making you wait.” Seeing Yun Meng Xin, Li Xiao Xue warmly smiled, looking at this girl who even the young master of the Long family fell for, as she greeted her.

“I didn’t wait for too long. Xiao Xue, we haven’t met for 3 years, but you’re looking even better than ever. These years, I’ve heard many things about you, and not just me, but even my seniors admire you from the bottom of our hearts.”

Li Xiao Xue smiled, and sat opposite Yun Meng Xin as she replied, “I’ve heard many people say these sorts of things to me, but it’s hard to accept such words coming from you. We’re both women, and speaking of beauty, I won’t lose out to anyone… except you. Beauty is one of the most important assets to a woman, and Meng Xin’s beauty is unparalleled among all the women I’ve met. I heard

that since a few years ago, you would always block your face when going out to avoid trouble."

Currently, Yun Meng Xin was wearing a veil. To her, it had already become a habit.

Li Xiao Xue didn't mind Yun Meng Xin wearing the veil. After all, no woman liked to see other women more beautiful than themselves. This was all the more so for women who were quite beautiful. Li Xiao Xue leaned forward, and rested her chin on her hands, as she smiled, "Meng Xin, since we're sisters, let's not just sit here complimenting each other. Did you call me here today because you missed me? After all these years, I've missed you a lot."

Yun Meng Xin also smiled. In reality, she and Li Xiao Xue weren't that close-one lived in the north and one lived in the south. They had only met a few times before, but had favourable impressions of each other. Yun Meng Xin gently said, "Xiao Xue, your time is more precious than anyone's. I'm very glad you came to meet me today. I don't want to waste your time, so I'll get straight to the point."

Li Xiao Xue nodded.

Yun Meng Xin slightly sighed, and spoke, "You know of my bet with my father, right?"

"En, within our circle, pretty much everyone knows. This information was spread by your father, to apply pressure on you. If

you lose, you won't have anywhere to retreat to." Li Xiao Xue said. "At first, I thought you were very dumb, because that bet seemed almost impossible to win. The reason your father made that bet with you was to give you a bit of hope, then crush it, so that you would no longer struggle, and obediently follow his plans. However, I knew that with Meng Xin's personality, even if it was a tiny bit of hope, you would do your best to make it become reality."

As a woman, she could understand Yun Meng Xin's situation, and felt deeply sorry for her. Perhaps it was because even the heavens were jealous of her beauty that they decided to take away even her freedom, "Meng Xin, if it's about that, then I'll do everything in my power to help you."

Yun Meng Xin's eyes trembled when she heard this. Li Xiao Xue's promises were worth a thousand in gold. Even though they were not that close, Meng Xin was extremely touched that she was willing to go to such lengths for her. She smiled and said, "Thank you Xiao Xue, that means so much to me. Today, I came to ask you... if you'd like to form a partnership."

Oh? Partnership?" Li Xiao Xue was slightly surprised as she asked in an interested voice.

Chapter 289 - Partnership

"That's right, I want to form a partnership with Xiao Xue." Yun Meng Xin nodded as she looked into Li Xiao Xue's eyes, "I believe that the number of people who want to partner with Xiao Xue are simply innumerable, and I know that Xiao Xue's not interested in any normal business venture. However, I'm confident that Xiao Xue will definitely be interested in my proposal. You'll understand after having a look at this."

While talking, Yun Meng Xin took out a paper scroll, and showed it to Li Xiao Xue.

After looking through the contents of the paper scroll, Li Xiao Xue's eyes widened in shock. She read through it a few times, and slowly said, "I never thought the Title Deed for the land to the west side of the Azure Dragon Central Square would be in your hands."

The best location in Azure Dragon City was, no doubt, the areas near the Central Square, as this was where there was the most foot traffic. There was a single prime area that did not have anything developed on it yet... as if it was left just for players.

As such, as soon as the Money Exchange System opened, many people tried to buy the rights to that piece of land, but were all rejected. They were all told to go to the Azure Dragon City's Land Management Department, but everyone who went there was told that only the Mayor could grant the rights for that piece of land. For normal players, it was simply impossible to meet the Mayor.

However, with Li Xiao Xue's capabilities, meeting the Mayor was not an issue at all. What was unexpected was that someone had already bought the rights to that piece of land... and it was a player. Li Xiao Xue had always been trying to guess who that player was. Her biggest suspicion was the Yan Huang Alliance. As such, she was completely shocked when she found that it actually belonged to Yun Meng Xin.

Yun Meng Xin nodded, "I believe that with Xiao Xue's intelligence, you should probably know what this piece of land represents."

"The rights to the land for 3 months, and almost a month has already passed..." Li Xiao Xue muttered as she thought to herself.

"Back then we had limited funds, so we could only buy the rights for 3 months. If we want to buy the rights permanently, it's not impossible." Yun Meng Xin said.

After the Money Exchange System opened, Li Xiao Xue immediately went to talk to the Mayor. This meant that the rights to the land had been purchased prior to the Money Exchange System opening. Although it was only for 3 months, but the price would have been astronomical at the time. Who could gather such an amount of money in such a short period of time? Yun Meng Xin? That was impossible... the only person who could possibly achieve such a feat...

Li Xiao Xue suddenly thought of a person... it was the person who, allegedly, in order to woo Meng Xin, joined Heart's Dream to help her-Ling Tian!

Li Xiao Xue smiled, “Seeing as Meng Xin was able to obtain this Title Deed, I’m sure that you’ll also be able to obtain the rights to it permanently. So what is the partnership about?”

With Li Xiao Xue’s experience and intelligence, how could she not know what the ‘partnership’ would be about? Yun Meng Xin calmly replied, “It’s very simple. I want to work with Xiao Xue to develop that piece of land.”

“Then, what will you contribute, and how much will you expect for your share?” Li Xiao Xue’s expression remained unchanged as she asked the crucial question.

Yun Meng Xin had prepared for this question since a long time ago. She stretched out her hand, “What I can provide is that Title Deed and myself. We’ll split the profits 50-50.”

Li Xiao Xue smiled, and stood up, “Just as Meng Xin said, developing that piece of land requires labour, capital and finances, all of which my Li family is going to provide, while Meng Xin is only going to provide the land. Indeed, that piece of land is incredibly valuable, but wanting to split 50-50 is something that I simply cannot accept.”

Hearing this refusal from Li Xiao Xue, Yun Meng Xin did not panic at all, but did not back down either. She also stood up, and began to pace as she said, “If it was any other place, this would be completely unfair to Xiao Xue. However, Xiao Xue, of all people, should know just how special the land to the west of the Central Square is. Azure Dragon City is the place that players stay in the longest, and is the first place players come to when they reach the

Forgotten Continent. Currently, the Azure Dragon Central Square has the most foot traffic in the entire City. Imagine, if your Li family's sign was hung up there-the first thing players would see when coming to the Azure Dragon City would be your Li family's name. Moreover, the buildings you construct will be the first player-constructed buildings in the entire Mystic Moon. Not only will your Li family receive fame from people seeing and visiting the buildings, but also from being recorded down as the first players to develop their own buildings in Mystic Moon."

"So what?" Li Xiao Xue looked at her earnestly. She completely understood what Yun Meng Xin had just said. This was also part of the reason why so many people were desperate to have this piece of land and why it was so valuable. She knew that if the Li family could develop that piece of land, their development in the Mystic Moon world would skyrocket. However, a 50-50 split of the profits was something that she wasn't quite willing to accept. Even though she knew that Yun Meng Xin was in need of money-an astronomical figure-she wasn't willing to relent so easily, "What you said is correct, but remember, the Azure Dragon City is only the beginning of players' journeys. Once players reach LV50, they will move to the Royal City of the Forgotten Continent, and this place will become almost worthless."

Yun Meng Xin was calm as she rebutted this statement, "This was something that I also took into consideration in the past. However, for the average player to reach LV50, that will take at least half a year. Xiao Xue, you should know the importance of a good foundation. The Azure Dragon City is indeed just a foundation for players, but this foundation is incredibly important. Moreover, since I was able to obtain the Title Deed to the prime area of the Azure Dragon City, I also have confidence that I will be the first to obtain the prime area of the Royal City!"

Yun Meng Xin's words caused Li Xiao Xue's heart to start beating faster. She thought for a while, before replying, "Your confidence-does it come from Ling Tian? Because he's trying to woo you, he's willing to help you win your bet with your father. He even went so far as to help you create "Heart's Dream", the first official guild in Mystic Moon."

Yun Meng Xin simply smiled and replied, "Indeed, my confidence comes from Ling Tian."

"Ling Tian... it has not been very long since he appeared, but his fame has soared since he made his debut. He's even willing and capable to offend Long Tian Yun-such a person is indeed someone to be confident in." Li Xiao Xue slowly said, "I also know that in order to win that bet, you need a large amount of money. Even if it was me, amassing such a large amount of money would be impossible. I originally thought that it would be impossible for you to win that bet with your father... until Ling Tian appeared. If he really helps you with all of his power, then you really will have a chance in winning. I'm guessing that Title Deed you have was given to you by Ling Tian, right? I want to know that if I rejected your proposal, or demanded better terms for my Li family, what would you do?"

"I would find other parties to partner up with. I'm sure that there will be many, many people interested in this business venture." Yun Meng Xin unhesitatingly replied.

Li Xiao Xue returned to her seat, and sat down. She took a small sip of tea, her expression extremely calm, "In that case, can you

tell me why the first person you chose was me? Also, why didn't you want to be the one in control of all of this? I'm sure you could have waited until you had enough capital before beginning."

"Right now, I have 900 million gold, which is just enough. However, I can't do anything in my own name, otherwise my father and Long Tian Yun will do all they can to suppress my efforts. The reason I chose you was because your Li family has both reputation and power. Moreover, with your Li family operating at the front, no one will suspect anything-for your Li family to obtain the Title Deed to this piece of land is something that no one would be surprised at. However, the most important reason... is that I trust you, Xiao Xue. I need a lot, a lot, of money. Only by giving this Title Deed to you, the woman who increased her family's fortune by fivefold in 5 years, will I be come close to achieving my goal."

Li Xiao Xue looked down, deep in thought. Yun Meng Xin giving the Title Deed to someone else was something she definitely did not want to see. She thought for a long time before replying, "That place, on the face of things, will be completely owned by my Li family, and will have nothing to do with you, right?"

Yun Meng Xin nodded.

Can you promise that you will be the first to obtain the Title Deed for the Royal City?" Li Xiao Xue asked.

Yun Meng Xin nodded "I believe in Ling Tian."

“Very well!” Li Xiao Xue held out her hand, “Meng Xin, let’s work well together!”

Yun Meng Xin extended her hand and shook Li Xiao Xue’s hand, “Xiao Xue, thank you. Also, no matter if it’s the Azure Dragon City, or any other places, I will only take my share for 2 years. After 2 years, everything will belong to your Li family.”

Li Xiao Xue’s face froze, and her expression gradually became one of extreme shock, “Meng Xin… a-are you crazy?!”

Chapter 290 - Vermillion Bird City

Yun Meng Xin's words caused Li Xiao Xue to unable to be calm. Originally, she had thought that the way the profits was shared was unfair, but thinking to Yun Meng Xin's situation, as well as the massive benefits that the Li family would receive, she decided to agree. Only now did she realise that Yun Meng Xin had offered her incredibly favourable terms.

"I won't take back what I just said. Xiao Xue, you should know that the bet with my father ends in 2 years. After 2 years, money won't mean much to me." Yun Meng Xin wistfully said.

"Can you really let go of such a large fortune though?" Li Xiao Xue asked. To her, as well as the Li family, this was a once-in-a-lifetime deal. However, she simply didn't understand why Yun Meng Xin would do such a thing. She definitely wasn't a stupid woman.

"In 2 years, if I win, then I will have the same amount of money as the Yun family financial group-that alone will be more than enough for me to live on for the rest of my life. If I lose... even if I have 10 times as much money, what would be the point? The riches are limitless, but so are a human's desires. I don't want to let myself become a slave for riches. Two years of profits is enough. Let's just say that the rest is my gift to Xiao Xue." Yun Meng Xin smiled, "Xiao Xue, who is so shrewd and experienced in business, was willing to accept my terms of 50-50 profits so easily. I know why Xiao Xue agreed so easily, so let me thank you in return."

Li Xiao Xue's face froze, and her expression became complicated. She replied slowly as she bit her lips, "Meng Xin, this gift is simply... too big. Even though we haven't even begun, but I know that this is the biggest gift I've ever received in my whole life. The Title Deed you have has allowed me to see a new direction that the Li family financial group can grow in. However... Meng Xin, there are some things that I want to say to you plainly."

"Please go ahead." Yun Meng Xin courteously said.

Li Xiao Xue nodded, and spoke, "Your father is the head of the Yun family financial group. Based on my information, just your father alone has $160 billion, which is an astronomical figure. Moreover, from what I heard, the bet was that within 2 years, you need to have enough money to rival the entire Yun family financial group, and not just his own assets. As the daughter of the head of the family group, do you know how much the entire Yun family financial group is worth?"

Yun Meng Xin shook her head.

Li Xiao Xue didn't find this strange at all. The Yun family financial group was spread out throughout the entirety of China, so it was difficult to keep track of just how much the group had- even the high-ranking members wouldn't know exactly how much. Yun Meng Xin didn't participate much in the affairs of the Yun family financial group, so her not knowing was normal. Li Xiao Xue spread out her fingers, "$500 billion. This is the current value of the Yun family financial group. Even if the Yun family financial group doesn't grow at all, you'll need to amass at least $500 billion to win that bet. Forgetting about reputation and fame

for now, do you have confidence that you'll be able to obtain $500 billion before then?"

Yun Meng Xin: "....."

"Even if it was a large international corporation, obtaining $500 billion within 2 years would be incredibly difficult. This is even more so for Meng Xin, who doesn't have much except a Title Deed. Moreover, the only finances you currently have is $900 million. You should know that your Yun family, as well as my Li family, are only where they are now after generations of hard work." Li Xiao Xue paused for a moment, then continued, "I'm confident that you can obtain the best areas in this world for us, and for the sake of my Li family, I will also put in my 100%. Even if we can obtain the prime area for the Royal City, and everything goes well, in these 2 years, your share of the profits will be close to $5 billion, compared to the $500 billion you need... Moreover, in the first 1 or 2 years, my Li family will be operating at a loss. Only after 2 or 3 years, when my Li family has expanded to the entire Forgotten Continent, will we quickly reap our profits."

"I... already know all of this." Yun Meng Xin said softly. She knew that even if everything went perfectly according to plan, it would only be a cup of water thrown into a bucket that she needed to fill. The Yun family wasn't just some ordinary rich family-they were the second largest family financial group in China! However, what she didn't expect was that she needed more than $500 billion. Despite this, she did not feel defeated at all, because within her heart, she knew that she already had treasures that surpassed that fortune of $500 billion-those friends who fought by her side and brought light and colour into her dark world. For her, and for them, even if the target was as unreachable as the sky, she couldn't

despair or give up. She could only look up, smile and face it head on, just like what Ling Tian had said...

"I believe that Ling Tian will be able to create another miracle. After all, miracles only happen for those who put in all of their effort and sincerity." Yun Meng Xin said as she smiled.

Even though Li Xiao Xue had said all those things, she saw that Meng Xin's resolution had not decreased by even a bit. Seeing this, she felt quite moved. She held out her hand to Meng Xin, "I also believe that Ling Tian will be able to create this miracle for you. Let's work hard together."

Two beautiful hands gently came together, as both women gave a firm handshake.

Neither woman knew that this would become the beginning of a legend.

Yun Meng Xin asking Li Xiao Xue to partner up with her was out of desperation. It was also her only choice. Like Li Xiao Xue said, with the Li family's manpower, capital and finances, she would be able to earn a fortune that most people couldn't earn in several lifetimes. However, it was still not enough for what she needed...

To be able to obtain the Title Deed for that prime area, obtaining the rights permanently wasn't too hard either. Ling Tian went to the Azure Dragon City, and quickly obtained a permanent Title

Deed for an acceptable amount of money. Yun Meng Xin completely gave up on her battle profession, and instead worked with Li Xiao Xue to develop that piece of land. Li Xiao Xue decided that that piece of land would be the headquarters for the Li family's chain of stores in Mystic Moon.

A few days later, many large buildings had already been built, with the Li family's signs on them... within the virtual world, as long as one had enough money, construction would take a very short period of time. For a large building with tens of floors, with enough money, construction would only take a week or so. This was one of the largest advantages of the virtual world.

Now that more and more players had reached LV20, there were more and more Guild Creation Tokens being found. On the Guild Rankings, it was no longer just Heart's Dream. The Yan Huang Alliance's name also appeared, but unlike in previous games, it was now ranked second, with Heart's Dream sitting on top of it. 3 days later, the Skyfall Dynasty's name appeared in the third position, and 5 days later, the Golden Age Alliance's name also appeared.

After giving the permanent Title Deed to Meng Xin, Ling Tian had not returned to the Azure Dragon City since. He spent all of his time on travelling to the Vermillion Bird City. As he headed further south, he could feel the temperature getting hotter and hotter.

After 8 days, he finally reached the Vermillion Bird City.

From afar, no matter if it was the city gates or the structures within the city, none of them looked as extravagant and impressive

as those of the Azure Dragon City. Despite this, it still held the grandness and dignity of a main city.

"Finally... the Vermillion Bird City!"

Since he had made the decision to come here until now, he had spent about 20 or so days. If not for Ying Xue's Nature's Ring sending him so far to the south, he would've had to spend an extra 10-15 days to get here.

"Xi Ling, wait for me. I'll definitely find the Vermillion Bird!" Ling Chen silently thought to himself as he sped towards the Vermillion Bird City's gates. The City Guards did not try to stop him at all, and Ling Chen was able to enter easily.

The Vermillion Bird City's streets were not as bustling and busy as those in the Azure Dragon City. Evidently, the low population was due to most players not being able to even reach this city yet. Ling Chen believed that he was definitely the first player to enter the Vermillion Bird City. Another reason for there being so few people in the Vermillion Bird City was simply because the climate was too hot. Not too long after entering the city, Ling Chen's body was already covered in sweat. However, it was normal for a city in the south to have such climate. [TLN: Ayy it's Australia]

"Hoh, young adventurer, seeing your clothing and your sweat, I'm guessing you just got here. I recommend going to buy a few bowls of ice porridge-after drinking some ice porridge, you'll feel much better." A middle-aged aunty said as she smiled at him.

Ice porridge? Ling Chen nodded towards that middle-aged aunty, “Yes, I just got here. Thanks for your advice.”

“You’re welcome, may the Moon Gods bless you.”

Seeing how the aunty was not sweating or panting at all, she was evidently a resident of the Vermillion Bird City who had lived here for a long time.

Opening his map, Ling Chen saw all the different streets within the Vermillion Bird City. Of course, the Mayor’s Residence was right at the centre of the City, a bit to the north of the marketplace. In the end, Ling Chen had a single purpose for coming to the Vermillion Bird City-to find the Vermilion Bird. Qi Yue had told him that in order find the Vermillion Bird, it would be best not to ask the residents or the Mayor where it was, lest he receive their fury. After all, the Vermillion Bird was the guardian beast of the Vermillion Bird City, and was incredibly important to its residents.

Chapter 291 - Heaven's Secrets Sect Leader

The Vermillion Bird City's layout was incredibly similar to that of the Azure Dragon City's, and there were also many other similarities. After going to the Vermillion Bird City Central Square and wandering around in the marketplace, Ling Chen was disappointed to find that exactly the same things were sold here as in Azure Dragon City. It seemed that higher grade potions, equipment and crystals could only be bought at the Royal City.

After spending some time scouting around in the Vermillion Bird City, Ling Chen once again focused on his mission, "Qi Yue, do you know where the Vermillion Bird is now, or where it was in the past?"

"Easy," Qi Yue replied, "As the guardian beast of the Vermillion Bird City, it will not be more than 100 kilometres away from the Vermillion Bird City. The hottest place within 100 kilometres of the Vermillion Bird City should be where the Vermillion Bird is. The Vermillion Bird's flames are beaten only by those of the Golden Crow and Phoenixes, and in order to maintain its energy, it likes to rest in extremely hot places."

The hottest place within 100 kilometres...

Ling Chen took out his map, and looked around the area within 100 kilometres of the Vermillion Bird City. Very quickly, he found that a part of the map was coloured in crimson red. This region's name was...

Lava Purgatory!

[Lava Purgatory]: A region that emits monstrously high temperatures all year round. It is split into the Outer Region, Middle Region and Inner Region. The Outer Region is filled with wild flames, the Middle Region is almost impossible to get through and the Inner Region is filled with raging magma. Most creatures will instantly die by going into such a place. It is the hottest place in the entire Forgotten Continent, and some of the flames inside can burn through almost anything. Many years ago, a person got through the Outer Region through sheer determination and the Middle Region with the help of the Underworld Armour. However, after entering the Inner Region, the Underworld Armour began to quickly melt, and that person could only retreat, and never again dared to try to enter the Inner Region. The Lava Purgatory is said to be where the Vermillion Bird was born, and their flames are linked to each other. Legend says that if the Vermillion Bird dies, the fires within the Lava Purgatory will also be extinguished."

"Lava Purgatory." Ling Chen said to Qi Yue.

"Oh... if that place still exists, then it should be where the Vermillion Bird is. After all, that's where the Vermillion Bird was born. However, the Lava Purgatory is the hottest place in all of the Forgotten Continent, and even Celestial, or even Heaven's End, beasts would be burnt to crisp inside. It's simply impossible for little master to get close. Even so..."

"Let's have a look."

Qi Yue's words didn't have any effect on Ling Chen. He quickly memorised the fastest route to the Lava Purgatory, and checked the number of potions he had, before calling out the Cloud Stepping mare and charged towards the southern gates of the Vermillion Bird City.

"What a stubborn child," Qi Yue laughed, "I hope that with your efforts, another 'miracle' will happen."

Ling Chen had spent more than half a month travelling to the Vermillion Bird City. This was despite knowing that he might not even find the Vermillion Bird, and that even if he could, it would be very unlikely that it would sacrifice itself for Xi Ling... after all, if a stranger brought another dying stranger to Ling Chen, asking him to give up his life for that stranger, he would definitely reply with 2 words: "Piss off!"

It was possible that after hearing what he said, the Vermillion Bird might even just instantly burn him to crisp. As the guardian beast of a major city, how could it sacrifice itself for a player's pet?

Despite all of this, Ling Chen had spent so much effort and time to get here, and had never considered giving up. Only the Vermillion Bird could save Xi Ling! No matter how little hope there was, he definitely had to try. What gave him a bit of hope was that Xi Ling's flames were special-she had the same level of flames as the Golden Crow, which was even higher than the Vermillion Bird's flames. Maybe, just maybe, seeing how special Xi Ling was, and considering that it had lived for long enough, it might just decide to save Xi Ling...

Just this tiny bit of hope was enough for him to give it his all.

100 kilometres was not too far away. With his current Movement Speed, while continuously charging at full speed on the Cloud Stepping Mare, he could reach the Lava Purgatory before the end of the day.

Somewhere to the south of the Vermillion Bird City

“You old monster, even with our bonds, you’re still not willing to help?! With your personality, no wonder you’re still single!”

“Ai, how many times have I told you-it’s not that I’m not willing, it’s that I really can’t help. Revealing heavens’ secrets goes against the natural order. After living so long, if I continue to reveal heavens’ secrets, I’ll definitely receive divine punishment, and might even die on the spot.”

Two old men were talking to each other. One looked around 60 years old, and had a messy beard and hair that was mostly white. He was wearing tattered grey clothing, which seemed to at least look decently clean. Although he was an old man, he kept jumping up and down, and his expressions were extremely comical. The other old man looked around 70 or 80 years old, wore a green Daoist robe, and held a horsetail whisk in his hands. His hair was extremely white, and was so long that it reached his waist. The ancient and wise look in his eyes made him look like an enlightened immortal. Despite the ramblings of the man opposite

him, his expression did not change at all.

"Death, death, death-you've lived more than 2,000 years and yet you're still afraid of death! Tch, after cultivating for so many years, this is as far as you've gotten? It seems that the more you cultivate, the worse you get. No wonder you're still single." The old man in grey said.

"Ai, it's not that I'm afraid of death, but I simply can't afford to die. Brother Xiao, when you were locked up in the Lunar Sky Hell, you were determined not to die either-was that because you were afraid of death? I am the same as you were then-I don't want to die without finding a successor for my Heaven's Secrets Sect. I will try to help Brother Xiao with his request, but I can't guarantee anything." The old man in green said as he sighed.

"Forget it, forget it." The old man in grey waved his hand, "I've heard you give this excuse hundreds of times. However, you finding a successor will be even harder than me finding one. Back then, I looked throughout the entire Forgotten Continent, but couldn't find anyone. After suffering in the Lunar Sky Hell for 1,000 years, I found an exceptionally talented successor, so I guess that was worth it. As for you, apart from newly born babies, in this day and age, where can you find someone whose heart contains no malice or wickedness at all? Even if it's someone who has never done a single bad deed in their life, their hearts will always be hiding some sort of wickedness. Otherwise, they definitely wouldn't be a normal person However, you're adamant that you won't pass on your power to infants. Old monster, you're such a smart person, and yet you found such a trash disciple in the past. He actually tried to use the Heaven's Secrets Sect's power to try to find treasure troves. He totally deserved being struck to death with

lightning."

"Desires are shapeless and colourless, and are almost impossible detect. By the time I found out, it was already too late. Moreover, newborn infants aren't without wickedness or malice either-it's just that their wickedness hasn't had time to develop yet. Only a person who has grown up, and yet still has a pure heart, can become the successor to my Heaven's Secrets Sect. I have at least 30 years in my lifespan; If I can find this sort of person within those 30 years, then I can die with no regrets." The old man in green replied.

The old man in grey rolled his eyes as he gnashed his teeth, "Goddamit, you old fool weren't able to help me at all, but asked so much of me. Forget it, since you're still pitiably single, I'll help you. Since the Forgotten Continent's so big, there's bound to be all sorts of people. Maybe these sorts of naïve fools really do exist. I'll see if I can find one for you."

"Haha, thank you for your trouble, brother Xiao." The old man in green said as he laughed.

In the distance, the sound of a horse galloping travelled into their ears. The old man in grey muttered, "Damn, there are even people coming to this god-forsaken place?" When he looked closer, his eyes widened as he jumped up, "Holy crap, it's that kid!"

"Oh?"

"He's the one who I mentioned to you a hundred times; the freak

who was able to counter my Feng Chen Curses! The one who needs your help!”

“……”

The further Ling Chen rode, the hotter it became, and the less people there were. Most of the monsters here were fire type, which would make this place heaven for Water Mages... of course, the prerequisite was that they could endure the heat here. After riding for a long time, he saw two people. When he saw the old man in tattered grey clothing, his jaw almost fell to the ground. He stopped the Cloud Stepping Mare and jumped off, calling out, “... Brother... Xiao, why are you here?”

This old man... was Xiao Feng Chen!

“I should be asking you. There’re no shops or even grass around here, so why would you come all the way out here?” Xiao Feng Chen looked up and down Ling Chen more than 10 times. He simply couldn’t believe in such a vast Forgotten Continent, they had met again in such a short time. What’s more, they had met in the north of the Forgotten Continent, whereas this was the south of the Forgotten Continent. Xiao Feng Chen could travel hundreds of kilometres in a day, but it would take a normal person more than a month to get from that place to where they were now. This kid’s Feng Chen Technique shouldn’t be so effective.

“This is perfect though,” Xiao Feng Chen pulled Ling Chen over in front of the old man in green, “Look, you told me to help you find the Heaven’s Secrets Sect, so I immediately went to find this guy. This is the old monster from the Heaven’s Secret Sect... what

was your name again? Anyways, I found him, but he's not willing to help, so it's not my fault. If you have any methods, you can ask him yourself."

The old man in green had already heard about Ling Chen from Xiao Feng Chen. After finding a successor, Xiao Feng Chen couldn't help but boast and boast and boast. The old man in green swung his horsetail whisk, and amicably smiled at Ling Chen, "This humble Daoist is the current Sect Leader of the Heaven's Secrets Sect, Tian Qing. These days I've heard much about this little friend from old man Xiao."

"Hello, Daoist Tian Qing." Ling Chen bowed in respect. The Heaven's Secrets Sect Leader was an incredible figure. Back then, he had only mentioned the Heaven's Secrets Sect to Xiao Feng Chen to test him-he never expected Xiao Feng Chen to take it so seriously. After separating for less than 10 days, Xiao Feng Chen had already found the person, and they had actually met by such coincidence.

Chapter 292 - Fortune Of Great Calamity

Daoist Tian Qing nodded, and calmly replied, “Brother Xiao has already told me about your situation. You want me to find a few things, right?”

Ling Chen nodded, “Yes, these things are very important. I heard that the Heaven’s Secrets Sect can find out the heaven’s secrets, and finding treasures should be incredibly easy. I hope that Daoist Tian Qing will be able to help me.”

“Ai,” Daoist Tian Qing sighed, “Human’s desires are boundless. My Heaven’s Secrets Sect has hidden away for so many years-what we were hiding away from was human greed. Brother Xiao and I are extremely close, but he has never requested anything of me before. After so many years, this is the first time he’s asked me to help him with something. I will definitely do all I can to help brother Xiao, but… I can’t reveal the heaven’s secrets.”

“Why not?” Ling Chen asked, unable to understand.

“I’m sure you’ve heard of the phrase ‘the mysteries of heaven must not be revealed’- my Heaven’s Secrets Sect specialises in finding out such mysteries and secrets. However, no matter how powerful a human is, they’re unable to go against the heavens. Revealing the heaven’s secrets is going against the heavens; if we reveal too much, then we receive divine punishment. The sole requirement for entering our Heaven’s Secrets Sect is for a person to be completely pure-hearted and without any malice or wickedness. Otherwise, if they use their powers for selfish and immoral gains, even the entire Heaven’s Secrets Sect could be

punished. As such, the more pure-hearted one is, the more secrets they are able to see; they more wicked, less secrets they will be able to see. If one goes above their limit, they will receive divine punishment. I've revealed heaven's secrets 1,200 times in my lifetime, which is my maximum. If I reveal any more, I'll be punished by the heavens, and may even die on the spot." Daoist Tian Qing apologetically explained.

"It's true. In the Heaven's Secrets Sect, having completely white hair is a symbol of someone having reached their limit." Qi Yue suddenly said, then sighed. She knew a lot more than Ling Chen about the Heaven's Secrets Sect, and as soon as she saw Daoist Tian Qing, she already knew that he would not be able to help them.

"So it's like this..." Ling Chen thought regretfully. He wasn't willing to give up so easily though, "Then what about the other members of the Heaven's Secrets Sect?"

"Haha," Daoist Tian Qing laughed sorrowfully, "There were only 5 members 1,000 years ago, and now only I am left. The other 4 people have all died from revealing too many of heaven's secrets."

Ling Chen: "....."

"It's a pity that I'm unable to help little friend. Currently, I'm planning on travelling throughout the Forgotten Continent to find a suitable successor. If I can find a successor, I'll definitely let them help little friend to find what he needs to find." Daoist Tian Qing said.

The mighty Heaven's Secrets Sect Leader was speaking with such courtesy to a junior-this made Ling Chen have a very good impression of him, "If Sect Leader can do this for me, Ling Tian will be eternally grateful."

Xiao Feng Chen came over as he rambled, "Grateful my ass, this old monster only knows how to waffle on, but he can't help at all. He even wants me to do all this work and use my Feng Chen technique to help him to find a successor! Oi, old monster, even if you can't help us, can you at least do some fortune-telling for my successor? See if, with his fortune, he's able to bring glory to my Feng Chen Sect!"

"Fortune-telling?" Ling Chen asked in surprise.

"That's right, fortune-telling. This old monster isn't much good for anything else, but he's pretty good at fortune-telling. Before I was imprisoned in the Lunar Sky Hell, this guy already told me that I would experience 1,000 years of darkness. At that time, I kicked him a few times, but I never thought that the fortune would actually come true. Fortune-telling counts as looking into one's own fortune, so it doesn't count as heaven's secrets. Since he won't die from it, you might as well get him to tell your fortune. Old monster, let's see how good my successor's fortune is."

Before Ling Chen could even say anything, Xiao Feng Chen had already pushed him to in front of Daoist Tian Qing. Daoist Tian Qing didn't refuse either, and smiled, "Haha, alright then, I'll have a look at this little friend's fortune. This little friend was able to escape from Lunar Sky Hell in one day, has incredible mental

energy, and has now inherited the power of the Feng Chen Sect. Little friend is evidently cared for by the heavens, and looks like he'll have a good fortune. Come, raise your head."

Ling Chen could only comply and raise his head, and could feel Daoist Tian Qing's eyes focused on his forehead.

Daoist Tian Qing looked at him with a calm smile, and focused on his forehead. Suddenly, Daoist Tian Qing's eyes suddenly contracted, and his face changed. He stumbled back a few steps, and almost fell over.

"Daoist Tian Qing?"

"What's going on?"

Ling Chen quickly rushed forwards to help stabilise Daoist Tian Qing, and noticing his change in expression, Xiao Feng Chen also rushed over. Daoist Tian Qing had been cultivating in remote places for more than 1,000 years, and his heart was as still as water. When meeting Xiao Feng Chen after 1,000 years, he had only smiled. Just then, his expression had definitely changed significantly.

Daoist Tian Qing breathed in and out, and waved his hand, saying, "It's fine, it's fine. Looks like I'm already at my limit. Not only am I unable to see heaven's secrets, but my fortune-telling has also gotten worse. Ai."

Daoist Tian Qing sighed as he shook his head. Upon closer observation, Ling Chen cold see that Daoist Tian Qing's forehead was lined with cold sweat, and his face had gone pale.

Ling Chen immediately suspected that something was wrong, but smiled and asked, "It's alright, fortune-telling isn't that reliable anyways. If you can't tell my fortune, that's completely fine."

Xiao Feng Chen was evidently very displeased at Ling Chen's words, "Oi oi oi oi, what do you mean not that reliable. You can pretend any fortunes from any other fortune-teller are just farts, but old monster's fortunes are guaranteed to be 100% accurate. Forget it, forget it, if you can't do it then forget about it. I was hoping he'd get a Prosperous Fortune, so my Feng Chen Sect could enjoy a few years of good luck."

"Right, boy, you never answered me-what are you doing here?" Xiao Feng Chen immediately forgot about the fortune-telling matter and changed the topic.

"I came here... to look for the Vermillion Bird." Ling Chen said after hesitating for a bit.

"Looking for the Vermillion Bird?" Xiao Feng Chen stared as he splattered Ling Chen's face with spit, "More like looking to die. Look over to the south-can you see how red the sky is? That's where the Vermillion Bird is-the Lava Purgatory. Anyone who goes in there will definitely die-myself and the old monster included. If you just go in there like you are now, you won't even see a single feather of the Vermillion Bird before you're incinerated."

“It doesn’t matter. Even if I’m incinerated, I can come back to life immediately.” Ling Chen coolly replied.

“Haha,” Daoist Tian Qing laughed, “I think little friend should make the journey. Perhaps it will go well for you.”

The Heaven’s Secrets Sect Leader had casually said this, but Ling Chen’s eyes shone, and he quickly nodded, “With these words of good luck from the Sect Leader, I’ll be going there immediately. Indeed, I’m in a rush to find the Vermillion Bird, so I won’t be staying any longer. Goodbye.”

Seeing how Xiao Feng Chen wasn’t going to be of any help, and with the Heaven’s Secrets Sect Leader’s words, Ling Chen couldn’t wait as he sped off on his Cloud Stepping Mare.

When Ling Chen had travelled a distance away, Xiao Feng Chen suddenly grabbed Daoist Tian Qing, as he asked, “Old monster, what was with your reaction just then? You can trick that boy, but you can’t trick me! Fortune-telling has nothing to do with revealing heaven’s secrets. Just then, you were definitely afraid of something… just what did you see on him?”

Daoist Tian Qing’s face became serious as he replied, “Fortune of Great Calamity… I have never seen a fortune of such calamity before!”

“Fortune of Great Calamity?” Xiao Feng Chen’s eyes widened.

“The more bright a person’s fortune is, the more lucky and prosperous it will be. The darker it is, the more unlucky and calamity it will hold… as for him… I can’t see anything at all. All there is, is endless darkness. I have never experienced so much malicious energy on a person before. When I saw it, it was like a mountain that crashed into my chest.” Daoist Tian Qing said as he put his hand on his chest, “This sort of fortune goes far beyond the ordinary. Even a god would tremble at such a fortune. A person with a fortune like this is bound to have hands stained with countless peoples’ blood, and will cause a great catastrophe…”

Bang!

“Ow, why did you hit me?”

Daoist Tian Qing, who was letting out cold sweat, was suddenly smacked on the head by Xiao Feng Chen. Xiao Feng Chen grabbed the horsetail whisk in Daoist Tian Qing’s hands as he yelled, “Your mum’s a calamity! That’s my Feng Chen Sect’s successor-and you’re saying he has a Fortune of Great Calamity? I was completely confident in your fortunes, but I won’t believe this one no matter what! ‘Hands stained with countless peoples’ blood, and will cause a great catastrophe.’ Heh… just that boy? Hmm, based on your impression of him, how’s his strength?”

“Wouldn’t be able to take a single blow.” Daoist Tian Qing replied.

“Exactly. With that bit of strength, he can’t even kill a big ant, let

alone cause a catastrophe? At most, he'll be able to use the Feng Chen Curses to cause some trouble, but there are heaps of experts in the Forgotten Continent who can squish him to death. Plus, did you really feel malicious energy on him? No way, right? If he really did contain so much malicious energy, I definitely wouldn't choose him to be my Feng Chen Sect's successor." Xiao Feng Chen said, unimpressed.

Daoist Tian Qing nodded, "Brother Xiao's words are indeed true. Looks like I have indeed reached my limit."

Xiao Feng Chen returned the horsetail whisk to Daoist Tian Qing and said, "It's normal that your fortune-telling isn't accurate on him. Think about it-with such weak strength, he was able to reflect my Feng Chen Curse. With such ridiculous mental energy, how could you see through it all? Plus, he's from a different world, so perhaps the way to tell his fortune is different to the way to tell the fortune for people in our world. Oh, also, why did you say that the journey would go well for him? That kid's definitely going to die."

"It's because I could also see a thick aura of good luck around him-a Fortune of Great Luck. With that sort of good luck, and his determination, I'm sure that the journey will go well." Daoist Tian Qing slowly said.

"The heck? Fortune of Great Calamity, as well as Fortune of Great Luck? You might as well say that he's both male and female; both fat and skinny. Looks like you've gone senile after these 1,000 years." Xiao Feng Chen was on the verge of spitting on Tian Qing.

"This... Ai, looks like I've made a fool of myself." Daoist Tian

Qing felt quite awkward because of what had just happened. Bad luck and good luck were opposites, and yet they had both appeared on the same person at the same time. It was simply illogical to have both a Fortune of Great Calamity and a Fortune of Great Luck. Daoist Tian Qing once again sighed... it looked like there were some problems with his powers.

Chapter 293 - Once Again Meeting Qian Gun Gun

The Heaven's Secrets Sect Leader's words had an air of credibility to them, and hearing what he said, Ling Chen felt much better. As for the strange reaction Daoist Tian Qing had given when reading Ling Chen's fortune, he had forgotten all about that already.

The time in the real world was approaching midnight, and Ling Chen was getting closer and closer to the Lava Purgatory. Ling Chen took out his map, and calculated the distance between him and the Lava Purgatory, which was about 10 kilometres. The temperature was nearing 40 degrees Celsius and sweat continuously flowed down his body. There ground was completely barren with not even a single blade of grass in sight, and neither were there any monsters. It was becoming hard to even breath.

It was already like this 10 kilometres away from the Lava Purgatory-Ling Chen wondered what it would be like inside.

The hottest place in the entire Forgotten Continent was no simple place. Ling Chen took a few deep breaths before increasing his speed. After his Cloud Stepping Mare ran for another 100 metres or so, a person appeared within his vision.

Why would there be a person in such a place? Ling Chen squinted, trying to see what the person looked like.

Ling Chen's speed on the Cloud Stepping Mare was quite fast,

and within moments, he could see the person clearly. He was wearing tattered clothing, which looked like they hadn't been washed in over 10 years. He had dark skin and was both skinny and short, and was half-bald. His eyes were exceptionally large, and overall, he both looked and walked like a monkey. He held a wooden walking stick in his hand, and at first glance, he completely looked like a beggar.

However, this person looked a bit familiar.

Wait, this person... after half a second, Ling Chen suddenly remembered who this person was... this person was the one he had met while heading to the Lonely Spirit Ridge-the Underworld Merchant, Qian Gun Gun!

That appearance, those clothes, that walking style, that walking stick... it was definitely him!

Ling Chen was so excited that he almost jumped off his mount. Last time, when he met Qian Gun Gun, he had bought many incredibly rare and useful items. The map of the Forgotten Continent, which he heavily relied on, was bought from Qian Gun Gun. However, he was way too poor back then, and was unable to buy many of the items he wanted. But now... he thought to his 8 digits of gold coins, and grinned.

Last time, he had desperately wanted to buy a Flying Scroll, which could directly increase the level of a skill, as well as a "Second Jump" skill scroll... heheh, this time, he definitely had to buy those.

Ling Chen jumped off his Cloud Stepping Mare and put it away. He smiled as he walked towards Qian Gun Gun.

When Qian Gun Gun saw him, he suddenly stopped, then dashed towards Ling Chen. This sudden movement surprised Ling Chen, who was thinking of how to talk to Qian Gun Gun. Standing in front of Ling Chen, Qian Gun Gun furiously sniffed a few times, and his eyes shone. The way he looked at Ling Chen was like someone eyeing a delicious meal, “Rich, rich! Are you the child of a super rich person? This smell... you probably have at least 60 million gold... 60 million!”

Ling Chen raised his eyebrows. This ability to sniff out how much money someone had was insane. After buying the permanent Title Deed, he was indeed left with about 60 million gold.

“Hey, kid, let me introduce myself. I’m Qian Gun Gun, a merchant who can go anywhere. Do you want to do some trading with me? Eh? Why do you look so familiar... ah! Aren’t you that kid I met at the Ghastly Grounds last month?! What are you doing here? Actually, a better question is how, after just 1 month, you’ve become so rich!”

This Qian Gun Gun’s memory was decent. Ling Chen smiled as he replied, “That’s right, it’s me. Looks like we’re tied together by fate.”

“Yes, yes, indeed, indeed,” Qian Gun Gun nodded and also

smiled, “Well, since we already know each other, we’ll cut straight to the chase. I’ve got quite a few good things here, and since you’ve got the money, I’ll show you some of my better items this time.”

Qian Gun Gun waved with his walking stick and an item list appeared in front of Ling Chen.

Last time, Qian Gun Gun had showed him his cheapest items, whereas this time he was going to show Ling Chen his ‘better items’... even the cheapest goods were extremely expensive; just how expensive were these items going to be?

[Seven Leaved Grass]: Though it is grass, it has 7 leaves, each one with a colour of the rainbow. It can grow anywhere, but is extremely difficult to find. Only extremely lucky people can find it. After consuming, Luck+3 permanently. The effects do not stack. Price: 3 million gold, Stock: 1.

[Psychic Flower]: A strange flower that grows next to the Underworld Blood Lake at the bottom of the Underworld. It gives off light that looks like water ripples in the darkness. It doesn’t have a set colour, but rather, its colour changes depending on the emotions of creatures close to it. The more positive emotions, the brighter the colour will be; the more negative the emotions, the darker the colour will be. After consuming, Comprehension+3 permanently. The effects do not stack. Price: 3 million gold, Stock: 1.

Ling Chen's eyes widened as he stared at the two items that could add 3 points to Luck and Comprehension. Just these two items were enough to blow Ling Chen away. Although they were quite pricey, but with their effects, their prices were actually quite reasonable. Right now, he desperately needed to increase his Comprehension. Although these two items were worth 6 million gold altogether, Ling Chen had already decided he would definitely buy them.

[Underworld God Mysterious Blood Metal]: One of the forbidden metals of the Underworld. It was once an ordinary piece of metal that sank into the Underworld Blood Lake, and after absorbing the remnant energy of evil spirits in the Underworld Blood Lake for tens of thousands of years, it became a variant type of metal. It contains so much power that even the Underworld King is unable to use it. If one is not careful, the energy inside could explode out, causing a disaster. As such, the Underworld King stored all of this type of metal at the bottom of the Underworld Blood Lake, and would not let anyone else obtain any of this metal. Qian Gun Gun miraculously obtained a piece, and has always been carefully keeping it on him. Price: 10 million gold, Stock: 1 (25 kilograms).

"Oh?"

The Underworld God Mysterious Blood Metal was a piece of metal that was about the size of a fist, but it was described to weigh 25 kilograms. From the description, this piece of metal was a lot

like the Red Sun Mysterious Gold that he had also obtained. However, whereas that was natural, this was created by absorbing the remnants of the energy of evil spirits. Moreover, this piece of metal was worth 10 million gold!

10 million gold could buy quite a few world-class sports cars!

No matter how much money someone had, they probably wouldn't buy a piece of metal that they didn't even know how to use and could cause disaster for 10 million gold. Furthermore, this piece of metal wasn't even the most expensive item Qian Gun Gun had on offer. The next item was an ancient-looking paper scroll that was worth... 30 million gold!!

Holy heck, are you kidding me? What sort of scroll can cost so much money? It is some sort of super skill? A ridiculously OP class change scroll? Could it be the treasure map to some sort of incredible treasure?

[Blueprint-Underworld God Cannon]: The blueprint for making the Underworld God Cannon, a weapon that the ancient Dwarves made for the Underworld. Only Heaven's End grade or above Blacksmiths have the qualifications to open this scroll. The Underworld God Cannon has immense destructive power, and can even severely injure true gods. However, not only are the materials incredibly difficult to find, but Blacksmiths who are able to forge it are also incredibly rare. Only the Dwarves are able to forge this weapon. Price: 30 million gold, Stock: 1.

Underworld God Cannon's... blueprint? Ling Chen looked at it in shock, and almost immediately, Qi Yue's incredulous voice also sounded out in his mind, "Underworld God Cannon?!"

"Qi Yue, have you heard of this weapon before?" Ling Chen asked.

"Of course I have. No less than expected from Qian Gun Gun; he actually has this sort of forbidden item... little master, you should buy this. The Underworld God Cannon has been called the 'God Killer Cannon', and it is deserving of such a name. Although the Underworld contains many treasures, but with a single Underworld God Cannon, the Moon God Clan has never dared to attack, or even offend them. Maybe, just maybe, if little master can one day have his own Underworld God Cannon, and put it on his territory, your land will be secure forever."

Ling Chen: "....."

This wasn't the Underworld God Cannon, but rather just the blueprint for making one. Forgetting about the materials that were required to make it, the description said that only the Dwarves could make it. The Dwarves had disappeared countless years ago. If he really bought this for 30 million gold, all he would get was a useless scroll.

Ling Chen thought for a moment, then looked at the last item:

[Moon God Palace Map]: A detailed map of the Moon God Palace. It includes some hidden areas, as well as secret entrances and exits. It is unknown how Qian Gun Gun obtained this map, but he has always secretly and cautiously kept it on him, and does not easily take it out to show other people. Price: 800 million gold, Stock: 1.

Ling Chen: “!!!!”

Chapter 294 - Lava Purgatory

This paper scroll was actually the map of the Moon God Palace. What's more, it costed a terrifying 800 million gold!

"Moon God Palace Map, this..." Qi Yue was equally surprised by this item, "Qian Gun Gun actually has this sort of thing. The Moon God Palace was created in the Ancient Era by gods, and is protected by the power of each generation of Moon Gods. It's almost impossible for people who don't belong to the Moon God Clan to enter, and even the Night Demon Clan was unable to get any valuable information about the layout of the Moon God Palace. Why would Qian Gun Gun have such a thing?!"

Qi Yue expressed her surprise for a while, before hurriedly saying to Ling Chen, "Little master, all of the things that Qian Gun Gun sells are authentic goods. Although the prices are quite high, but this also goes to prove that these goods aren't ordinary. See if you can buy everything on offer! If you can obtain this map, perhaps you'll be able to enter the Moon God Palace. According to my knowledge, one of the Saint Orbs should be within the Moon God Palace! If you want to complete the Lunar Scourge, you'll have to go there to find it."

Ling Chen: "....."

Entering the Moon God Palace... right now, it was an impossible task for him. Would having that map turn this 'impossible' task into a 'slight possibility'...?

However, that wasn't the most important thing right now... more importantly, the price of this map was simply ridiculous. He simply didn't have that much money! For most people, it would be insane to spend $800 million on a map within a virtual game.

Ling Chen suddenly remembered something. He looked at Qian Gun Gun as he asked, "Is this all you have? Where's the Flying Scroll I saw last time, as well as the skill scroll?"

"Those were sold ages ago. Cheaper goods always sell out quickly. Plus, every time I go out I always bring different goods with me. You're pretty lucky, because I brought out quite a few good ones today. Finished looking through them? How about it, are you eager to buy them?" Qian Gun Gun asked.

Sold... sold out...

Ling Chen's heart actually hurt when he heard this. Since meeting Qian Gun Gun, he had always been hopeful that he would be able to buy the Flying Scroll and Second Jump skill scroll the next time he saw him. After all, they were only a few hundred thousand gold. After wallowing in self-pity for a while, Ling Chen confirmed how much gold he had, and said, "I want to buy the Seven Leaved Grass, Psychic Flower, Underworld God Mysterious Blood Metal and the Underworld God Cannon."

Buying all of that had cost him a whole 46 million gold! That was equivalent to $46 million in the real world! If, in the past, he had seen someone spend so much money within the game, he would definitely think that person was crazy.

As soon as Ling Chen said this, Qian Gun Gun's eyes immediately shone like lightbulbs. He never thought that this young person would actually buy almost everything he had on offer, "Ahahahaha, this little brother is quite the refreshingly decisive person and has good taste as well. I, Qian Gun Gun, only offer the best and most authentic goods. Even though they're quite pricey, but they're worth every bit of money spent-after all, every single one of them is an incredibly rare and valuable good. You'll never regret buying my goods... so, are you really buying all those things?" Qian Gun Gun anxiously confirmed.

Ling Chen took out 46 million gold and transferred it to Qian Gun Gun. The Seven Leaved Grass, Psychic Flower, Underworld God Mysterious Blood Metal and Underworld God Cannon blueprint were also instantly transferred to Ling Chen.

After receiving this huge fortune, Qian Gun Gun's face became even more ecstatic, "So decisive! I've never met a human like you before. I've had the Underworld God Cannon blueprint for thousands of years now, but everyone was always scared off by the price. Heheh, it's only this little brother who has good taste. I know 30 million gold is very expensive, but it has its reasons for being expensive. If you go to the Underworld and mention the name 'Underworld God Cannon', every person is bound to tremble. Since you've bought this blueprint, I'll tell you a secret for free."

Ling Chen tried to open the Underworld God Cannon blueprint, but evidently, he, who did not have even a bit of experience in blacksmithing, wasn't able to do so at all. Hearing Qian Gun Gun's words, he looked up and asked, "What is it?"

“The secret is... the Dwarves haven’t actually completely disappeared. In fact, they’re still living in the Forgotten Continent, and there are actually still quite a few of them.” Qian Gun Gun said mysteriously.

“Where are they?” Ling Chen asked.

“Not a clue. Back then, in order to escape disaster, the entire Dwarf Clan hid away, These years, no one has ever even seen a Dwarf, so the place they’ve hidden themselves away in is definitely very well hidden. It’ll be nigh impossible to find them. Plus, even if you can find them, although the Dwarves are very kind, but they’re also a very proud race, and are very guarded against other races. Asking them to forge something for you won’t be so simple. Because you bought this blueprint, I’m sure you’re very interested in the Underworld God Cannon. However, as for whether you can really create one, that’ll depend on your luck. By the way, this piece of Underworld God Mysterious Blood Metal is one of the key materials required to make the Underworld God Cannon. It’s pretty dangerous though, so if you’re not using it, don’t mess around with it. If some of its energy leaks out, the outcome won’t be pretty.”

Ling Chen: “……”

Dwarves, eh? Seeing how Xiao Hui was able to unintentionally find the Fairies, it should definitely be possible for him to find the Dwarves, right...

“Why is this map so expensive?” Ling Chen asked as he pointed to the only item that he didn’t buy-the Moon God Palace Map.

“Hm? Map? What map?” Qian Gun Gun asked in confusion. He suddenly saw the map Ling Chen was pointing at, and he went into a state of extreme panic as he hurriedly put the map away as he muttered, “The hell? How did I accidentally take this map out?”

“Ahahaha, that was a map that I made for fun. It’s not actually for sale, ahaha… In fact, it’s not even a map of the Moon God Palace, and that ridiculous price was something I just put as a joke. Just pretend you didn’t see it…. Ah! It’s getting late, so I should be heading back to the Underworld… oh, and seeing as you’re going to the Lava Purgatory, I’ll give this to you as a bonus. So please don’t tell anyone about the map… let’s meet again if fate ordains it.”

After hurriedly saying goodbye, Qian Gun Gun threw a pair of things that seemed to be made of white crystals, and suddenly disappeared.

“Oi, I haven’t…”

Goddamit! I didn’t even get to use my Feng Chen Curses!

Qian Gun Gun had rushed off in such a hurry that Ling Chen, who was about to use the Complete and Utter Belief Curse on him to get the Moon God Palace Map, almost spat out blood in fury.

“Looks like that map was real. Otherwise, Qian Gun Gun wouldn’t be so afraid about other people finding out he has such a map. If this matter was found out by the Moon God Clan, even if he’s Qian Gun Gun, he would be hunted down by the Moon God Clan.” Qi Yue explained.

Ling Chen shrugged, “Well, it’s not like I really lost anything. Even if I did manage to get that map off him, and entered the Moon God Palace, it’d be equivalent to suicide.”

Qi Yue lightly laughed, “It’s rare to see little master acting like this. Looks like little master’s a bit afraid of the Moon God Clan. Come to think of it, why did little master want the Underworld God Cannon blueprint? You should know that what you bought with so much money could just be a mysterious but useless piece of paper.”

Ling Chen lapsed into silence, then replied, “I hope one day it’ll be of use.”

He then looked at the things Qian Gun Gun had thrown to him before he had abruptly left. It was a pair of shoes that were an icy white colour, and felt quite cool.

[Glacial Silk Shoes]: Decorative type equipment. It can be equipped on top of shoes that have already been equipped, and will cover those shoes completely. These shoes are made of silk from Glacial Silkworms that have lived over 1,000 years, and are incredibly light and cool. After equipping, it can reduce the effects of the heat from the environment on the player.

“These shoes will be of a great help.” Ling Chen said as he looked at its description. He put them away, then took out the Seven Leaved Grass and Psychic Flower, and immediately ate them.

“Ding... you have consumed the Seven Leaved Grass, Luck+3 permanently.”

“Ding... you have consumed the Psychic Flower, Comprehension+3 permanently.”

Immediately, his Luck and Comprehension had both jumped to 15! This was something a normal player could only dream of.

Meeting Qian Gun Gun didn’t waste too much of his time. The climate here made him unwilling to stay any longer than necessary, so he immediately set out for the Lava Purgatory again.

Lava Purgatory Boundary.

Ling Chen finally reached the boundary of the Lava Purgatory. He stopped, with his face filled with disbelief. He simply couldn’t believe that this was only the boundary of the Lava Purgatory.

It was obvious where the boundary for the Lava Purgatory was. Currently, the ground under Ling Chen’s feet was yellowish-brown, but the area belonging to the Lava Purgatory had red ground. The redness of the ground was comparable to the redness

of red-hot metal. On the red ground, there were tongues of flames. The further into the Lava Purgatory, the more concentrated and intense the flames were.

This was the Lava Purgatory, where the Vermillion Bird resided...

He had finally arrived... if he could really find the Vermillion Bird, then there would be hope for Xi Ling.

The scenery in front of him was terrifying, but Ling Chen had no intention of backing down. The ground within the Lava Purgatory was quite uneven, and there were flames everywhere, so he dismounted the Cloud Stepping Mare and slowly walked in.

Chapter 295 - Giga Inferno Spirit (1)

As soon as Ling Chen stepped on the red ground of the Lava Purgatory, a wave of intense heat crashed into him, causing him to hold his breath. The difference in temperature after taking a single step was simply enormous. It was almost as if he had stepped into a completely different world.

So hot!

The sensation made him feel like he had just been thrown into a burning hot oven, but it was possible for him to endure it. However, since this was just the boundary of the Lava Purgatory, what would it be like inside?

Ling Chen gritted his teeth, held his breath and charged forwards as fast as he could. He didn't want to stay any longer than necessary in this sort of place.

The further in he went, the higher the temperature became. Just as he became slightly accustomed to the temperature, it would increase again, increasing his pain and discomfort. Ling Chen avoided the tongues of flames as he sprinted towards the Inner Region. His sweat continuously flowed, but would evaporate after only a few seconds.

Huff... huff...

The air Ling Chen breathed out was almost as hot as steam, and after advancing by 100 metres, his entire face had become bright

red. As he continued forwards, the rocks on the ground became redder and redder, as if they would spontaneously combust. Looking up, he saw that the entire sky was also completely red.

Huff... I'm going to get there no matter what!

According to his map, the Lava Purgatory spanned a diameter of 20 kilometres. That meant, in order to reach the Central District of the Lava Purgatory, Ling Chen would have to travel around 10 kilometres.

-50, -50, -50.....

After another 100 metres, damage figures began to arise from Ling Chen's body. Not only was there pain and discomfort now, but even his HP was being drained. Ling Chen frowned, and did his best to run even faster.

-100, -100, -100.....

-150, -150, -150.....

-200, -200, -200.....

As Ling Chen pressed on, he began to lose health faster and faster. By the time he had reached the 1 kilometre mark, he was already losing 200HP per second. Ling Chen only had 1471HP, and with the Green Potion, which could restore 1500HP per second, this was completely fine for him. However, if the damage

continued to increase, he might be forced to use the incredibly precious Dew of Dawn, of which he only had 100 drops.

At the same time, the pain he was experiencing from the heat had reached the point where his face was unable to stay calm. He didn't know what the temperature was, but it felt like there were balls of fire directly burning on his body, causing him to clench his teeth. This was especially so for his feet-it felt like he was walking on red-hot metal barefooted.

Xi Ling gave up her life for me... this is nothing!!

Ling Chen gritted his teeth as he wildly ran forwards. He suddenly thought of the Glacial Silk Shoes that Qian Gun Gun had given him, and immediately equipped them.

The pleasant and cool sensation that entered his feet and spread out to his entire body caused him to almost moan in pleasure. It was so comfortable that he almost forgot how to walk.

Only a few seconds after the Glacial Silk Shoes had been equipped, the pain from the heat in Ling Chen's feet almost completely disappeared. Moreover, the effects, to a lesser extent, also spread to his entire body, and even decreased the damage to 50 per second. The effects were much better than Ling Chen could have ever dreamed of.

Now that his mind was clearer, Ling Chen felt even more resolute. He once again sped forwards.

After running for another kilometre, Ling Chen was nearing the middle of the Outer Region of the Lava Purgatory. The Glacial Silk Shoes, of course, had their limits, and at this point, Ling Chen's HP began to decrease at 200 per second again. His face was once again bright red, with his entire body covered in sweat and blistering from the heat. It was terrifying to think what it would be like without the Glacial Silk Shoes.

In front of him, the tongues of flames were gathered together densely... they were no longer tongues of flames, but rather balls of flames. The smallest were about 1 metre high, and the largest were even taller than himself. Xiao Hui, who had been running in front of him the whole time, suddenly stopped, and barked as a warning. Ling Chen immediately stopped and held his breath as he looked forwards. He felt that something strange was about to happen.

There were countless balls of flames in his field of vision, and all of them were swaying from side to side. However, there was no wind at all! Why would these flames be swaying? The swaying gradually became more and more exaggerated, and suddenly they started to float into the sky and merged together. They became fireballs with 2 short arms made of fire, as well as a small tongue of fire on their head, which looked like hair. On the middle of their bodies, 2 flame-yellow eyes slowly opened.

This was...

[Flame Spirit]: Type: Spirit, Level: LV30, HP: 900. Spirits created from the intense heat. Their personalities are just as intense and explosive as the flames that birthed them, and like

to incinerate everything.

Passive Abilities: Reduces 90% of Physical Attack Damage, immune to Fire attacks.

Attack Skills: [Flame Bullets]: Throws out a small fireball to attack a single target. Although it is a single-target attack, it has incredible destructive power. After hitting the target, the fireball can explode, causing splash damage with a 50% chance to hit enemies around the target.

Weaknesses: Low HP and are weak against Water attacks (-80% resistance against Water)

All of a sudden, around 50 to 60 Flame Spirits had already formed. At LV30, these monsters only had 900HP, but as spirits, they were not afraid of Physical Attacks. For players who only had Physical Attack Damage, fighting these Flame Spirits would be incredibly annoying. However, although Ling Chen had a Physical Attack profession, he was not worried at all.

“Hmph, die!”

Ling Chen coldly harrumphed as he took out his weapons, and charged forwards. As he ran, three fireballs shot out from three of the Flame Spirits. However, these fireballs were not too fast, and Ling Chen didn’t even have to dodge due to his high Movement Speed. He arrived in front of 2 Flame Spirits and sent out a Ling Tian Burst from his Zephyr Blade.

Puff, puff!

-2506, -5004!

The Flame Spirits that were hit extinguished with a ‘puff’. The damage figures that arose from their bodies were not reduced at all, despite the fact that normally, Physical Attacks would be reduced by 90% when hitting them. However, Ling Chen’s Cancer Orb ignored all Defence, Physical Damage Reduction and Absolute Defence.

After killing 2 Flame Spirits, Ling Chen did not stop to kill more. After all, his goal was not to kill all the Flame Spirits, but to reach his destination as fast as possible. He would only attack the ones that were blocking his way. As more and more fireballs were fired his way, Ling Chen weaved left and right, passing through the gaps in between them. He didn’t even have to slow down, and every time he attacked, a small group of Flame Spirits would be extinguished.

Puff… Puff… Puff… Puff…

With the Feng Chen Technique, even without a mount, Ling Chen’s Movement Speed was 175-this was even higher than most Assassins. With his speed and footwork, the Flame Spirits blocking his way were quickly exterminated. However, the further he ran, the denser the Flame Spirits would be gathered together. Although he could get rid of them quickly, but if they were gathered too densely, even he wouldn’t be able to clear them out in one go.

Not only were they becoming more and more densely gathered, but their attacks were also becoming more erratic. Evidently, they were furious that he was killing so many of them. Ling Chen was unable to stop, and could only grit his teeth as he continued to charge forwards. If he stopped, then the fireballs flying all over the place would definitely hit him. Although these fireballs were not very fast and did not have a very long range, but as mentioned in the description, that was made up for with their destructive power. It was possible that being hit by a single one could kill him. Seeing that there were more and more Flame Spirits, Ling Chen put on his Evil God's Mask, just in case.

Puff... Puff...

The more densely gathered they were, the more Flame Spirits Ling Chen killed in a single strike. The Flame Spirits jumped up and down in fury, and seeing that their attacks were useless against Ling Chen, they stopped attacking.

Although the situation had calmed down, Ling Chen felt a massive sense of danger.

Chapter 296 - Giga Inferno Spirit (2)

Ling Chen could feel some ominous pressure bearing down on him as a gust of wind arose. As the wind blew, more than half of the Flame Spirits were lifted up, as they gathered to a single place.

One, two, ten, one hundred, two hundred, three hundred...

Countless Flame Spirits were lifted up, and gathered at the centre of the wind. As they collided together, they merged, growing from a small fireball to one that was 3 metres, 5 metres, 10 metres tall...

As the fireball grew bigger and bigger, the feeling of danger was also getting stronger and stronger. Ling Chen stood transfixed for a few moments before coming back to his senses and charging forwards. As soon as he moved, the Flame Spirits that hadn't been lifted up all started to jump, and a wall of fire about 10 metres high rose up in front of him. At the same time, walls of fire also arose to his sides and behind him... he had been completely sealed with a cage of flames, unable to advance or retreat!

Ling Chen stood still, and looked at the gigantic fireball. After it grew to a bit more than 10 metres tall, it began to take shape. First were its four limbs, and then its two savage-looking eyes... what soon appeared was a massive flame giant!

[Giga Inferno Spirit]: Type: Spirit, Level: LV30, Grade: Celestial, HP: 300,000. A high-grade spirit created from the merging of many Flame Spirits. Its personality is incredibly

fiery and explosive, and can release massive flame attacks, causing its surroundings to become a sea of fire.

Passive Abilities: Reduces 90% of Physical Attack Damage, absorbs all Fire attacks. It can regenerate HP when in a hot environment.

Attack Skills:

[Inferno Bullets]: Shoots 5-10 large fireballs. The speed is average, but their power is massive. After hitting the target, the fireballs can explode, causing splash damage with a 30-60% chance to hit enemies around the target. The Inferno Bullets are released from the mouth. When activating, the mouth will open and the head will tilt backwards. Usage frequency: High.

[Inferno Wall]: Shoots a 10 metre long wall of flames, which moves extremely fast and deals a large amount of damage. It is incredibly difficult to dodge. If the target is hit, there is a 30% chance of the target being Burned for 10 seconds. There is no obvious set-up action. Usage frequency: Medium.

[Exploding Flames]: Throws a massive fireball within 20 metres of itself, causing an explosion of flames where it lands, and will spread to 10 metres away from where the fireball landed. Causes massive damage if hit, and there is a 30% chance of the target being Burned for 5-10 seconds, as well as a 10% chance of the target being Stunned for 3 seconds. Requires 2 seconds of gathering flames before activating. Usage frequency: Low.

[Exploding Sea of Flames]: Explodes its own flames, causing the area within 50 metres of itself to become a sea of flames. It requires 3-5 seconds of charging before it can be activated. After activating, its Fire Attack Power will be decreased by 30%. This skill will immediately activate as soon as its HP falls below 10%. Can only be activated once per day.

Weaknesses: Low HP and has extremely low Defence, and is weak against Water attacks.

This flame giant was countless times more powerful than all of the Flame Spirits individually combined. It was a pure attack Celestial boss!

The walls of fire around him not only kept him from escaping, but also increased the temperature. Above Ling Chen's head, terrifying damage figures kept rising up.

-300, -300, -300……

At this rate, the green potions wouldn't be enough to keep him alive-it seemed Ling Chen had to use the Dew of Dawn. However, not only was the Dew of Dawn incredibly valuable, but also in short supply. Even if he used all of it, it wouldn't last him a very long time… he definitely couldn't waste it here!

A LV30 Celestial Boss was not something the current Ling Chen could easily defeat. Moreover, the Giga Flame Spirit also received

benefits from the environment. In fact, even if Ling Chen attacked with his full strength, even with the Cancer Orb, he wouldn't necessarily be able to damage it more than it could regenerate. But then again, he couldn't escape either...

While Ling Chen was still considering what to do, the Giga Inferno Spirit came rushing at him. It wasn't very fast, but when the space was limited, speed didn't matter too much. When it was about 10 metres away from Ling Chen, it opened its mouth, and 7 or 8 large fireballs chaotically flew out towards Ling Chen.

Ling Chen did not retreat, but rather advanced towards the fireballs. The Giga Inferno Spirit had terrifying Attack Power, but its other stats were rubbish. Ling Chen's Movement Speed was at least twice that of the Giga Inferno Spirit's. In the blink of an eye, he had dodged all of the fireballs and reached the Giga Inferno Spirit. With the Zephyr Blade and Great Ravager in his hands, he sent two Ling Tian Bursts crashing onto it.

Puff! Puff!

-4218, -4267 !

After attacking twice, Ling Chen immediately turned and ran to put some distance in between them. Only with enough distance would he be able to easily dodge the Giga Inferno Spirit's attacks. With the Giga Inferno Spirit's Movement Speed, it would be impossible for it to close the distance in between them. Just as Ling Chen was retreating, the Giga Inferno Spirit once again shot out Inferno Bullets at him. This time, 9 fireballs flew towards him. Because of Ling Chen's reaction speed and the speed of the

fireballs, it was easy to dodge them once again. Ling Chen charged forwards, but suddenly stopped. He almost started swearing out loud... because above the Giga Inferno Spirit's head, a big green number had appeared.

+15,000.

The damage he had just dealt... had been recovered instantly!

Ling Chen needed at least 5 seconds to attack the Giga Inferno Spirit effectively, but it could instantly recover more than Ling Chen could even deal... this was simply ridiculous. It was possible that with Soul Sacrifice, he would be able to damage it more than it could recover, but such a strategy was much too risky. Soul Sacrifice set his HP to 1, and he was losing hundreds of HP every second.

In order to keep his HP up, Ling Chen drank down a drop of the Dew of Dawn. Immediately, a green number of +5000 appeared above his head. The Dew of Dawn lasted for 10 seconds, and each drop was life-saving.

Ling Chen had no other choice. Since the Giga Inferno Spirit was impossible to kill, the only thing he could do was try to escape.

Ling Chen looked at the walls of fire and decided that he had to take a risk.

The Giga Inferno Walked towards Ling Chen with its two

massive hands raised up. A 2 metre wide fireball was formed, then thrown at Ling Chen.

This was one of the Giga Inferno Spirit's strongest attacks- Exploding Flames. If this fireball landed on the ground, it would cause an explosion of flames that would cover a large area. It would be impossible for Ling Chen to escape unharmed.

Ling Chen suddenly thought of something. He raised his right hand, and a silver light flashed...

"Moon Shadow!"

The silver light covered both the fireball, as well as the Giga Inferno Spirit. Ling Chen put his hand on the Evil God's Mask, and muttered to himself, "This better work..."

"Broken Shadow!!"

With Broken Shadow activated, Ling Chen's Movement Speed reached 1,750. His body became a shadow that was too fast for the naked eye to see, and charged towards the wall of fire in front of him.

Whoosh!

In a split second, Ling Chen had already reached the wall of fire. Passing through the blazing hot wall was definitely enough to kill Ling Chen. However, the moment Ling Chen came into contact

with the wall, the Evil God's Mask shone with a blood-red light, like a beast that had been awakened, and a low roar came from the mask. Instantly, it was as if something had smashed into the wall, and the wall of fire dispersed to the side...

The wall of fire was 3 metres thick, and Ling Chen passed through it almost instantaneously... when he got out, he was completely fine!

The Evil God's Mask could block fatal damage once every 10 seconds, but without Broken Shadow, the 3 metre thick wall would have caused him more than 2 fatal injuries. After successfully escaping from the cage of fire, Ling Chen did not hesitate at all as he continued to charge forwards. When the effects of Broken Shadow ended, he looked back and muttered, "Hmph, I'll get my revenge when I've done what I need to do!"

Celestial grade Bosses were quite rare, and they did not respawn, unlike normal Bosses. Currently, even within China, only a handful of players had seen Celestial Bosses. Although they were extremely difficult to kill, but the rewards were definitely worth it. Ling Chen currently had 2 Celestial grade weapons, both of which came from Celestial grade Bosses. Now that he knew that there was a LV30 Celestial grade Boss in the Lava Purgatory, he would definitely be back in future.

-300, -300, -300.....

Right now, he was probably right in the middle of the Outer Region of the Lava Purgatory. The rate at which he was losing health was already startling, and he could barely hang on even

with the Dawn of Dew. Now, it seemed like even getting into the Middle Region would be impossible.

Chapter 297 - Vermillion Bird's Phantasm

Every step Ling Chen took was like taking a step into the abyss of death. After a period of time that seemed both short, and long, Ling Chen's HP was decreasing at 400 per second. Now, it only took about 4 seconds for him to run out of health. And this was under the protection of the Glacial Silk Shoes.

What was the most concerning was that he was still in the middle of the Outer Region.

The air was so hot and blistering that it was almost impossible for Ling Chen to open his eyes, and made it difficult for him to breathe. He started to feel that his footsteps were becoming incredibly light, and he knew that his body was close to reaching its limit. He raised his hands, and saw that his hands looked as if they had been completely roasted. He wondered whether he would catch on fire if he kept going.

Ling Chen was forced to drink yet another drop of Dew of Dawn. On the way to this point, he had already consumed more than 20 drops. With his consumption increasing as he advanced, it would be a pity if he ran out of the Dew of Dawn before even reaching the Middle Region.

"Little master, you should give up. As you are now, it's impossible for you to reach the Inner Region. In fact, let alone you, even those of Heaven's End grade would find it incredibly difficult." Qi Yue urged. In order to save Xi Ling, he had travelled thousands of kilometres. If he couldn't even get past the Outer Region, it would be incredibly difficult for him to accept such an

outcome.

Although Ling Chen was not willing to give up, he wasn't an idiot either. He knew what would happen if he decided to continue. However, he was simply unwilling to accept his powerlessness.

Ling Chen stood on the spot as he looked ahead. He gritted his teeth, deeply breathed in, and shouted, "Vermillion Bird!!"

"Vermillion Bird!! Come out!!"

"Vermillion Bird!! Come out!! I need your help!"

"Vermillion Bird!!!!"

... Ling Chen shouted with all of his might, and his voice travelled very far. There were not any echoes, nor any responses.

"Vermillion Bird!!!:

"Vermillion Bird, come out!!"

"Vermillion Bird!!"

Ling Chen continuously shouted, putting all of his strength into each yell. Right now, this was the only thing he could do. He prayed that his shouting could create some miracle-that the

Vermillion Bird would hear him and come to him. However, he knew how naïve this plan was. After all, he was still kilometres from the centre of the Lava Purgatory-how could his voice reach such a place? Moreover, why would the Vermillion Bird come out just because of a human shouting?

Ling Chen shouted until he almost lost his voice and his head spun. The only one who could hear him shouting was Xiao Hui, who had been with him since he first entered the Lava Purgatory. The recovery items used by players also affected their pets, so with Xiao Hui's 6000HP, Holy Spirit's Shield and all the potions, he was much safer than Ling Chen. Hearing his master shouting, he also faced the direction to which Ling Chen was shouting, and started howling, trying to help his master.

"Awoo!!"

"Vermillion Bird!!"

"Awoo!!!"

"Vermillion Bird, come out!!"

"Awoooo!!!"

... After shouting for a while, Ling Chen's voice became weaker and weaker, while Xiao Hui's howls became longer and longer. Soon, the sounds produced by his little body became even louder than his owner's, and travelled further...

“Awooooo~~~”

“Awoooooo~~~~”

“Huff... Huff...”

Ling Chen once again drank down a drop of Dew of Dawn, and panted. After resting for a bit, he squatted down, and patted Xiao Hui’s head, “Forget it, let’s not shout anymore. I think we should go back now. We’ll definitely find another way to save Xi Ling.”

“Awoo...” Xiao Hui stopped howling. It seemed that he could also feel Ling Chen’s disappointment. He softly barked a few times, as if to comfort Ling Chen.

“Let’s go.”

Ling Chen could only helplessly take out a teleport scroll for the Vermillion Bird City, and prepared to leave. After completely failing at finding the Vermillion Bird City, he could only meet with the Vermillion Bird City’s Mayor. Since the Vermillion Bird was the guardian beast of the Vermillion Bird City, the Mayor was bound to have some way of contacting the Vermillion Bird. Although it was unlikely the Mayor would help him, but it was more possible than advancing any further in the Lava Purgatory.

Just as Ling Chen was about to shatter the scroll, a faint female’s voice sounded out from the distance, “...Holy Qilin’s descendant,

are you calling me…”

Ling Chen froze, and turned around, staring towards the south.

This voice was… could it be… wait, Holy Qilin’s descendant? What was that about?

Just as Ling Chen turned around, he saw a massive red phantasm. It was the phantasm of a bird with outstretched wings, which emanated a sense of power and majesty. Its head and tail looked like that of a Phoenix, and had claws like eagles. Its neck was like that of a snake’s, and its body was covered with crimson red feathers. Each feather was burning with an intense flame.

Ling Chen held his breath as he gazed at this this spectacle before him.

Vermillion Bird!! This was definitely the phantasm of the Vermillion Bird!

“Vermillion Bird!” Qi Yue called out in Ling Chen’s mind, affirming his suspicions. This was because Qi Yue had actually met the Vermillion Bird in the past!

“Vermillion Bird!!” Seeing this phantasm, Ling Chen shouted out emotionally.

Although this was only the phantasm of the Vermillion Bird, it carried some of its consciousness. It responded with a voice filled

with curiosity, “Oh? Only some of your appearance looks like that of the Holy Qilin’s. Evidently, your energy is not that of the Holy Qilin’s, but why do you give me a feeling similar to that which the Holy Qilin gives?”

“Me?” Ling Chen stared in shock, before he suddenly looked down at Xiao Hui. Xiao Hui was currently also staring into the sky, unaware of what the Vermillion Bird was talking about.

Could it be that the Vermillion Bird was talking about Xiao Hui? It had called Xiao Hui… the Holy Qilin’s descendant?

The Holy Qilin’s descendant? What a joke! Xiao Hui looked like a little dog with a horn-it looked completely different to the mighty Qilin. Moreover, Xiao Hui was given to him by the evil beast Tao Tie-why would the Holy Qilin’s descendant be with an evil beast, rather with the Holy Qilin itself? Could it be that Xiao Hui’s aura was similar to that of the Holy Qilin’s, which was what drew the Vermillion Bird here?

“Never mind, the feeling you give me is only slightly similar to that of the Holy Qilin’s-looks like I was too sensitive. The Lava Purgatory is not somewhere you should be, so you should quickly leave. If you continue, you’ll definitely die here.”

As soon as it had finished talking, the Vermillion Bird’s phantasm turned to leave. Ling Chen hurriedly stepped forwards as he rasped, “Wait, Vermillion Bird, I need your help!”

“Unless the Vermillion Bird City is facing catastrophe, otherwise

I won't interfere with human affairs at all. Leave immediately." The Vermillion Bird's voice began to sound further away, and its phantasm became more and more transparent.

"It's not about human affairs-it's to save the sovereign of your Fire Clan!" Ling Chen desperately yelled as he summoned Xi Ling and cradled her in his arms, "Please save her; you're the only one who can save her now!"

After a month had passed, Xi Ling had grown even weaker. Right now, she could only weakly lie in Ling Chen's arms as she trembled. There were no longer any flames on her feathers, and she couldn't raise her head no matter how hard she tried. She could only make some weak noises as she lay in Ling Chen's arms.

The powerful and beautiful Xi Ling had become like this because of him. Ling Chen's heart ached when he saw her in such a state.

The Vermillion Bird seemed to sense something, and the phantasm became vivid and clear again. This time, as it spoke, its voice was filled with shock, "The Golden Crow's aura... no! Not just the Golden Crow, there's also... also..."

A red ray of light descended from the sky, and swept towards Ling Chen. Ling Chen's instincts told him not to dodge, and he watched as the red light landed on Xi Ling's body, and carried her into the air, until she reached the Vermillion Bird's phantasm. Ling Chen didn't resist as he watched Xi Ling being taken over to the Vermillion Bird.

“So it’s like this! Although the Golden Crow has perished, it left behind a descendant! And not only the Golden Crow, but that race’s blood also flows through her veins! No less than expected from a being birthed from wielders of two of the strongest flames. Even though the flames of her lifeforce have almost gone out, but the remaining flames are still enough to make my flames tremble…”

The Vermillion Bird’s voice was filled with emotion, and this sort of reaction caused Ling Chen’s heart rate to speed up as he intently listened to every word the Vermillion Bird said. He had travelled thousands of kilometres just to bet on the Vermillion Bird’s emotions.

Chapter 298 - Three Conditions

A crimson red flame landed on Xi Ling's body, encasing it within the flames. Simultaneously, two streaks of hot air shot towards Ling Chen... they came from within the Vermillion Bird's eyes, and although it was only the Vermillion Bird's consciousness looking at him, it felt as if it was the real Vermillion Bird watching him. The might and power that this god beast emanated created a massive pressure which bore down on him.

Whoosh...

A gust of cool wind blew across Ling Chen's body, and all of a sudden the immense heat that Ling Chen had been enduring suddenly disappeared. All of the pain and discomfort, as well as loss of HP vanished. Ling Chen looked at the Vermillion Bird's phantasm in shock, and marvelled at its power.

"You came here to save her?"

The Vermillion Bird's voice was calm as water, filled with neither joy nor sorrow, and sounded both close and far away. Ling Chen nodded, "She sacrificed herself for me, so please save her... only you're able to save her."

"Since you know that I'm the only one who can save her, you should also know the price I need to pay for saving her."

Ling Chen sighed, and replied, "The price you need to pay for saving her is that you need to use the flames of your own lifeforce

to reignite the flames of her lifeforce, causing you to lose your energy and life... I know this is a very selfish request, but apart from you, I don't have any other methods to save her."

"Since it's like that, why did you risk your life coming here? With your strength, coming to where you are now was already a miracle. You've endured pain that most people would have died from. Didn't you know that after suffering so much, and maybe even dying, it was possible that you wouldn't achieve anything at all? Where did your confidence come from?"

Ling Chen looked up as he gazed at the Vermillion Bird's phantasm, "Because I believed that you, the Vermillion Bird, would have compassion on Xi Ling. She has the Golden Crow's flames. If she died, the Forgotten Continent's strongest flame would forever disappear. As a mighty and compassionate god beast, I'm sure that you wouldn't want such a thing to happen, right?"

The Vermillion Bird's phantasm gazed back at him. Under the pressure that the Vermillion Bird's phantasm was releasing, normal people wouldn't even be able to say a complete sentence, let alone tell a lie. Hearing Ling Chen's reply, the Vermillion Bird fell silent, while the flames surrounding Xi Ling grew larger and larger.

Sweat started to trickle down Ling Chen's forehead. This sweat wasn't from the heat, but rather from Ling Chen's nervousness. Xi Ling's life or death depended on the Vermillion Bird's reply... as the majestic and powerful Vermillion Bird, who was also the guardian beast of the Vermillion Bird City, would it really give up

its own life for Xi Ling?

After a few moments of tense silence, the Vermillion Bird spoke, “You’re half right, but half wrong.”

Ling Chen: “……”

“The Golden Crow is the sovereign of fire, and its flames are far above mine. I definitely don’t want to see the Golden Crow’s flames disappear forever. However, I have my own duties and responsibilities. Asking me to give up my responsibilities and my life in exchange for the Golden Crow’s flames is something I cannot do.”

The Vermillion Bird’s words startled Ling Chen as he frowned, “But…”

“Unless you can agree to three conditions.”

Just as Ling Chen was about to speak, he was cut off by the Vermillion Bird. An overwhelming feeling of joy rushed into him and vigorously nodded, “As long as you’re willing to save Xi Ling, I’ll do anything within my power.”

“Very good.” The Vermillion Bird’s gaze seemed to become gentler, and the pressure on Ling Chen’s body felt lighter. The Vermillion Bird continued to speak, “All of these three conditions must be met. If there’s even one that you can’t fulfil, then I won’t save her, even if the Golden Crow’s flames disappear forever.”

Ling Chen once again nodded. Although the Vermillion Bird had not named its terms yet, but he was already feeling over the moon. There was finally hope for Xi Ling! He had never expected the Vermillion Bird to be willing to compromise so quickly.

"The first condition is that you must immediately get rid of your Contract with her. She has already been revived once in the past, and her life is now tied to yours. If you don't get rid of the Contract between you two, even if she revives, her life will still be linked to yours. If you die, she will also die. If you want her to die, she must die. How can the Sovereign of Flames' life be controlled by a human! Get rid of the Contract, and grant her freedom. When the time comes, whether she wants to continue to follow you or destroy you, that'll be up to her!"

Ling Chen unhesitatingly nodded, "Back then, I formed the Contract with her in order to save her. If I could give her back her freedom, I'd be extremely willing. However... I don't know how to do this. Also, if I get rid of it, will it endanger her life?"

"You don't need to worry about this. The only chance you have to get rid of the Contract is when she is nearing death, which is now. After cancelling the Contract, with my flames, she will be perfectly fine. All you need to do is not resist! Even if it's me, if you resist, I won't be able to cancel the Contract."

As the Vermillion Bird talked, its two massive eyes flashed with red light. One ray of light landed on Ling Chen's body, and the other landed on Xi Ling's body. When it hit him, Ling Chen felt like something had left his body.

“Ding... the Contract between you and your pet ‘Xi Ling’ is about to be cancelled. After the Contract is cancelled, Xi Ling will still be your pet, but her life will no longer be tied to yours and will not have to unconditionally obey you, and will be able to escape. Will you allow this?”

“Yes.” After hearing the notification, Ling Chen immediately gave his affirmation.

The red light dissipated, and another system announcement rang out, “Ding... the Contract between you and your pet ‘Xi Ling’ has been cancelled.”

After the Contract was cancelled, Ling Chen didn’t feel any regret at all. In fact, he felt relieved. He had only entered the Contract to save Xi Ling, but had restricted her freedom and was unable to get rid of the Contract. This way, if Xi Ling could be revived, she would also regain her freedom. When the time came, she could do what she wanted without being tied down by him.

“Indeed, you didn’t resist at all, and your heart remained calm. Looks like you didn’t have any selfish motives. You were willing to endure such pain and risk your life to come here, making it evident that you truly care about her. Now, my second condition... I carry the responsibility of protecting the Vermillion Bird City. If I die, then the Vermillion Bird City will definitely descend into chaos. As such, if I save her, you must keep my death a secret! You cannot even tell your closest family or friends-in fact, it would be good if you could forget it completely. Moreover, if, one day, the Vermillion Bird City is facing destruction, you must do everything

in your power to save the Vermillion Bird City. Do you accept?”

“Yes!” Ling Chen immediately nodded, “I won’t tell anyone else about you. Even though I’m quite weak right now, but if the Vermillion Bird City ever faces peril, I will do all I can to save it.”

The Vermillion Bird looked at him calmly, before naming its third condition, “The third condition is that within one month, you must find a human with a Flame Soul, and bring them here.”

“A human with... a Flame Soul?” Ling Chen looked at the Vermillion Bird is surprise.

“If she dies, then the Golden Crow’s flames will be forever lost. I don’t have any descendants, so if I die, the Vermillion Bird’s flames will be forever lost. I don’t want to see the Golden Crow’s flames being lost, but I even more so don’t want to let the Vermillion Bird’s flames perish because of me. Otherwise, I will be a traitor to my clan. As such, before I save her, I need to find a creature that is able to inherit my Vermillion Bird’s flames. The only type of beings that can inherit my flames within a short period of time are humans with a Flame Soul. Humans have the most talent and potential out of all species, and those with a Flame Soul are able to handle the might of my flames. If you can’t find a human like this, then even if the Golden Crow’s flames are lost, I won’t help.”

This condition was the true test for Ling Chen. He thought for a while, before asking, “How do I find someone with a Flame Soul, and what do they look like? Could it be there are flames burning on their body?”

“Humans do not naturally possess flames, and only 1/1,000,000,000,000 people might possess a Flame Soul. It is extremely difficult to find one. Those with a Flame Soul have incredible aptitude for controlling fire, but will also be tortured by the pain of fire from time to time. As their Flame Soul grows, it becomes more and more difficult for their human body to contain it. As such, humans with Flame Souls usually die before they’re 20 years old. However, if they can inherit my power, then they can live thousands, or even tens of thousands of years. The Flame Soul will also be able to be controlled by them as they wish, and they’ll be able to control my flames within a short period of time. Here, take this.”

A crimson red feather slowly floated down from the sky. Ling Chen stretched out his hand and let the feather fall into his hand.

“This is one of my tail feathers. You can use it to find a human with a Flame Soul. When it’s within 10 steps of a person with a Flame Soul, it will let out a red light.”

Chapter 299 - An Unforgettable Breakfast

[Vermillion Bird's Feather]: A tail feather from the Vermillion Bird.

The crimson red feather in his hand only had a very short description, and did not outline any of its uses. Ling Chen put it away... the Vermillion Bird agreeing to save Xi Ling made him feel ecstatic, but now he had a massive problem on his hands. The Vermillion Bird had said that humans who had a Flame Soul were very, very rare. Where could he go to find one? Trying to find a person who had a Flame Soul out of everyone in the Forgotten Continent was like trying to find a needle in a sea. Moreover, even if he could find such a person, how would he bring them here? The person might not even be willing.

"If you leave her with me, she can last for another month. Within one month, you won't have to worry about her safety. But you must find a human with a Flame Soul within one month, and bring them to the Outer Region of the Lava Purgatory. When you have done that, shout my name towards the feather I gave you. If you are unsuccessful after one month, I won't be able to help you. You may leave now."

The Vermillion Bird's voice grew fainter, and a red light shot down and covered Ling Chen's body. Just as Ling Chen was about to speak, the scenery in front of him changed. In front of him was not the red world anymore, but rather, yellowish-brown ground.

This was...

Ling Chen immediately took out his map and found that he was now a few kilometres outside of the Lava Purgatory. He took out the feather the Vermillion Bird had given him, looked at it silently for a while, and grasped it in his hand. His feelings were both joyful and nervous at the same time. Within one month, relying on this feather, he had to find a person with a Flame Soul.

However, he had already met the Vermillion Bird, and had gotten it to promise him to revive Xi Ling if he could fulfil its three conditions. He was simply unwilling to fail after getting so far.

I must find a person with a Flame Soul within one month!

Ling Chen couldn't help but think of 'Daoist Tian Qing', who allegedly could find out the heaven's secrets. If he really did have this ability, maybe he would be able to find a person with a Flame Soul. However, as Daoist Tian Qing had said, this was impossible for him.

It was getting late, so Ling Chen logged off and went to sleep.

At the same time, within the Central District in the Inner Region of the Lava Purgatory, a voice sounded out, "Humans with a Flame Soul are much too rare, and their lifespans are much too short. Whether any currently exist is unknown. Wanting to pass on the Vermillion Bird's flames is just my last wish... Golden Crow's descendant, even if he's unable to find a person with a Flame Soul, I will still save you. Exchanging my life for yours is the greatest

glory of my life…”

When the morning came, Ling Chen sneezed, stretched, then jumped down from the bed… although he slept very late, but he felt quite refreshed. Just as he opened the bedroom door, Ling Chen almost crashed into Tian Tian, who was running.

“Tian Tian, you got up so early.” Ling Chen commented as he glanced at the clock… actually, it was already 8:30am.

“Lazy big brother, I get up earlier than you every day!” Tian Tian stuck her tongue out at him, then pointed at the bathroom, “Go and wash your face and brush your teeth; breakfast is ready.”

“Tian Tian helped out quite a lot with breakfast today.” Shui Ruo said as she walked over smiling.

“Oh?” Ling Chen looked at Tian Tian, his face full of ‘shock’, “Aiya! Our Tian Tian’s already cooking. This is the biggest thing that’s happened since Tian Tian started living here.”

Tian Tian couldn’t tell whether Ling Chen was praising or mocking her, so she could only lift her nose up as she proudly said, “I’m so smart, so even though it’s my first time cooking, it’ll definitely be very yummy!”

“Then I definitely have to eat breakfast today.” Ling Chen said as he grinned. Normally, Tian Tian only ate, slept and played. Today,

she had actually helped make breakfast-what was going on? He went straight to the table, and looked at the four dishes on the table as he asked, “Tian Tian, which one did you make? I’ll try that one first.”

“This one, this one!” Tian Tian was evidently very eager for Ling Chen to taste the fruits of her labour. She quickly pointed at the plate of scrambled eggs. Early in the morning, she had gotten up with Shui Ruo. Shui Ruo had pulled her to the kitchen and taught her how to cook, telling her that everyone liked girls who could cook. As such, she began to cook with her big sister, and carefully made her first dish... and it was completely on her own, without any help from Shui Ruo.

Deep down, Tian Tian wanted to be praised and acknowledged by Ling Chen.

“Oh! Just the appearance of these eggs already deserve a 10/10. It’s much better than when I first started cooking.” Before Ling Chen had even tasted it, he began to praise Tian Tian. He picked up his chopsticks, and picked up a piece... Since it was Tian Tian’s first time cooking, he would say it tasted good no matter what. Moreover, Tian Tian was sitting directly opposite him, watching him unblinkingly, her eyes filled with expectation. Even if it tasted like crap, he would still have to say it was delicious...

As such, Ling Chen put the scrambled eggs into his mouth. Since they looked so nice, even if the taste wasn’t so great, it shouldn’t be too bad either.

As soon as the scrambled eggs went into his mouth, before he

even chewed, his entire body trembled, and his head dipped down, then back up. There were two lines of tears running down his face.

"Ah!" Shui Ruo was shocked, and ran over, "Big brother, are you alright?"

"Eh? Big brother, why are you crying?" Tian Tian, who was waiting for Ling Chen's feedback, asked with her mouth open in shock.

Ling Chen's face twitched, and he tried to smile, but immediately failed. The tears continued to flow as he said, "Delicious, it's so delicious... I've never had anything this delicious before, so... so the tears won't stop. Tian Tian, did you really make this? You're... you're simply a culinary genius... yes... so delicious... delicious..."

Ling Chen's words sounded incredibly fake, but the tears running down his face were real beyond a doubt. As such, Tian Tian became incredibly excited as she yelled, "Really? Really? Is it really that yummy?"

Ling Chen vigorously nodded, "Definitely... I will remember Tian Tian's first dish for the rest of my life. Ah, I... forgot to brush my teeth, I'll be right back!"

As soon as he had blurted this out, Ling Chen rushed towards to the bathroom, and slammed the door shut as the sound of water flowing began to come out from the bathroom.

“Wow! WOW!!! Are my scrambled eggs really that great? Big brother was so moved that he cried... big sister, have a taste and tell me if they’re really as delicious as big brother said!” Tian Tian happily yelled out. To Shui Ruo, it was obvious that what Ling Chen said wasn’t quite true. She curiously picked up a small piece with her chopsticks and put it in her mouth.

Clatter!

The chopsticks fell out from her hand. It was as if a bomb had exploded in her mouth, and Shui Ruo kept her mouth tightly shut to prevent herself from immediately spitting it out. Tears also began to flow from her eyes.

Seeing that Shui Ruo also began to cry, Tian Tian gullibly began to shout out, “Big sister’s also crying! Big sister’s also crying because it tastes so good! Are Tian Tian’s scrambled eggs really that great?”

Shui Ruo nodded, but evidently she didn’t have the same level of willpower as Ling Chen. She couldn’t even utter a word as she also charged towards the bathroom and threw the door open.

“Big sister, why are you going to the bathroom?”

Bang! The door was slammed shut by Shui Ruo.

Tian Tian felt quite confused. Although big brother and big sister had both said her scrambled eggs were delicious, and had even

cried, she felt that something was a bit strange. She picked up her chopsticks and put a piece in her mouth… before, she was afraid that it tasted bad, so she didn't dare to try it herself.

"Waaaah!!"

A loud cry filled the dining room as Tian Tian threw her chopsticks, "Ahhh!! HELP… HELP…"

Tian Tian's chest heaved as she lay on the sofa, her hands covering her watery face. Ling Chen and Shui Ruo had already recovered, and wordlessly looked at this pitiful little girl.

"This is mustard sauce. Usually, you only put a bit on top of food to give it some extra flavour. This is salt. They evidently look completely different, so how did you confuse them? Sure, the colour of mustard looks like scrambled eggs when they're cooked, but you can't just pour a whole bottle in just because the colour's similar."

Ling Chen held a bottle of salt and a bottle of mustard sauce in each hand as he talked to Tian Tian. She had put most of the bottle of mustard sauce into the scrambled eggs, causing Ling Chen to shed many years' worth of tears.

"Come here, Tian Tian. It's okay now." Shui Ruo pulled Tian Tian over to rinse her mouth. Shui Ruo smiled at Tian Tian as she said, "It's fine, don't worry about it. Everyone makes mistakes on

their first go. It'll be better in future."

Shui Ruo's comforting words instead made Tian Tian start crying again, "Wahhh! It was so disgusting... but you all said it was delicious... you all lied to me, lied to me! I don't want to cook ever again! Wahhh..."

Tian Tian jumped off the sofa, and ran into the bedroom, then slammed the door closed.

"Ai," Ling Chen sat on the sofa as he muttered, "In the end, she's still a little kid."

Shui Ruo smiled as she softly said, "Tian Tian wanted to cook because she wanted to hear you praise her. Right now, she's angry with herself. After this unforgettable breakfast, big brother should spend more time with Tian Tian."

Ling Chen also smiled, "En, got it."

Chapter 300 - Our Secret

The atmosphere today in the Azure Dragon City was different to other days. Throughout the city, banners with the same words were hung up, and all the announcement screens were also filled with the same words and pictures. The same message was also sent again and again through the Region Announcements-Yan Huang Alliance!

It was the tenth day of the Yan Huang Alliance being officially established-the day of their celebration. With the massive scale of Yan Huang Alliance, their celebration was something most, if not all, players paid close attention to.

For 3 days, Ling Chen had been walking around the Azure Dragon City with the Vermillion Bird's feather in his hand, hoping that it would light up. The Azure Dragon City was massive, and had many residents. Wanting to test every resident was impossible. After spending 3 whole days searching, and finding no results, Ling Chen felt a bit dejected.

He had not been training for nearly 20 days, and had been pushed off the Player Level Rankings completely. With his abilities, if he fully devoted himself to levelling, it would not be difficult for him to reach the top spot again. However, it would take quite a long time.

Ling Chen considered whether he should go to the Yan Huang Alliance's celebration to join in on the fun. Ling Chen turned towards the Yan Huang Alliance's headquarters as he began to plot.

“Master.” A serious voice sounded in his ears, and Ling Chen slightly frowned as he asked, “What is it, Gui Ya?”

“The Yan Huang Alliance’s celebration begins at 10am. We thought that master might want to go, so we did some investigating. Currently, their defence is very solid. Not only have they hired high level smiths to create machines with incredibly high offense, but they’ve also hired 1,000 LV80 Guards. As such, for your safety, we urge master not to go.”

Gui Ya’s words were very serious and earnest. He was one of the people who understood Ling Chen the most, and he had personally delivered this information in hopes that Ling Chen would listen to him. Ling Chen frowned, and replied, “Don’t worry, I won’t go. Right now, we’re still far too weak. Even if we deploy our full force, we’ll only be able to mess around with them for a bit but won’t be able to actually hurt them.”

Hearing this response, Gui Ya’s worries were dispelled and he hung up.

“Big brother! Where are you right now, do you want to come train with me? I’m already LV17; if you don’t train, you’ll be overtaken by me!”

This was Tian Tian’s voice. She was evidently very proud of herself after levelling up again. With Shui Ruo, Xiao Qi, Su’Er and Mu Bing Yao accompanying her, and possessing incredible summons, she was able to level up quickly without spending much

time. Now, she was only 3 levels away from overtaking Ling Chen.

"I got it," Ling Chen helplessly replied, "I've got some other things to do right now, so I can't train. When I have time again, you won't be able to catch up no matter how hard you try. Go and work hard with your big sisters."

Returning to the centre of the Azure Dragon Square, Ling Chen found himself in front of a massive skyscraper that was about to be completed. Above the skyscraper hung a massive word: 'Li', proclaiming to the whole world that this was the Li family's territory. Every player that was sent to the Azure Dragon Revival Centre would see this massive skyscraper. Many people who had wished to use this prime area to develop their own businesses would often lose sleep out of jealousy when seeing this skyscraper. Although most people were incredibly jealous, but seeing as it was the Li family that had acquired the land, it wasn't so hard to accept.

All of Yun Meng Xin's time and efforts were directed upon developing this piece of land. She didn't tell Ling Chen her plans, and neither did Ling Chen ask. He trusted in Yun Meng Xin's wisdom and intelligence.

"Ding..."

The communication device sounded, alerting Ling Chen that he had received an instant message. After entering the Mystic Moon world, Ling Chen had not received many instant messages. After all, directly calling was much more efficient and convenient. Ling Chen looked at the message, and saw that it was sent from Su'Er.

Weird, why would Su'Er send me an instant message? Is it because she's too embarrassed to say it out loud? Hmm, with Su'Er's personality, it was very possible that that was the reason. As he thought to himself, Ling Chen opened the instant message from Su'Er.

"Big brother Ling Tian, are you free at the moment? I'm at our home. Right now I'm the only one here, can you come over for a bit? There are some things I want to talk to you about alone."

The 'our home' Su'Er referred to was Heart's Dream's little house. Seeing this message, Ling Chen tapped on his nose, thought for a moment, then replied, "Sure, I'll be there soon."

After replying, Ling Chen began to walk towards the Northern Residential Area.

As he walked, Ling Chen tried to guess just what Su'Er wanted to talk about. Very soon, he arrived at the familiar little house, and entered.

"Big brother Ling Tian-" Just as he entered, a voice filled with surprise and nervousness sounded out.

Su'Er was standing in front of him. She was the only one there, and she gazed at him both gently and embarrassedly.

If he remembered correctly, this was the first time he had been

with Su'Er alone... of course, apart from that night when he had rescued her.

Ling Chen closed the door, and walked in front of her, asking, "Su Su, what did you want to talk to me about? Your instant message seemed so mysterious."

The two of them were standing very close together. Seeing how nervous, yet hopeful she looked, with her cheeks slightly pink, it almost made Ling Chen want to give her a kiss on the cheeks.

To Su'Er, this was the first time she had interacted with Ling Chen alone. Hearing Ling Chen's voice, she felt like a gust of hot wind had entered her body, and she could feel her cheeks heating up. Her heart started rapidly beating, and she had to look down as she said in a very small voice, "Big brother Ling Tian, I... I... I..."

"Hmm?" Ling Chen raised one of his eyebrows, a slight smile on his face.

Finally, Su'Er managed to pluck up the courage and look him in the eyes. She bravely said, "Big brother Ling Tian, I want to see your face... j-just for a moment. I... I definitely won't tell anyone else, alright?"

Hearing this request from Su'Er, Ling Chen did not feel surprised at all. He asked while smiling, "Why did you suddenly want to see my face?"

Su'Er lowered her head and bit her lips, then once again looked at him, "Because... because I want to confirm something. I want to know if big brother Ling Tian is a certain person. If I don't find out, my heart won't be at peace... big brother Ling Tian, can you please agree to my selfish request just this once? I promise... I definitely won't tell anyone else."

This was the first time that Su'Er, who usually wasn't even able to look him in the eyes, had said so much in front of him.

"Why do you think I'm that person? It's not like you know what I look like." Ling Chen calmly asked.

Su'Er didn't even have to think as she replied. After all, this had been on her mind for the past few days. She replied, "That night, I was kidnapped by some bad people, and someone suddenly saved me. Although I don't know what big brother Ling Tian looks like, but when I saw the person who saved me, I knew that he was definitely big brother Ling Tian."

Ling Chen: "....."

"I would always secretly picture big brother Ling Tian in my mind, and his figure was exactly like big brother Ling Tian's. The feeling he gave me, as well as his smell, were all the same as big brother Ling Tian's. That night, when he caught me as I was falling, he yelled out 'Su', but then immediately stopped. He thought that I didn't hear that, but I heard it clearly. That moment, in his panic, he had yelled out my name in his real voice. Even his voice was the same as big brother Ling Tian's. The way he protected me felt exactly like when big brother Ling Tian protected

me, but he was even warmer than big brother Ling Tian, and made me feel like I was going to melt."

Ling Chen: "……"

Ling Chen had originally thought that he had executed everything perfectly that night. When talking to her, he had even used a fake voice. However, he never thought that there would be holes in his acting, and that Su'Er had caught on them.

Hearing what Su'Er said, Ling Chen brought his hand to his mask, and slowly took it off, revealing an extremely handsome face.

Seeing Ling Chen's face, Su'Er's tears trickled down. Normally, girls would yell out in excitement, and, if they were brave enough, they would even rush over and hug him, as well as thank him for saving them. However, Su'Er could only cover her face as her tears flowed down her face.

Ling Chen leaned forwards, and the distance between the two of them shrank down to less than 20 cm. He stretched out a finger and wiped away her tears, as he softly said, "This is our secret, alright?"

Seeing Ling Chen so close in front of her, Su'Er felt incredibly dizzy, and her heart beat like crazy. She softly replied with an "en" and her cheeks became incredibly red. She gazed at him for a few moments, before lowering her head once again.